



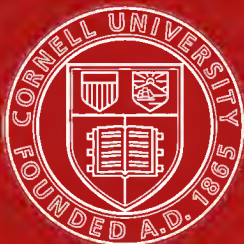
Olin  
PR  
2851  
W8  
1883a  
v1-4



CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



3 1924 103 842 351



# Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in  
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in  
the United States on the use of the text.

In compliance with current  
Copyright law, Cornell University  
Library produced this  
replacement volume on paper  
that meets the ANSI Standard  
Z39.48-1992 to replace the  
irreparably deteriorated original.

2006





**CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY**

**ENGLISH COLLECTION**



**THE GIFT OF  
JAMES MORGAN HART  
PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH**

A.257861

*George, W*

# PSEUDO-SHAKESPEARIAN PLAYS.

EDITED

BY

KARL WARNKE, PH. D.

AND

LUDWIG PROESCHOLDT, PH. D.

I. FAIRE EM.

---

HALLE:

MAX NIEMEYER.

1883.

v.

2/5



# THE COMEDIE OF FAIRE EM

REVISED AND EDITED

WITH INTRODUCTION AND NOTES

*in det  
of Simpson's School  
of Shakespeare.  
ii. 3407*

BY

KARL WARNKE, PH. D.

AND

LUDWIG PROESCHOLDT, PH. D.

---

**HALLE:**

MAX NIEMEYER.

1883.

U.

✓.



THE comedy of Faire Em has been handed down to us in two quarto editions, the one published in 1631 (A), the other without a date (B). Of the former, three copies are preserved in the British Museum (643. c. 14,  $\frac{\text{b. 21. c.}}{\text{b.}}$ , 161. a. 26); of the latter, only one copy is known to be extant.<sup>1</sup>) The edition of 1631 is entitled: 'A Pleasant Comedie of Faire Em, The Millers Daughter of Manchester. With the Love of William the Conqueror. As it was sundry times publicquely acted in the Honourable Citie of London, by the right Honourable the Lord Strange his Seruants. London, Printed for John Wright, and are to be sold at his shop at the signe of the Bible in Guilt-spur street without Newgate. 1631.' The title of the undated edition agrees with the one just given, except in the imprint, which runs thus: 'Imprinted at London for T. N. and J. W. and are to be solde in S. Dunstones Churchyarde in Fleete-streete.' As little as in the title, the two editions differ in the text of the play itself. In both editions, the critic meets with the same senseless readings; in both, a number of scenes, evidently written as verse by the author, have been corrupted to prose; and in both, these prose-passages have, in the same most arbitrary manner, been printed as verse. It is therefore all but certain that one of the two editions is a mere reprint of the other. And there can be little doubt as to which of them is to be regarded by us as the *Editio princeps* of the play. The spelling in the undated edition is of a more ancient character than in the edition of 1631; cp. the frequent use of *au* (A) for *a* (B) in *Blaunch*, *straunge* etc., the ending *-es* (A) for *-s* (B) in *ornamentes*, *cowardes* etc., the use of *y* (A) for *i* (B) in *tyll*, *Yle*, *revyled*; *ashamde* (A) for *asham'd* (B),

<sup>1</sup>) The initials E. M. on the fly-leaf of the copy in the Bodleian Library point to Malone as former possessor of it. Two short notes, occasionally written in the margin of the book, were probably made by the same scholar.

*uerie* (A) for *uery* (B), etc. In some few instances, besides, the edition of 1631 corrects misprints or wrong readings of the undated edition, viz. II. 1. 82 A *true lover*, B *truer love*; III. 1. 15 A *I would*, B *It would*; V. 1. 144 *is* wanting in A, added in B. Moreover, it is not probable that a piece of so little intrinsic value as *Faire Em* should have been reprinted after the year 1631, i. e. a few years before the Puritan Revolution put a temporary stop to all play-writing.

A third edition of our comedy is mentioned by a certain Chetwood, who, in 1750, published *Faire Em* together with five other plays. His edition bears the same title as A and B; the imprint is as follows: Dublin: Printed and Sold by the Editor W. R. Chetwood, in the Four-court-marshalsea; Messrs. G. and A. Ewing, P. Wilson, H. Hawker, and S. Price, in Dame-street; G. Faulkner, and A. Long, in Essex-Street; J. Hoey, in Skinner Row, and J. Edall, in Corkhill, Booksellers. MDCCL. In his short preface, Chetwood imparts to the reader his opinions as to the time, the author and the different editions of our play. 'I cannot learn', he says, 'who is the Author of this Play, but by the Stile, Conduct and Manner, take it to be wrote in the latter End of the Reign of Queen Elizabeth. I have seen three different editions of it, the First without a Date, and not divided into Acts; the second, in 1619, with the Acts divided, and some immaterial Alterations. However I have chose to follow that. The last Edition seems only to be a copy of the first, since no Acts are distinguished.' The 'Last Edition', mentioned by Chetwood, is probably that of 1631; the second, however, which he pretends to have followed, must certainly have been a *rara avis*. No copy of it is known to be extant, and with the exception of Chetwood, no one seems to have mentioned it. It may, therefore, well be doubted whether there ever existed an edition of 1619. And indeed, examining the alterations in Chetwood's text, which are far from being immaterial, we shall easily find that all of them bear the stamp of the age in which Pope edited the works of Shakespeare. The metre has occasionally been smoothed by the omission or the addition of some indifferent word; harsh and vulgar expressions have carefully been expunged; so *chastily*, *God*, *huswife*, *lust*, *slut* have been changed into *honour*, *Heaven*, *madam*, *love*, *maid*. Very often one or more lines have been omitted, and once or twice prose-

passages have been turned into verse. At the end of the acts, some rhyme-couplet has generally been added, which, in its rhetorical and bombastic style, widely differs from the rest of the play. We shall, therefore, hardly be mistaken in supposing Chetwood himself to have been the author of the alterations in question. In order to give more credit to his own emendations, he probably thought it expedient to pretend them to have been drawn from an old edition. Steevens, too, occasionally calls Chetwood, who was also the author of a *History of the Stage* and of a *Life of Ben Jonson*, 'a blockhead and a measureless and bungling liar.'

In our own time, the *Comedy of Faire Em* has been twice republished, by Prof. N. Delius and by the late Mr. Simpson. In the introduction to his edition<sup>2)</sup>, Prof. Delius discusses Tieck's hypothesis on the author of our play and gives a short account of Chetwood's edition. As to the latter, he arrives at the same conclusion as the present editors who for several of the details given above are indebted to his remarks. As Prof. Delius was not aware of the existence of the undated edition at the Bodleian Library, his text of the play, printed in modern orthography, is on the whole formed from the edition of 1631. In the Introduction, he enumerates some of Chetwood's alterations and some conjectures of his own. That list, however, is far from being exhaustive; for in more than one instance, Prof. Delius has departed from the original text, or has adopted Chetwood's alterations, without giving the reader any notice of it. His edition has certainly the merit of having first called the attention of German scholars to *Faire Em*, but our notes will sufficiently prove that it cannot stand the test to which we now-a-days usually submit a critical edition.

Mr. Simpson's edition of *Faire Em*<sup>3)</sup> is superior to that of Delius in many respects. In a number of passages, the English editor has succeeded in restoring the sense and in correcting the metre of the play. In most of these cases, short foot-notes indicate the reading of the quarto-editions. We must however regret that Mr. Simpson was prevented by a premature death from comparing those foot-notes once more with the originals. Many an error

---

<sup>2)</sup> Pseudo-Shaksperesche Dramen. Herausgegeben von Nicolaus Delius. Fünftes Heft: *Fair Em*. Elberfeld, 1874.

<sup>3)</sup> The School of Shakspeare. By Richard Simpson. London, 1878, vol. II, p. 337 seqq.

would, we are convinced, have been corrected, many an addition would have been made, and many a reading would have been amended: The editor of Mr. Simpson's posthumous work, Mr. Gibbs, has been contented with adding some few conjectures or corrections and with superintending the printing of the book. Such as it is, Mr. Simpson's edition of *Faire Em* is only an example of the ancient, now-a-days superseded eclectic method of editing the productions of the past.

The greatest interest in our play has been evinced by Prof. Elze. On different occasions<sup>4)</sup> he has tried to restore the corrupt text and the defective versification of the play. A number of the emendations, proposed by that distinguished scholar, are almost incontestable; others may be called in question by a more conservative critic; all of them bear testimony to their author's skill and learning and should certainly not be overlooked either by the editor or by the reader of *Faire Em*.

The question as to the author of the Comedy of *Faire Em* has been repeatedly taken up; but as conclusive proofs are absolutely wanting, it is not likely ever to be brought to a satisfactory close, unless new documents are produced.

The German critic-poet, L. Tieck, to whom his countrymen owe a translation of *Faire Em*, ascribed the play to no meaner a poet than to Shakespeare himself.<sup>5)</sup> The evidence by which he supported this hypothesis is the same as that by which he was induced to attribute *Mucedorus* to Shakespeare. In the library of King Charles II., we are informed, there existed a volume labelled *Shakespeare, vol. I.*, which contained *Mucedorus*, *The Merry Devil of Edmonton*, and *Faire Em*. The same remarks which we have made on this criterion in our Introduction to *Mucedorus*, apply to *Faire Em*. We are entirely ignorant to whom the book originally belonged, and on whose authority the bookbinder gave it the title in question. It may be that the original owner of the volume was guided by some tradition which has long since sunk into oblivion, or that he ascribed the three plays to Shakespeare only because they had been represented at the Globe. That, moreover, at the

---

<sup>4)</sup> Notes on Elizabethan Dramatists. Halle, 1880, p. 6 seqq., p. 125 seqq. — *Jahrbuch der Deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft*, vol. XV., p. 344 seqq.

<sup>5)</sup> Ludwig Tieck, *Shakespeare's Vorschule*. Leipzig, 1829, Vol. II, p. VI seqq.

time the book was bound, Shakespeare was not generally considered as the author of the three comedies, appears from the fact that the editors of the third folio of Shakespeare's works, although admitting seven plays, not contained in Ff AB, did not include in it either Mucedorus, or the Merry Devil of Edmonton, or lastly Faire Em.

Tieck's hypothesis seems not to have met with much approbation: as far as we know, only one critic has taken it up and endeavoured to support it with a number of new arguments. That critic is Mr. Simpson, who in the long and learned Introduction to his edition of our play has carefully pointed out all that can be alleged in favour of Shakespeare being the author of Faire Em. We think it well to lay before the reader the line of argument adopted by the English scholar.

The basis of Mr. Simpson's inquiry is a passage taken from the Introduction to Greene's Farewell to Folly, in which the Comedy of Faire Em and its author appear to have been alluded to. That passage, as far as it is of interest to us, runs thus:<sup>6)</sup> 'But, by your leave, gentlemen, some, overcurious, will carp and say, that if I were not beyond I would not be so bold to teach my betters their duty, and to show them the sun that have brighter eyes than myself. Well, Diogenes told Alexander of his folly, and yet he was not a king. Others will flout and over-read every line with a frump, and say 'tis scurvy, when they themselves are such scabbed lads that they are like to die of the *fazion*; but if they come to write, or publish any thing in print, it is either distilled out of ballets<sup>7)</sup>, or borrowed of Theological poets, which, for their calling and gravity being loth to have any prophane pamphlets pass under their hand, get some other Batillus to set his name to their verses. Thus is the ass made proud by this underhand brokery. And he that cannot write true English without the help of clerks of parish churches will needs make himself the father of interludes. O 'tis a jolly matter when a man hath a familiar style, and can endite a whole year and never be beholding to art. But to bring Scripture to prove anything he says, and kill it dead with the text in a

<sup>6)</sup> Simpson, l. c., p. 377 seq.

<sup>7)</sup> 'Part of the plot of Faire Em was probably distilled from the ballad licensed to Henry Carre, March 2, 1580—81, under the title of *The Miller's Daughter of Manchester*.' Simpson, l. c.

as well as the third of Faire Em's suitors, Manuile, are to represent play-writers of the time. As to Mountney and Manuile, Mr. Fleay agrees with Mr. Simpson in identifying them with Marlowe and Greene. Valingford, however, is not Shakespeare, but George Peele.<sup>9)</sup> All three of them try to win the hand of Faire Em. Who is Faire Em? Certainly not the Manchester public, with whom the poets had nothing to do, but the Company of the Queen's players, with whom the poets were seeking connection. Greene, we know, was connected with that company up to the year 1589; Orlando, Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay, and James the Fourth were all written for the Queen's players. In 1589, when Kempe had returned to England, the Queen's company seems, according to our play, to have dissolved its connection with Greene and entered a new engagement with G. Peele. This date coincides pretty well with what we know about the time in which Faire Em was published (before 1591).

We cannot but acknowledge the skill and sagacity which the English scholar has shown in putting forth and defending his theory. Nevertheless, he has not succeeded in winning us over to his opinion. Mr. Fleay himself must own that the allegory for which he and Mr. Simpson take the fable of the play, lacks consistency. Mountney and Valingford are the managers of the Queen's Company, left in England by W. Kempe, and directly after we are told they are two poets who try to get connected with the Queen's Company, i. e. with the very same managers of it. Then, we have no historical proof whatever as to the relations entertained by Greene and Peele with the Queen's Company. We do not know how it came that Greene ceased writing for that Company, nor are we anywhere informed that Peele was his successor. Lastly, it is not probable that Greene, alluding as he did to the Comedy of Faire Em, should have been content merely with glancing at it, when he himself played such a part in it, as Manuile does. Vindictive, as we know he was, he would certainly have wrought his vengeance in a less gentle manner.

It may well be that the idea of the comedy was prompted to

---

<sup>9)</sup> 'Camden says that *Wallingford* is *Gual-len* "The old rampire or fort." But an old fort is a Peel, and under this name that of George Peele is as certainly indicated as it is under that of Pyeboard in *The Puritan*.' Mr. Fleay, l. c., p. 282.

the unknown author of it by W. Kempe's visit at the Danish court. Likewise, it may well be that some of the incidents of the play refer to certain events of the stage. But it seems impossible to find out the clew of these events and to fix the details of them with any degree of probability.

As to the present edition of *Faire Em*, there remains little to be said. The text, as given in the old copies, seems not to have been derived from the author's manuscript, but from some report taken down in short-hand at the representation of the play. Only thus can we account for the numerous instances of faulty versification; only thus can we explain the fact that several scenes which, to all appearance, were written in verse by the poet, have been handed down to us in prose (printed as irregular verse in Qq). Notwithstanding, we have thought it best to be as conservative as possible in the re-establishment of the text, and to admit emendations only in cases where the sense or the construction decidedly require to be corrected or where the metre may without difficulty be restored. The different readings of the two quarto-editions as well as the conjectures, made by Delius, Simpson, and Elze, have been carefully embodied in the notes, which, we hope, will prove to be more faithful and complete than those of the former editions.

The quarto-editions of our play are not divided into acts and scenes. Chetwood divided the play into five acts, Tieck into eighteen scenes; Delius, combining these two divisions, has five acts and eighteen scenes. Our acts and scenes correspond with those of Delius; but we have followed Simpson in contracting sc. XVII and XVIII (Act V.) into one. Simpson has seventeen scenes, but only three acts, act III., IV., and V. forming one act in his edition.

---



FAIRE EM,  
、

# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ. <sup>a)</sup>

WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR.	ROSILIO. <sup>b)</sup>
ZWENO, <i>King of Denmark.</i>	DEMARCH. <sup>c)</sup>
DUKE DIROT.	<i>Danish Ambassador.</i>
MARQUES LUBECK.	<i>The Miller of Manchester.</i>
MOUNTNEY.	TROTTER, <i>his man.</i>
MANUILE.	<i>Citizen of Chester.</i>
VALINGFORD.	

BLAUNCH <sup>d)</sup>, *Princess of Denmark.*

MARIANA, *Princess of Swethia.*

FAIRE EM, *the Miller's Daughter.*

ELNER <sup>e)</sup>, *the Citizen's Daughter.*

*English and Danish Nobles.*

*Soldiers, Countrymen, and Attendants.*

<sup>a</sup>. Wanting in Qq.; first added by Chetwood. — <sup>b</sup>. *Rocilia* B (III. 5, 25), *Rozilio* Chet. — <sup>c</sup>. *Dimach* A (I. 1, 74), *Dimarch* Chet. (III. 6, 14). — <sup>d</sup>. *Blanch* B (passim), *Blannch* A (II. 2, 44). — <sup>e</sup>. *Elinor* Chet., *Elinor* Del.

---

# A C T I.

## SCENE I.

*Enter WILLIAM the CONQUEROR; MARQUES LUBECK, with a picture; MOUNTNEY; MANUILE; VALINGFORD; and DUKE DIROT.*

*Lub.* What meanes faire Britaines mighty Conqueror  
So suddenly to cast away his staffe,  
And all in passion to forsake the tylt?

*Dir.* My Lord, this triumph we solemnise here  
Is of meere loue to your increasing ioyes, 5  
Only expecting cheerefull lookes for all;  
What sudden pangs then moues your maiesty  
To dimme the brightnesse of the day with frownes?

*Wm.* Ah, good my Lords, misconster not the cause;  
At least, suspect not my displeased browes: 10  
I amorously do heare to your intent,  
For thanks and all that you can wish I yeeld.  
But that which makes me blush and shame to tell  
Is cause why thus I turne my conquering eyes  
To cowardes looks and beaten fantasies. 15

*Mounl.* Since we are gittless, we the lesse dismay  
To see this sudden change possess your cheere,  
For if it issue from your owne conceits  
Bred by suggestion of some enuious thoughts,  
Your highnesse wisdom may suppress it straight. 20  
Yet tell us, good my Lord, what thought it is

*Actus Primus. Scena, Prima.* Qq. — Stage-direction. *Enter . . . Marquis of Lubeck, with a picture on his shield, as coming from the tournament, Mountney . . .* Chet. — 1. Prefixed *Marques* in Qq (passim), *conqueror*, Del. — 4. For *solémnise* see Abbott, *A Shakespearian Grammar*, s. 491. Chet. has needlessly altered the line to *My Lord, the triumph, we have here set forth.* — 7. *pang* Del. — 12. *thanks; and* Simp. — 15. *coward looks* Del.

That thus bereaues you of your late content,  
 That in aduise we may assist your Grace,  
 Or bend our forces to reuiue your spirits.

- 25 *Wm.* Ah, Marques Lubeck, in thy power it lyes  
 To rid my bosome of these thraled dumps:  
 And therefore, good my Lords, forbear a while  
 That we may parley of these priuate cares,  
 Whose strength subdues me more than all the world.

- 30 *Val.* We goe and wish the priuate conference  
 Publicke affectes in this accustomed peace.

[*Exit all but WILLIAM and the MARQUES.*

- Wm.* Now, Marques, must a conquerer at armes  
 Disclose himselfe thrald to vnarmed thoughts,  
 And, threatned of a shaddow, yeeld to lust.  
 35 No sooner had my sparkeling eyes beheld  
 The flames of beautie blasing on this peece,  
 But sodenly a sence of myracle,  
 Imagined on thy louely Maistres face,  
 Made mee abandon bodily regard,  
 40 And cast all pleasures on my woonded soule:  
 Then, gentle Marques, tell me what she is,  
 That thus thou honourest on thy warlike shield;  
 And if thy loue and interest be such  
 As iustly may give place to mine,  
 45 That if it be, my soule with honors wings  
 May fly into the bosome of my deere —  
 If not, close them, and stoope into my graue!

- Lub.* If this be all, renowned conquerer,  
 Aduance your drooping spirites, and reuiue  
 50 The wonted courage of your Conquering minde;  
 For this faire picture painted on my shield  
 Is the true counterfeit of louely Blaunch,

24. *Or bind Del. — your joys Chet. — 26. To aid my Del. — thralled woes. Chet. — As for thraled, cp. Elze, Notes, XII, p. 6 seq., and Shakesp., Sonnet CXXIV, and Tam. I. I. 225; for dump, see Marlowe's Doctor Faustus and Greene's Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay, ed. A. W. Ward, Note to I. 12 (p. 197). — 30. thee priuate Qq, this priuate Del., the priuate Simp. conj. — 31. Del. prints and Simp. explains Public effects. — in thy accustomed Del. — 34. yield to love? Chet.*

Princes and daughter to the King of Danes,  
 Whose beautie and excesse of ornamentes  
 Deserues another manner of defence, 55  
 Pompe and high person to attend her state  
 Then Marques Lubeck any way presents.  
 Therefore her vertues I resigne to thee,  
 Alreadie shrinde in thy religious brest,  
 To be aduanced and honoured to the full; 60  
 Nor beare I this an argument of loue,  
 But to renowne faire Blaunch, my Soueraignes Childe,  
 In euerie place where I by armes may doe it.

*Wm.* Ah Marques, thy words bring heauen vnto my soule,  
 And had I heauen to giue for thy reward, 65  
 Thou shouldst be throne in no vnworthy place.  
 But let my vttermost wealth suffice thy worth,  
 Which here I vowe, and to aspire the blisse  
 That hangs on quicke atchiuement of my loue,  
 Thy selfe and I will trauell in disguise, 70  
 To bring this Ladie to our Brittain Court.

*Lub.* Let William but bethinke what may auayle,  
 And let mee die if I denie my ayde.

*Wm.* Then thus: The Duke Dirot, and th'erle Demarch,  
 Will I leaue substitutes to rule my Realme, 75  
 While mightie loue forbids my being here;  
 And in the name of Sir Robert of Windsor  
 Will goe with thee vnto the Danish Court.  
 Keepe Williams secretes, Marques, if thou loue him.  
 Bright Blaunch, I come! sweet fortune, fauour me, 80  
 And I will laud thy name eternally!

[*Exeunt.*]

61. *this, an Del., this an = this as an Gibbs* (apud Simp.). — 64. *Ah, friend! thy Chet.* — *heaven into my Chet.* and *Del.* — 67. *my utmost Chet.* — 69. *atchievements Del.* — 71. *our royal court.* Chet. — 74. *Dimach A* (through the rest of the play spelled *Demarch*). — *and earl Dimach,* Chet. — 77. *And, in the feigned name of Robert Windsor* Chet.; Simp. proposes to expunge *Sir.* — 80, 81. *sweet fortune, smile on me, || And altars shall be rais'd to worship thee.* Chet.

## SCENE II.

*Enter the MILLER and EM, his daughter.*

- Mil.* Come, daughter, we must learne to shake of pompe,  
 To leaue the state that carst beseemd a Knight  
 And gentleman of not a meane discent,  
 To vndertake this homely millers trade:
- 5 Thus must we maske, to saue our wretched liues,  
 Threatned by Conquest of this haplesse Yle,  
 Whose sad inuasions by the Conqueror,  
 Hauē made a number such as we subiect.  
 Their gentle neckes vnto the stubborne yoke
- 10 Of drudging labour and base pesantrie.  
 Sir Thomas Goddard how old Goddard is,  
 Goddard the Miller of faire Manchester.  
 Why should not I content me with this state,  
 As good Sir Edmund Trofferd did the flaile?
- 15 And thou, sweet Em, must stoope to high estate  
 To ioyne with mine that thus we may protect  
 Our harmlesse liues, which, ledd in greater port,  
 Would be an enuious obiect to our foes,  
 That seeke to root all Britaines Gentry
- 20 From bearing countenance gainst their tyrannie.  
*Em.* Good Father, let my full resolued thoughts  
 With setled patiens to support this chaunce  
 Be some poore comfort to your aged soule;  
 For therein restes the height of my estate,
- 25 That you are pleased with this deiection,  
 And that all toyles my hands may vndertake  
 May serue to worke your worthines content.
- Mil.* Thanks, my deere daughter. These thy plesant words

SCENE II. 3. *of no meane* Qq; the correction as given in our text was suggested by Simp. — 9. *vnto their stubborne* Qq, corr. by Del. — 11. *Thomas Godard* A (in all other instances spelled *Goddard*). — 14. *Edmund Trostard* Del. — 15. *stoope*, i. e. *submit*. — *stoop thy high* Del. — Simp. thinks *to high* to be a mistake for *to like*; *to like estate*, however, would little agree with the following *to ioyne with mine*. — 19. Simp., overlooking that *Gentry* has the quality of a trisyllable here, adds *up* at the end of the line. — 19, 20. Omitted by Chet. — 20. *against* Qq. — 25. Omitted by Chet. — 28. *thy pleasing words* Chet.

Transerre my soule into a second heauen :  
 And in thy settled minde my ioyes consist, 30  
 My state reuyues, and I'm in former plight.  
 Although our outward pomp be thus abased,  
 And thralde to drudging, staylesse of the world,  
 Let vs retaine those honorable mindes  
 That lately gouerned our superior state, 35  
 Wherein true gentrie is the only meane  
 That makes vs differ from base millers borne.  
 Though we expect no knightly delicates,  
 Nor thirst in soule for former s<sup>ou</sup>eraign<sup>tie</sup>,  
 Yet may our myndes as highly scorne to stoope 40  
 To base desires of vulgars worldlynes,  
 As if we were in our presedent way.  
 And, lonely daughter, since thy youthfull yeares  
 Must needes admit as yong affections,  
 And that sweet loue vnpartiall perceiues 45  
 Her daintie subiects thorough euery part,  
 In chief receiue these lessons from my lippes,  
 The true discouerers of a Virgins due,  
 Now requisite, now that I know thy minde  
 Something enclynde to fauour Manuils sute, 50  
 A gentleman, thy Louer in protest;  
 And that thou maist not be by loue deceiued,  
 But trye his meaning fit for thy desert,  
 In pursuit of all amorous desires,  
 Regard thine honour. Let not vehement sighes, 55  
 Nor earnest vows importing feruent loue,  
 Render thee subject to the wrath of lust.

31. *reuyued*, and *I* in Qq; for the reading as given above the present Edd. are answerable. — 33. Omitted by Chet. — *And thrall* to Del. — 35. *Thar lately* A. — 37. *from plebeian birth* Chet. — 38. *Knightly delicates*. Compare *princely delicates* (Marlowe's Doctor Faustus I. 83) and a *prince's delicates* (3 Henry VI., II. 5, 51). — 41. *of vulgar worldliness* Chet. — *worldliness* Del. (see II. 3, 38). — 44. *admit of young* Chet. — 45. Instead of *perceiues* Simp. needlessly proposes to read either *deceives*, or *peruses*, or *pursues*, or *perverts*. — 45, 46. Omitted by Chet. — 46. *dainie* B. — *through* Qq, *thorough* Del. and Simp. — 47. *In brief* Del. — 54. Omitted by Chet. — 57. *wrath of love* Chet.

- ✓ For that, transformed to form of sweet delight,  
Will bring thy body and thy soule to shame.  
60 Chaste thoughts and modest conuersations,  
Of prooffe to keepe out all inchaunting vowes,  
Vaine sighes, forst teares, and pittifull aspects,  
Are they that make deformed Ladies faire,  
✓ Poore wretch, and such intycing men,  
65 That seeke of all but onely present grace,  
Shall in perseuerance of a Virgins due  
Prefer the most refusers to the choyce  
Of such a soule as yeelded what they thought.  
But hoe: where 's Trotter?

[*Here enters TROTTER, the Millers man, to them: and  
they within call to him for their gryste.*]

- 70 *Trot.* Where's Trotter? why, Trotter is here. Yfaith,  
you and your daughter go up and downe weeping and wa-  
menting, and keeping of a wamentation, as who should say,  
the Mill would goe with your wamenting.

*Mil.* How now, Trotter? why complainest thou so?

- 75 *Trot.* Why, yonder is a company of yong men and  
maydes, keepe such a styr for their gryst, that they would  
haue it before my stones be readie to grind it. But, yfaith,  
I would I coulede breake winde enough backward: you should  
not tarrie for your gryst, I warrant you.

- 80 *Mil.* Content thee, Trotter, I will go pacifie them.

*Trot.* I wis you will when I cannot. Why, looke, you  
haue a Mill — Why, what's your Mill without mee? Or  
rather, Mistres, what were I without you?

[*Here he taketh EM about the neck.*]

58. *to former Qq; to form of* is Simp.'s conjecture. — 63. *deformed bodies fair.* Del. — 64. Simp. proposes to read *And poor ones rich* instead of *Poore wretch.* — 64, 65. By a strange blunder the words *such* and *all* are transposed in Simp.'s edition; but Simp., rightly discerning what the sense of the passage requires, proposes in a foot-note the arrangement of the words as it is found in the old copies. — 66. *Virgin's vow* Simp. conj. — 68. *'Qy: they sought?'* Simp. — The whole speech of the Miller reminds the reader of Polonius' advice to Laertes (Haml. I. 3, 55—81) and of the precepts given to Bertram by the Countess in All's Well I. 1, 69—81. — 69. *where is Qq, where's* Simp. — 70—73. As four lines in Qq, divided at *here* | *wee- ping* | *wamentation* | *wamenting.* — 70. *Trotter's here* Chet. — 80. *I'll go* Simp. — 82. *Of rather* A. — 83. The stage-direction omitted by Del.

*Em.* Nay, Trotter, if you fall a chyding, I will giue  
you ouer. 85

*Trot.* I chyde you, dame, to amend you. You are too  
fyne to be a Millers daughter; for if you should but stoope  
to take vp the tole-dish, you will haue the crampe in your  
finger at least ten weekes after.

*Mill.* Ah, well said, Trotter; teach her to play the good 90  
huswife, and thou shalt haue her to thy wife, if thou canst  
get her good wil.

*Trot.* Ah, words! wherein I see Matrimonie come loaden  
with kisses to salute me: Now let me alone to pick the mill,  
to fill the hopper, to take the tole, to mend the sayles, yea, 95  
and to make the mill to go with the verie force of my loue.

[*Here they must call for their gryst within.*  
I come, I come; yfaith, now you shall haue your gryst, or  
else Trotter will trott and amble himselfe to death.

[*They call him againe. Exit.*

### SCENE III.

*Enter KING OF DENMARKE, with some Attendants, BLAUNCH his  
daughter, MARIANA, MARQUES LUBECK, WILLIAM, disguised.*

*King.* Lord Marques Lubecke, welcome home.  
Welcome, braue Knight, vnto the Denmarke King,  
— For Williams sake, the noble Norman Duke,  
So famous for his fortunes and successe,  
That graceth him with name of Conqueror; 5  
Right double welcome must thou be to us.

*Rob. Wind.* And to my Lord the King shall I recount  
Your graces courteous entertainment,  
That for his sake vouchsafe to honor me,  
A simple Knight, attendant on his grace. 10

*King.* But say, Sir Knight, what may I call your name?

84. *you fall A. — you o'er Del.* — 85—88. Printed as five lines in  
Qq, ending *amend you | daughter | tole-dish | finger | after.* — 89. *fingers*  
Chet. — 90. *to play* omitted by Del. — 96. *Here they call . . .* Chet. —  
98. *They . . . againe. Exeunt. Del.*

SCENE III. Stage-direction: *Enter Zweno, King of Denmark . . .* Chet.

*Rob. Wind.* Robert Windsor, and like your maiestie.

*King.* I tell thee, Robert, I so admire the man

As that I count it haynous guilt in him

15 That honours not Duke William with his heart.

Blaunch, bid this straunger welcome, good my gyrl.

*Blaunch.* Sir,

Should I neglect your highnes charge herein,

It might be thought of base discourtesie.

20 Welcome, Sir Knight, to Denmarke, hartelie.

*Rob. Wind.* Thanks, gentle Ladie. Lord Marques, what is she?

*Lub.* That same is Blaunch, the daughter to the King,

The substance of the shadow that you saw.

*Rob. Wind.* May this be shee, for whom I crost the Seas?

25 I am ashamde to think I was so fond,

In whom there's nothing that contents my mynd,

Ill head, worse featurde, vncomly, nothing courtly;

Swart and ill fauored, a Colliers sanguine skin.

I neuer saw a harder fauour'd Slut;

30 Loue her? for what? I can no whit abide her!

*King.* Mariana, I haue this day receiued letters

From Swethia, that lets me vnderstand

Your raunsome is collecting there with speed,

And shortly shalbe hither sent to vs.

35 *Mar.* Not that I finde occasion to mislike

12. *Robert of Windsor, so please your Chet., Robert of Windsor, an't* Del. Qy: *Robert Windsor, an it* (Robert having the quality of a monosyllable)? — 13. Del. reads *Knight* instead of *Robert*. — 14. *famous guilt* Del. — 15. *in his heart* Del. — 16. *good my child* Chet. — 17. *Sir* omitted by Del. — 17, 18. Printed as one line in Qq; in placing *Sir* in a separate line we have followed Simp. Both lines are omitted in Chet. — 18. *therein* Del. — 20. *to Denmark's royal court* Chet. — 22. *Blaunch, daughter* Qq, *the* inserted by Chet. and Simp. Elze prefers to read *Blanch, sole daughter*, since, lower down (IV. 2, 7), we are informed that Blanch is the king's 'only daughter' (See Elze, Notes, XIII, p. 7). — 27. *Ill head* = *Ill-headed*? The only passage where we have met with the compound *ill-headed*, is in Spenser's *Facrie Queene*, bk IV, c. I, st. 3, l. 4; but there it has the sense of 'disturbed in the head'. Simp. and Elze think our passage corrupt; the former proposes to read *Ill head, worse face*, the latter (Notes, XIV, p. 8) *Ill-shaped, worse-featured*. — 29. *harder-favour'd maid*. Chet. — 34. *shortly hither shall be* Del. — 35. *of mislike* Qq, *of mistiking* Del., *to mislike* Simp. conj. — 'Evidently there is something wanting here; Mariana's speech should begin

My entertainment in your graces court,  
But that I long to see my native home —

*King.* And reason have you, Madam, for the same.

Lord Marques, I commit vnto your charge  
The entertainment of Sir Robert here; 40  
Let him remaine with you within the Court,  
In solace and disport to spend the time.

*Rob. Wind.* I thank your highnes, whose bounden I remaine.

[*Exit* KING OF DENMARKE.]

*Blaunch.* [*speaketh this secretly at one end of the stage*]  
Vnhappie Blaunch, what strange effects are these  
That workes within my thoughts confusedly? 45  
That still, me thinkes, affection drawes me on,  
To take, to like, nay more, to loue this knight.

*Rob. Wind.* A modest countenance; no heautie stillen looke;  
Not uerie fayer, but ritchly deckt with fauour;  
A sweet face, an exceeding daintie hand; 50  
A body were it framed of wax  
By all the cunning Artists of the world,  
It could not better be proportioned.

*Lub.* How now, Sir Robert? in a studie, man?  
Here is no tyme for contemplation. 55

*Rob. Wind.* My Lord, there is a certain odd conceit  
Which on the sudden greatly troubles me.

*Lub.* How like you Blaunch? I partly do perceiue  
The little boy hath played the wagg with you.

*Rob. Wind.* The more I look the more I loue to look. 60  
Who seyes that Mariana is not faire?

Ile gage my gauntlet gainst the enuious man  
That dares auow there liueth her compare.

*Lub.* Sir Robert, you mistake your counterfait,  
This is the Lady which you came to see. 65

with a line somewhat to the following effect: *It glads my heart to hear these joyful tidings* &c. (Elze, Notes, p. 134). — 37. *But I that I Del.* — *home.* Qq, *home* — the pres. Edd. — 38. Omitted by Chet. — 43. *hightness* A, *highnes* B. — *whose bounden I remain* om. by Chet. — In Qq the stage-direction is after l. 42; set right by Del. — 44. [*Aside*] Del. — 45. *work* Del. — 51. *formed all of wax* Del., *framed all of wax* Simp. conj. — 54. *in a study.* Compare *in a brown study*, Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay, ed. Ward, XIV, 100 (p. 105 and p. 266).

*Rob. Wind.* Yea, my Lord: She 's counterfai in deed,  
For there's the substance that contents me best.

*Lub.* That is my loue. Sir Robert, you do wrong me.

*Rob. Wind.* The better for you, Sir, she is your Loue —  
70 As for the wrong, I see not how it growes.

*Lub.* In seeking that which is anothers right.

*Rob. Wind.* As who should say your loue were priuiledged,  
That none might looke vpon her but your selfe.

*Lub.* These iarres becomes not our familiaritie,  
75 Nor will I stand on termes to moue your patience.

*Rob. Wind.* Why, my Lord,  
An't I of flesh and bloud as well as you?  
Then giue me leaue to loue as well as you.

*Lub.* . To loue, Sir Robert? but whom? not she I loue?  
80 Nor stands it with the honor of my state  
To brooke corriuals with me in my loue.

*Rob. Wind.* So, Sir, we are thorough for that L[ady].  
Ladies, farewell. Lord Marques, will you go?  
He finde a time to speake with her I trow.

85 *Lub.* With all my heart. Come, Ladies, wil you walke?  
[Exit.]

#### SCENE IV.

*Enter MANUILE alone, disguised.*

*Man.* Ah, Em! the subiect of my restlesse thoughts,  
The Anuyll whereupon my heart doth beat,  
Framing thy state to thy desert —

66. *Yes, my Lord Del.* — *She is Qq, She's* the pres. Edd. — 67. *there is Qq, there's Chet.* and Simp. — *that best contents me Qq;* Simp. proposes to read, either, *For there's the substance that doth best content me,* or, *For there's the substance best contenteth me;* our text is regulated according to El.'s suggestion (see Notes, XV, pp. 8 seq.). — 68. *That is my love, Sir Robert; you do me wrong.* Del. — 74. *become* Del. — 76, 77. Printed as one line in Qq, divided by Del. — 77. *Am not I Qq, Am I not Del.* — 82. Omitted by Chet. — 'Thorough, a mistake — perhaps thwart. (So, sir, we're thwart for)'. Simp. — *for that L. Qq, for that.* Del.; we have adopted the reading of Simp. (So, at the beginning of the line, being a so-called monosyllabic foot). — 84. Omitted by Chet. — Del. adds [*Aside*]. — *I will finde Qq, I'll find* Simp.

SCENE IV. 3. *Forming thy Del.* — *thy lowly state* Chet.

Full yll this life becomes thy heauenly looke,  
 Wherein sweet loue and vertue sits enthroned. 5  
 Bad world! where riches is esteemed aboue them both,  
 In whose base eyes nought else is bountifull!  
 A Millers daughter, saies the multitude,  
 Should not be loued of a gentleman.  
 But let them breath their soules into the ayre, 10  
 Yet will I still affect thee as my selfe,  
 So thou be constant in thy plighted vow.  
 But here comes one — Ile listen to his talke.

[MANUILE staies, *hiding himselfe.*

*Enter VALINGFORD at another dore, disguised.*

*Val.* Goe, William Conqueror, and seeke thy loue,  
 Seeke thou a mynion in a forren land, 15  
 Whilest I draw backe and court my loue at home,  
 The Millers daughter of faire Manchester  
 Hath bound my feet to this delightsome soyle,  
 And from her eyes do dart such golden beames  
 That holds my harte in her subiection. 20

*Man.* He ruminates on my beloued choyce:  
 God graunt he come not to preuent my hope.  
 But heres another, him yle listen to.

*Enter MOUNTNEY, disguised, at another dore.*

*Mount.* Nature vniust, in vtterance of thy arte,  
 To grace a pesant with a Princes fame! 25  
 Pesant am I, so to mis-terme my loue:  
 Although a Millers daughter by her birth,

6. *Bad world where riches are esteemed most* Chet. (and not *is esteemed most*, as Del., p. XI, erroneously states); Simp. proposes *'bove both for above them both.* — 10. Compare *Here could I breathe my soul into the air*, 2 Henry VI., III. 2, 391 (quoted by Simp.). — 13. *I will* Qq, *I'll* Del. and Simp. — 20. *That hold* Del. — 22. *Heav'n grant* Chet. — 23. *listen too.* Del. — 25. *Princes fame* Qq, *prince's frame* Chet., *princess' fame* Del., *prince's fame* Simp. Elze proposes to read *princess' face*, which, indeed, would better agree with Mountney's subsequent praise of *'her beauties worthynes'* (l. 35). See Notes, XVII, pp. 9 seq. — 26. *Pesant? Am I so* *to* Chet.

- Yet may her beautie and her vertues well suffice  
 To hyde the blemish of her birth in hell,  
 30 Where neither enuious eyes nor thought can perce,  
 But endlesse darknesse euer smother it.  
 ✓Goe, William Conqueror, and seeke thy loue,  
 Whilest I draw backe and court mine owne the while  
 Decking her body with such costly robes  
 35 As may become her beauties worthynes;  
 That so thy labors may be laughd to scorne,  
 And she thou seekest in forraine regions  
 Be darkned and eclipt when she arriues  
 By one that I haue chosen nearer home.  
 40 *Man.* What! Comes he to, to intercept my loue?  
 Then hye thee Manuile to forestall such foes.

[*Exit MANUILE.*]

- Mount.* What now, Lord Valingford, are you behinde?  
 The king had chosen you to goe with him.  
*Val.* So chose he you, therefore I marveile much  
 45 That both of vs should linger in this sort.  
 What may the king imagine of our staye?  
*Mount.* The king may iustly think we are to blame:  
 But I immagined I might well be spared,  
 And that no other man had borne my minde.  
 50 *Val.* The like did I: in frendship then resolute  
 What is the cause of your vnlookt for stay?  
*Mount.* Lord Valingford, I tell thee as a friend:  
 Loue is the cause why I haue stayed behinde.  
*Val.* Loue, my Lord? of whom?  
 55 *Mount.* Of Em, the millers daughter of Manchester.  
*Val.* But may this be?  
*Mount.* Why not, my Lord? I hope full well you know

28. *and her vertues serve* Chet. — 37. Simp., not being aware that *region* is to be pronounced as a trisyllable here, needlessly adds [*out*] after *seekest* (See Elze, Notes, XVII, p. 10). — 40. *What comes he to*, Qq and Simp., *What comes he too*, Chet., *What! Comes he too* Del. — 43. *hath chosen* Del. and Simp. — 55. *Of* omitted in Qq. We have adopted El's emendation (Notes, XVIII, p. 10), which seems to be required both by grammar and metre (*Daughter* must, of course, be pronounced as a monosyllable here).

That loue respects no difference of state,  
So beautie serue to stir affection.

*Val.* But this it is that makes me wonder most, 60  
That you and I should be of one conseite  
In such a straunge vnlikly passion.

*Mount.* But is that true? My Lord, I hope you do but iest.

*Val.* I would I did; then were my griefe the lesse.

*Mount.* Nay, neuer grieuie; for if the cause be such, 65

To ioyne our thoughts in such a Simpathy,

All enuie set asyde: let vs agree

To yeeld to eythers fortune in this choyce.

*Val.* Content, say I: and whatsoere befall, 70  
Shake hands, my Lord, and fortune thriue at all.

[*Exeunt.*]

## A C T II.

### SCENE I.

*Enter EM, and TROTTER, the Millers man, with a kerchife on his head, and an Vrinall in his hand.*

*Em.* Trotter, where haue you beene?

*Trot.* Where haue I beene? Why, what signifies this?

*Em.* A kerchiefe, doth it not?

*Trot.* What call you this, I pray?

*Em.* I say it is an Vrinall. 5

*Trot.* Then this is mystically to giue you to vnderstand,  
I haue beene at the Phismicaries house.

*Em.* How long hast thou beene sicke?

*Trot.* Yfaith, euen as long as I haue not beene halfe 10  
well, and that hath beene a long time.

*Em.* A loytering time, I rather imagine.

*Trot.* It may bee so: but the Phismicary tels mee that  
you can help me.

*Em.* Why, anything I can doe for recouerie of thy health 15  
be right well assured of.

63. *But is this true?* Del. — Simp. proposes to omit *my Lord.* —  
65. *for if thou canst be such* Del. — 70. *thrive o'er all.* Simp. conj.

SCENE I. 9. *e'en* Simp. — *halfe* om. by Chet.

*Trot.* Then giue me your hand.

*Em.* To what end?

*Trot.* That the ending of an old indenture is the beginning of a new bargaine.

20 *Em.* What bargaine?

*Trot.* That you promised to doe anything to recouer my helth.

*Em.* On that condition I giue thee my hand.

*Trot.* Ah, sweet Em! [*Here he offers to kisse her.*]

25 *Em.* How now, Trot! your maistres daughter?

*Trot.* Yfaith, I aime at the fairest. Ah, Em, sweet Em!

Fresh as the flowre,

That hath the poure

To wound my harte,

30 And ease my smart,

Of me, poore theefe,

In prison bound —

*Em.* So all your ryme

Lies on'the ground.

35 But what meanes this?

*Trot.* Ah, marke the deuise —

For thee, my loue,

Full sicke I was,

In hazard of my life,

40 Thy promise was

To make me whole,

And for to be my wife.

Let me inioy

Thy loue, my deere,

45 And thou possesse

Thy Trotter here.

26—34. Printed as six lines in Qq; ending *fairest* | *flowre* | *harte* | *theefe* | *bound* | *ground*; in Del.'s and Simp.'s edd. the lines end at *sweet Em* | *flower* | *power* | *heart* | *smart* | *bound* | *ground*. We have adopted El.'s arrangement (See Jahrbuch der Deutschen Shakespeare-Gesellschaft, vol. XV, p. 345). — 27. *Fresh as a flower* El. conj. — 28. *the* out of Qq, added by Simp. — 37—46. In Qq these lines form only four lines, ending at *life* | *wife* | *deere* | *here*. Del. and Simp. have the same division. Our arrangement is owing to El. (Jahrb. XV, p. 345). — 44. *My loue* Qq, *Thy loue* is El.'s correction, Compare IV. 3. 24, 25.

*Em.* But I meant no such matter.

*Trot.* Yes, woos, but you did. Ile goe to our Parson,  
Sir John, and he shall mumble vp the marriage out of  
hand. 50

*Em.* But here comes one that will forbid the Banes.

[*Here enters MANUILE to them.*]

*Trot.* Ah, Sir, you come too late.

*Man.* What remedie, Trotter?

*Em.* Goe, Trotter, my father calles.

*Trot.* Would you haue me go in, and leaue you two here? 55

*Em.* Why, darest thou not trust me?

*Trot.* Yes, faith, euen as long as I see you.

*Em.* Goe thy waies, I pray thee hartely.

*Trot.* That same word 'hartely' is of great force. I will  
goe. But I pray, sir, beware you; come not too neere the  
wench. 60

[*Exit Trotter.*]

*Man.* I am greatly beholding to you.

Ah, Maistres, sometime I might haue said, my loue,

But time and fortune hath bereued me of that,

✓ And I, an abiect in those gracious eyes, 65

That with remorse earst saw into my grieft,

May sit and sigh the sorrows of my heart.

*Em.* In deed my Manuile hath some cause to doubt,  
When such a swaine is riual in his loue!

*Man.* Ah, Em, were he the man that causeth this mistrust, 70  
I should esteeme of thee as at the first.

*Em.* But is my loue in earnest all this while?

*Man.* Belecue me, Em, it is not time to iest,  
When others ioyes, what lately I possest.

*Em.* If touching loue my Manuile charge me thus, 75  
Vnkindly must I take it at his hands,  
For that my conscience cleeres me of offence.

48. woos om. by Del. — 55. In two copies of B (Brit. Mus. 643. c. 14 and  $\frac{b. 21. c}{b}$ ) here has dropped out, while in a third copy (161. a. 26) it is to be found as well as in A. — 57. e'en Simp. — 60. I pray you, sir, Del. — 65. I am abiect Qq; in our text we have adopted the emendation as proposed by Simp. — 71. at thee first B. — 74. others 'joy Del.

- Man.* Ah, impudent and shamlesse in thy ill,  
 That with thy cunning and defraudfull tounge  
 80 Seeks to delude the honest-meaning minde!  
 Was neuer heard in Manchester before  
 ✓ Of truer loue then hath been twixt vs twaine:  
 And for my part how I haue hazarded  
 Displeasure of my father and my freindes,  
 85 Thy selfe can witnes. Yet notwithstanding this,  
 Two gentlemen attending on Duke William,  
 Mountney and Valingford, as I heard them named,  
 Oft times resort to see and to be seene  
 Walking the street fast by thy fathers dore,  
 90 Whose glauncing eyes vp to the windowes cast  
 Giues testies of their Maistres amorous hart.  
 This, Em, is noted and too much talked on,  
 Some see 't without mistrust of ill —  
 Others there are that, scorning, grynne thereat,  
 95 And saith, 'There goes the Millers daughters wooers'.  
 Ah me! whom chiefly and most of all it doth concerne —  
 To spend my time in grieve and vex my soule,  
 To thinke my loue should be rewarded thus,  
 And for thy sake abhorre all womenkind!
- 100 *Em.* May not a maiden looke vpon a man  
 Without suspicious judgement of the world?

80. *seekese A.* — 82. *Of true louer A.* — *betwixt Qq,* 'twixt Chet. and Del. — 85. 'Dele Yet' Simp. — 86. *gentlemen A.* — 87. El. proposes either to pronounce *Valingford* as a dissyllable, or to contract *Mountney* and to begin the verse with two trochees, or to enclose the line in a parenthesis and to expunge *as* (See Notes, XX, pp. 11 seq., and p. 125). — 88. *to see and to be seene.* Compare Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay, ed. Ward, I. 139 seq., *the troop of all the maids | That come to see and to be seen that day.* Ward, l. c., p. 204, very aptly quotes a line from Ovid, *Ars Amatoria* I. 99: *Spectatum veniunt, veniunt, spectentur ut ipsae.* — 90. *up to windows B,* *up to the windows A* (and Del.), *up to thy windows Simp.* — 91. *Give Del.* and Simp. — *Gives witness of Chet.* — 92. Simp. needlessly inserts *is* between *and* and *too.* — 93. *see it Qq.* Chet. restores a regular blank verse by adding *plain* after *see it.* Del. has adopted Chet.'s reading. — 95. *go Del.* — 96. Chet. obtains a blank verse by omitting *and* and *of all*; El. proposes to expunge *chiefly and.* — 99. *maiden kind Chet., women-kind Simp.* — 100. *maid Qq,* *maiden Del.;* *May not a maid [then] look Simp.*

*Man.* If sight doe moue offence, 'tis th' better not to see.  
But thou didst more, vnconstant as thou art,  
For with them thou hadst talke and conference.

*Em.* May not a maid talke with a man without mistrust? 105

*Man.* Not with such men suspected amorous.

*Em.* I grieue to see my Manuiles ielousie.

*Man.* Ah, Em, faithfull loue is full of ielousie.

So did I loue thee true and faithfully,

For which I am rewarded most vnthankfully. 110

[*Exit, in a rage. Manet EM.*

*Em.* And so away? What, in displeasure gone,

And left me such a bitter sweet to gnaw upon?

Ah, Manuile, little wottest thou

How neere this parting goeth to my heart.

Vncourteous loue, whose followers reaps reward 115

Of hate, disdaine, reproach and infamie,

The fruit of franticke, bedlome ielousie!

[*Here enter MOUNTNEY to EM.*

But here comes one of these suspicious men:

Witnes, my God, without desert of me,

For onely Manuile honor I in harte, 120

Nor shall vnkindnesse cause me from him start!

*Mount.* For this good fortune, Venus, be thou blest,

To meet my loue, the mistres of my heart,

Where time and place giues oportunity,

102. *it is the better* Qq; '*tis better* Simp. conj. — 108. Simp.'s proposal to restore a regular blank verse by expunging *Em.* will hardly find favour, because 'it is customary with our poet to add the name of the person addressed, especially after an interjection which begins the verse'. Cp. II. 1. 70, 113, 164. El. proposes to place *Ah, Em!* in an interjectional line and to read: *Ah, Em! | All faithful love &c.* (Notes, XIX, pp. 10 seq.). — 110. Scan: *For which | I'm r'wdr | ded most | unthánk | fully |.* (See El., Jahrb., XV, p. 345). Whether we read the line in that manner or no, Simp.'s conjecture *So I'm rewarded* is at any rate unnecessary. — 111. The prefix *Em.* om. in Qq. — 112. Simp. proposes to read *on* for *upon*. — 113. Chet. restores the legitimate number of feet by duplicating *Manuile*. — 115. *reap* Del. — 116. Del. erroneously prints *bate* for *hate*. — 117. *Here enter . . . A.* — 119. *Witness, my soul*, Chet. — 121. *from him to start* Qq; the omission of *to* is Simp.'s conjecture. See Abbott, s. 349. — *Nor shall unkindness cause my love to start* Chet.

125 At full to let her vnderstand my loue.

[*He turnes to EM and offers to take her by the hand,  
and she goes from him.*

Faire mistres, since my fortune sorts so well,

Heare you a word. What meaneth this?

Nay, stay, faire Em.

*Em.*

I'm going homewards, Syr.

*Mount.* Yet stay, sweet loue, to whom I must disclose

130 The hidden secrets of a louers thoughts,

Not doubting but to finde such kinde remorse

As naturally you are enclyned to.

*Em.* The gentleman, your friend, Syr,

I haue not seene him this foure dayes, at th' least.

135 *Mount.* Whats that to mee?

I speake not, sweet, in person of my friend,

But for my selfe, whom, if that loue deserue

To haue regard, being honourable loue,

Not base affects of loose lasciuious loue,

140 Whom youthfull Wantons play and dally With,

✓ But that Vnites in bands of holy rytes,

And knits the sacred Knot that Gods —

[*Here EM cuts him off.*

*Em.* What meane you, sir, to keepe me here so long?

I cannot vnderstand you by your sygnes;

145 You keepe a pratling with your lippes,

But neuer a word you speake that I can heare.

*Mount.* What? is she deafe? a great impediment!

Yet remedies there are for such defects.

Sweet Em, it is no little grieve to mee,

150 To see, where Nature, in her pryde of Art,

Hath wrought perfections ritch and admirable —

*Em.* Speake you to me, Sir?

128. *I am* Qq. — 133. *The gentleman, your friend, Sir?* Del. —  
134. *the least* Qq. — 135, 136. Printed as one line in Qq; we have adopted  
the division of Del. and Simp. — 138. *being* used as a monosyllable here. —  
139. *loose lasciuious lust* El. conj.; cp. I. 2. 57. — 141. *in honourable bands*  
Qq; we have expunged *honourable* on the authority of El., who justly re-  
marks that this word is owing to a faulty repetition from l. 138 (See Notes,  
p. 13). — 142. *God's* Del.; *Knot that heaven* Chet.

*Mount.*

To thee, my onely joy.

*Em.* I cannot heare you.*Mount.* Oh, plague of fortune! Oh, hell without compare!  
What boots it vs to gaze and not enioy?

155 ✓

*Em.* Fare you Well, Sir.[*Exit* EM. *Manet* MOUNTNEY.]

*Mount.* Farewell, my loue, nay, farewell life and all!  
 Could I procure redresse for this infirmitie,  
 It might be meanes shee would regard my suit.  
 I am acquainted with the Kings Physitions, 160  
 Amongst the which there's one, mine honest friend,  
 Seignior Alberto, a very learned man,  
 His judgment will I haue to help this ill.  
 Ah, Em, faire Em, if art can make thee whole,  
 Ile Buy that sense for thee, although it cost me deere. 165  
 But, Mountney, stay: this may be but deceit,  
 A matter fained onely to delude thee,  
 And, not vnlike, perhaps by Valingford.  
 He loues faire Em as well as I —  
 As well as I? Ah, no, not halfe so well. 170  
 Put case: yet may he be thine enimie,  
 And give her counsell to dissemble thus.  
 Ile try th' euent and if it fall out so,  
 Frindship, farewell: Loue makes me now a foe.

[*Exit* MOUNTNEY.]

154. Simp. proposes to expunge the second *Oh!* — 155. 'Probably *and not to hear?* so to rhyme with *compare*'. Simp. — El. doubts whether we should not read *and not converse*, or whether a line to the following effect has not dropped out: *and not enjoy | The sweet converse of mutual love between us*. In our opinion, the reading of the Qq offers no difficulty. — 157. For the shifting accent of *Farewell* compare V. i. 208. — 163. *His judgment will I crave* Simp. conj. — 165. *though't cost me dear* Simp. conj. — 166. *may be yet deceit* Chet. — 169. *loves the lovely Em* Chet. — 171. *Yet he may* Del. — Instead of this line Chet. reads: *Yet he may prove thy favour'd friend*, which line Del. has inserted in his text between ll. 170 and 171. — 173. *the euent* Qq, *th'event* Chet. and Del. — *if it should be so* Chet.

## SCENE II.

*Enter Marques LUBECK and MARIANA.*

*Mar.* Trust me, my Lord, I 'm sorry for your hurt.

*Lub.* Gramercie, Madam; but it is not great:

Onely a thrust, prickt with a Rapier's point.

*Mar.* How grew the quarrel, my Lord?

5 *Lub.* Sweet Ladie, for thy sake. There was, this last night, two maskes in one company; my selfe the formost: the other strangers were: amongst the which, when the Musicke began to sound the Measures, eche Masker made choice of his Ladie; and one, more forward then the rest, stept towards  
10 thee, which I perceiuing, thrust him aside, and tooke thee my selfe. But this was taken in so ill part that at my comming out of the court gate, with iustling together, it was my chauce to be thrust into the arme. The doer thereof, because he was the originall cause of the disorder at that inconuenient  
15 time, was presently committed, and is this morning sent for to aunswer the matter. And I think here he comes.

*[Here enter Sir ROBERT OF WINDSOR with a Gaylor.*

What, Sir Robert of Windsor, how now?

SCENE II (See Appendix). 1. *I am Qq, I'm Simp.* — 2. *I thank you madam; Chet.* — 5. *Ladie om.* by Chet. — *There was last night Del.* — 6. *in our company Simp. conj.* — 5—18. The speech of Lubeck is printed as irregular verse in Qq; the lines end at *for thy sake | one company | strangers were | the Measures | of his Ladie | towards thee | thee my selfe | ill part | iustling together | the arme | disorder | committed | the matter | how now.* — The same passage has been versified by Chet. as follows: *Last night three maskers in one company | Enter'd the spacious hall. I observed them well; | Each musker chose his lady in the dance | And one, the foremost, bent his steps tow'rds thee; | Which I perceiving, thrust myself between, | But this was taken in so ill a part, | That, when the sports were done, he drew upon me, | And in the scuffle I receiv'd this hurt. | The peace and quiet of the place thus broke, | The guards seized on the bold offender, | And in durance stayd him to answer this |.* — 6, 7. *the others Del. and El.*; the use of *other* as a plural pronoun, however, is consistent with ancient use; see Abbott, s. 12. Compare also Marlowe's Edward II., ed. Fleay, I. 4. 415: *Whiles other walk below.* (Dyce, p. 193<sup>b</sup>, Wagner, p. 36, and Tancock, p. 23, read with the later quartos *While others walk below*). — 9. *steps Del.* — 12. *out at the Del.* — 17. Stage-direction. *Enter William with a Keeper. Chet.*

*Rob. Wind.* Ifaith, my Lord, a prisoner: but what ayles  
your arme? 20

*Lub.* Hurt the last 'night by mischaunce.

*Rob. Wind.* What, not in the Maske at the Court gate?

*Lub.* Yes, trust me, there.

*Rob. Wind.* Why then, my Lord, I thank you for my  
nights lodging. 25

*Lub.* And I you for my hurt, if it were so. Keeper,  
awaic, I discharge you of your prisoner. [*Exit the Keeper.*]

*Rob. Wind.* Lord Marques, you offerd me disgrace to  
shoulder me.

*Lub.* Sir, I knew you not, and therefore you must par- 30  
don me, and the rather it might be alleaged to me of meare  
simplicitie to see another daunce with my Maistris, disguysed,  
and I my selfe in presence. But seeing it was our happs to  
dammific each other unwillingly, let vs be content with our  
harmes, and lay the fault, where it was, and so become friends. 35

*Rob. Wind.* Yfaith, I am content with my nights lodging,  
if you be content with your hurt.

*Lub.* Not content that I haue it, but content to forget  
how I came by it.

*Rob. Wind.* My Lord, here comes Ladie Blaunch, lets 40  
away. [*Enter BLAUNCH.*]

*Lub.* With good will. Ladie, you will stay?

[*Exit LUBECK and SIR ROBERT.*]

*Mar.* Madam —

*Blaunch.* Mariana, as I am grieved with thy presence:  
so am I not offended for thy absence; and were it not a 45  
breach to modestie, thou shouldst know before I left thee.

19. *Simp.* proposes to omit *my Lord*. — 21. *Hurt last night*, Del. — Chet.  
omits *by mischaunce*. — 26, 27. As two lines in Qq, divided at *were so*. —  
27. *awaic*; *discharge* *Simp.* conj. — 30—35. Instead of these lines Chet.  
reads: *Sir, I knew you not, and therefore crave excuse. | Come, let us be*  
*contented with our harms, | And lay the fault on chance, and become friends. |*  
— 30—39. In Qq the lines end at *pardon me | me of | my Maistris | seeing*  
*it | unwillingly | our harmes | become friends | lodging | hurt | but content |*  
*by it*. — 33. 'Qy. read hap?' El. (Notes, p. 130). — 40. *Enter Blaunch.*  
after l. 38 in Del. — 42. *will you stay?* Del., *Simp.*, El. — 44—48. Ending  
in Qq at *presence | absence | modestie | thee | madnesse | begyn, you |*  
*scoulding* !.

*Mar.* How neare is this humour to madnesse! If you  
hould on as you begyn, you are in a prety way to scoulding.

*Blaunch.* To scoulding, huswife?

50 *Mar.* Maddam, here comes one.

[*Here enters one with a letter.*]

*Blaunch.* There doth indeed. Fellow, wouldest thou  
haue any thing with any body here?

*Mes.* I haue a letter to deliuer to the Ladie Mariana.

*Blaunch.* Giue it me.

55 *Mes.* There must none but shee haue it.

*Blaunch.* [*snatcheth the letter from him, Et exit Messenger.*]

Go to, foolish fellow. And therefore, to ease the anger  
I sustaine, Ile be so bold to open it. Whats here? Sir  
Robert greets you well? You, Maistries, his loue, his life!  
Oh amorous man, how he entertaines his new Maistres; and  
60 bestowes on Lubeck, his od friend, a horne night capp to  
keep in his witt.

*Mar.* Maddam, though you haue discourteously redd  
my letter, yet, I pray you, giue it me.

*Blaunch.* Then take it, there, and there, and there.

[*She tears it. Et exit BLAUNCH.*]

65 *Mar.* How farr doth this differ from modestie! Yet will  
I gather vp the peeces, which happellie may shew to me the  
intent thereof, though not the meaning.

[*She galhers up the peeces and ioynes them.*]

‘Your seruant and loue, sir Robert of Windsor, Alias William  
the Conqueror, wisheth long health and happinesse’. Is this  
70 William the Conqueror, shrouded vnder the name of sir Robert

47, 48. *yon* hould A. — 49. *To scolding, madam!* Chet. — 50. Stage-direction: *Enter a servant with a letter.* Chet. — 51. *would's* thou Simp. — 55—63. In Qq the lines are divided at *fellow* | *sustaine* | *What's here?* | *well?* | *man* | *Maistries* | *friend* | *witt* | *discourteously* | *giue it me* |. — 58. *your Maistries* Qq, *You Mistress* Simp., *You, mistress* Del. — 60. *old friend* Chet. and Del. — 65—67. In Qq ending at *modestie* | *happellie* | *thereof* | *meaning* |. — 68. In the old copies the prefix *Mar.* is repeated at the beginning of this line. — *and lover* Del. For *love* = *lover* see Al. Schmidt, Shak.-Lex., s. v. *love* (4), p. 672<sup>b</sup>. — *alius* Qq, corr. by Del. — 68—75. Ending at *Windsor* | *happinesse* | *under* | *Windsor?* | *world* | *loue* | *can* | *Blaunch* | *my selfe* | *may* | in Qq. — 69. *wisheth long life* and Del.

of Windsor? Were he the Monarch of the world he should not dispossesse Lubeck of his loue. Therefore I will to the Court, and there, if I can, close to be freinds with Ladie Blaunch; and thereby keepe Lubeck, my loue, for my selfe, and further the Ladie Blaunch in her sute, as much as I may. 75  
[Exit.]

## SCENE III.

*Enter EM sola.*

*Em.* Jelousie, that sharps the louers sight,  
And makes him conceine and conster his intent, ✓ J 1 9.10  
Hath so bewitched my louely Manuils sences  
That he misdoubts his Em, that loues his soule;  
He doth suspect corriuals in his loue, 5  
Which, how untrue it is, be iudge, my God!  
But now no more — Here commeth Valingford;  
Shift him off now, as thou hast done the other.

*Enter VALINGFORD.*

*Val.* See, how Fortune presents me with the hope I lookt for! Fair Em! 10

*Em.* Who is that?*Val.* I am Valingford, thy loue and friend.*Em.* I cry you mercie, sir; I thought so by your speach.*Val.* What ayleth thine eyes?

*Em.* Oh blinde, sir, blind, stricken blinde, by mishap, 15  
on a sudden.

*Val.* But is it possible you should be taken on such a suddain? Infortunate Valingford, to be thus crost in thy loue! Faire Em, I am not a little sorrie to see this thy hard hap. Yet neuerthelesse — I am acquainted with a learned 20  
Physitian that will do anything for thee, at my request; to him will I resort, and enquire his iudgement, as concerning the recouery of so excellent a sence.

71—73. *He should not dispossess my Lubeck's love | Therefore I will to court; and, if I can &c.* Chet.

SCENE III. Stage-direction: *Enter Em solus.* Qq. 1. [Ah,] *Jealousy,* Simp. — 6. *be judge, high heaven,* Chet. — 11. *Who's* Simp. — 12. *'Dele Valingford'* Simp. — 14. *thy eyes* A. — 17. *But it is* Del. — 17—23. In Qq the lines end at *suddain | loue | hap | Physitian | request | iudgement |*

*Em.* Oh Lord, sir, and of all things I cannot abide  
25 Physicke, the verie name thereof to me is odious.

*Val.* No? Not the thing will doe thee so much good?  
Sweet Em, hether I came to parley of loue, hoping to haue  
found thee in thy woonted prosperity; and haue the gods so  
unmercifully thwarted my expectation, by dealing so sinisterly  
30 with thee, sweet Em?

*Em.* Good sir, no more, it fits not me  
To haue respect to such vaine fantasies  
As idle loue presents my cares withall,  
More reason I should ghostly giue my selfe  
35 To sacred prayers, for this my former sinne,  
For which this plague is iustly fallen vpon me,  
Than t' harken to the vanities of loue.

sence |. Del. and Simp. print them as prose. Elze, taking this passage and ll. 23 seqq. to be two instances of metrical composition degenerated into prose, restores the former one in this way (Notes, p. 15): *Infortunate Valingford, to be thus cross'd | In love! — Fair Em, I'm not a little sorry | To see this thy hard hap, yet ne'ertheless | I am acquainted with a learn'd physician | That will do anything for thee | At my request; to him will I resort | And will require his judgment as concerning | Th'recovery of so excellent a sense* |. After the third line the same critic thinks a verse to the following effect to be wanting (Notes, p. 132): *I fairly hope, all will be well again.* Chet. versifies the passage in this way: *But, is it possible you should be taken thus? | Unhappy Valingford! to be thus cross'd. | Fair Em, I'm tortured at thy great mishap. | I have a learn'd physician for my friend, | That will do anything at my request.* |. — 24. *Ah Lord,* Del. — and sm. Chet. — 24, 25. Divided at *Physicke* in Qq. — 26—30. Printed as five lines in Qq, ending *good | loue | prosperity | expectation | sweet Em* |. Del. and Simp. print the passage as prose. Elze tries to arrange the lines in a twofold manner; Notes, p. 15: *No! Not the thing will do thee so much good? | Sweet Em, I hither came to parle of love | Hoping I'haue found thee in thy wonted state; | And have the Gods thwart'd so unmerc'fully | My hope, by dealing so sinisterly | With thee?* EM. *Good sir, no more. It fits not me | To have respect to such vain phantasies | &c.*; p. 133: *Sweet Em, I hither came to parle of love, | Hoping I'haue found thee in thy wont'd prosper'ty; | And have the Gods | Thwart'd so unmerc'fully my expectation, | By dealing so sinisterly with thee, | Sweet Em?* EM. *Good sir, no more; | &c.* Instead of ll. 26—30 Chet. has only the following two verses: *No! Not the thing will do thee so much good? | Sweet Em, hither I came to parley love* |. — 34. Simp. erroneously states *giue my life* to be the reading of B. — 35. *pray'rs* Del. — 36. *fall'n* Del. and Simp. — 37. *to harken* Qq, *Than hearken* Simp. conj.

*Val.* Yet, sweet Em,  
Accept this iewel at my hand, which I  
Bestow on thee in token of my loue. 40

*Em.* A jewell, sir! what pleasure can I haue  
In jewels, treasure, or any worldly thing  
That want my sight that should deserue thereof?  
Ah, sir, I must leaue you,  
The paine of mine eyes is so extreame, 45  
I cannot long stay in a place. I take my leave. [*Exit* EM.]

*Val.* Zounds! what a crosse is this to my conceit! But,  
Valingford, serch the depth of this deuise. Why may not  
this be fained subtiltie, by Mounteney's inuention, to the intent  
that I seeing such occasion should leaue off my suit, and not 50  
any more persist to sollicite her of loue? Ile trie the euent;  
if I can, by any meanes, perceauē the effect of this deceyte  
to be procured by his meanes, friend Mountney, the one of  
vs is like to repent our bargeine. [*Exit*.]

38—40. As two lines in Qq, ending *hand* | *loue* |. We have adopted El.'s arrangement. Simp. and Del. print the passage as prose. Simp., however, proposes to drop *Em*, and thus to restore a regular blank verse. *Yet, sweetest Em, accept this ring from me, | Which I bestow in token of my loue.* Chet. — 42. *wordly* Del., see, above, I. 2. 41. — 43. *mine sight* Simp. — 45. The metre requires that we pronounce *e* final of *paine*, a trace of the early English pronunciation. Cp. Abbott, s. 489. — 46. Instead of this line Chet. only has *I cannot longer stay.* — 47—54. In Qq the lines end at *conceit* | *deuise* | *subtiltie* | *intent* | *suit* | *loue* | *perceauē* | *meanes* | *bargeine* . El. restores the passage in the following way (Notes, p. 12): '*Zounds! what a crosse is this to my conceit! | But Valingford, search the depth of this deuice. | Why may not this be some feign'd subtilty | By Mounteney's inuention, to th'intent | That I, seeing such occasion, should leaue off | My suit, and not persist t' sollicit her | Of loue? I'll try th'euent. If I perceive | By any means th'effect of this deceit | Procured by thy means, friend Mounteney, | The one of us is like t'repent our bargain.* |. — 49. Simp. is mistaken in giving *some feign'd* as the reading of B; *some* is not to be found in either of the old copies. — 50, 51. *and not . . . loue?* om. by Chet. — Simp. is again mistaken, when stating Chet. to have expunged the words *I'll try the event.* — 52. *Th'effect of this deceit procured by him,* Chet. — 54. Chet. concludes the scene with the following rhyme-couplet: *Rivals, in war, create a glorious strife; | But hate ensues, when rivals for a wife |.*

## A C T III.

## SCENE I.

*Enter MARIANA and MARQUES LUBECK.**Lub.* Ladie, ,

Since that occasion, forward in our good,

Presenteth place and opportunitie,

Let me intreat your woonted kind consent

5 And freindly furtherance in a suit I hane.

*Mar.* My Lord, you know you need not to intreat,

But may commaund Mariana to her power,

Be't no impeachment to my honest fame.

*Lub.* Free are my thoughts from such base villanie

10 As may in question, Ladie, call your name;

Yet is the matter of such consequence,

Standing vpon my honorable credit,

To be effected with such zeale and secresie

As, should I speake and faile my expectation,

15 It would redound greatly to my preiudice.

*Mar.* My Lord, wherein hath Mariana

Giuen you occasion that you should mistrust,

Or else be iealous of my secresie?

*Lub.* Mariana, do not misconster of me:

20 I not mistrust thee, nor thy secresie;

Nor let my loue misconster my intent,

Nor thinke thereof but well and honorable.

Thus stands the case:

Thou knowest from England hether came with me

SCENE I. 1, 2. Printed as one line in Qq; *Lady* placed in a separate line by Del. — 8. *Be it* Qq, *Be 't* Del. — *honost B.* — 15. *I would A, It would B, 'T would* Simp. conj. If we do not choose to follow Simp., we must pronounce *redound* as a monosyllable. — 16—18. Printed as two lines, the first ending at *occasion*, in Qq; regulated by Del. — *My Lord, wherein hath Mariana given occasion, | That you should, thus, mistrust my secrecy?* | Chet. — 17. *Giuen* as a monosyllable. — '*Dele you*' Simp. — 19. A syllable pause line; *Marid | na — | do not | miscon | ster of me* |. See Hamlet, ed. Elze (Halle 1882), pp. 126 seq. — *misconster me* Simp., *misconceive of me* Del. (cp. V. i. 86). Perhaps *misconster* is due to the error of some transcriber or compositor, whose eye caught the word from l. 21. — 22. Simp.'s proposal *honourably* (cp. l. 128) is unnecessary; cp. Abbott, s. 1. — 23—25. Printed as two lines in Qq, divided at *England* |; set right by Del.

Robert of Windsor, a noble man at Arnes, 25  
 Lustie and valiant, in spring time of his yeares,  
 No maruell then though he proue amorous.

*Mar.* True, my Lord, he came to see faire Blaunch.

*Lub.* No, Mariana, that's not it. His loue to Blaunch 30  
 Was then extinct, when first he saw thy face.  
 'Tis thee he loues; yea, thou art onely shee  
 That's maistres and commaunder of his thoughts.

*Mar.* Well, well, my Lord, I like you; for such drifts  
 Put silly ladies often to their shifts.

Oft haue I heard you say you loued me well, 35  
 Yea, sworne the same, and I beleued you to.  
 Can this be found an action of good faith  
 Thus to dissemble where you found true loue?

*Lub.* Mariana, I not dissemble, on mine honor,  
 Nor failes my faith to thee. But for my friend, 40  
 For princely William, by whom thou shalt possesse  
 The tytle and estate of Maiestie,  
 Fitting thy loue, and vertues of thy minde —  
 For him I speake, for him do I intreat,  
 And, with thy fauour, fully do resigne 45  
 To him the claime and interest of my loue.  
 Sweet Mariana, then, denie mee not:

Loue William, loue my friend, and honour me,  
 Who els is cleane dishonored by thy meanes.

*Mar.* Borne to mishap, my selfe am onely shee 50  
 On whom the Sunne of fortune neuer shynd:  
 But Planets rulde by retrograde aspect

29, 30. As three lines in Qq, ending *it* | *extinct* | *face* |; our arrangement is that of Del. — 29. *that is* Qq, *that's* Del. — *non it* A. — *Blinch* A. — This line is, in our opinion, to be scanned thus: *No Már | ian[a] | thát's | not it* | &c. For the dissyllabic pronunciation *Márian[a]*, compare, below, l. 72. — 31. *thou are* B. — Qy. Read, here and below, l. 50, *th'one-ly shee*? See Abbott, s. 224; the same expression occurs in Henry V., II. 1. 83. — 32. *That is* Qq, *That's* Del. and Simp. — 33, 34. Omitted by Chet. — 36. *you too* Edd. — 39. *I don't dissemble* Del. — 41. *by is* to be slurred; Simp. proposes to print *o'whom*. — 42. *tytle of estate and Maiestie* Qq; we have followed Del. — 43. Simp. erroneously gives *Fitting the love* as the reading of B. — 52. *retrogarde* Qq, *retrograde* Edd. Cp. A Looking-Glass for London and England, *Retrograde conjunctions of the stars* (quoted by Ward, l. c., p. 162).

Foretold mine yll in my natiuitie!

*Lub.* Sweet Ladie, cease, let my intreatie serue  
55 To pacifie the passion of thy grieffe,  
Which, well I know, proceeds of ardent loue.

*Mar.* But Lubeck now regards not Mariana.

*Lub.* Euen as my life, so loue I Mariana.

*Mar.* Why do you post me to another then?

60 *Lub.* He is my friend, and I do loue the man.

*Mar.* Then will Duke William robb me of my loue?

*Lub.* No, as his life Mariana he doth loue.

*Mar.* Speake for your selfe, my Lord, let him alone.

*Lub.* So do I, Madam, for he and I am one.

65 *Mar.* Then louing you I do content you both.

*Lub.* In louing him, you shall content vs both:

Me, for I craue that fauour at your hands,

Him, for he hopes that comfort at your hands.

*Mar.* Leauē of, my Lord, here comes the Ladie Blaunch.

*Enter BLAUNCH to them.*

70 *Lub.* Hard hap to breake vs of our talke so soone!

Sweet Mariana, doe remember me. [*Exit LUBECK.*]

*Mar.* Thy Mariana can't chuse but remember thee.

*Blaunch.* Mariana, well met. You are verie forward in  
your loue.

75 *Mar.* Madam, be it in secret spoken to your selfe, if you  
will but follow the complot I haue inuented, you will not  
think me so forward as your selfe shall proue fortunate.

54. *seace A.* — 64. Cp. As You Like It, I. 3. 99, *Which teacheth thee that thou and I am one.* — 67, 68. Omitted by Chet. — 68. *He, for hopes* Qq, *He for he hopes* Del., *Him, for he hopes* Simp. — 72. Scan: *Thy Mār | ian[a] can't | &c.* See, above, l. 29. Elze (Notes, p. 127) proposes to expunge *Thy.* — *Thy Mariana never can forget thee* Chet. — 73—101. There is little doubt that also this passage was originally written in verse. But it has been handed down in a state so hopelessly corrupt that an attempt to emend it would certainly not be compatible with the rules of criticism. — 73. *verie* om. by Chet. — Elze (Notes, p. 127) proposes to read: *BLAUNCH: Mariana, | Well met. You're very forward in your love. | MAR.: Madam, | Be it in secret spoken to yourself: | If you'll but follow th' complot I've inuented, | &c.* — 75. seqq. In Qq the lines end at *your selfe | inuented | forward | fortunate | how | you | Windsor* . — 75. *in a secret* Del. — *but* om. by Chet. — 76. *the plot* Chet.

*Blaunch.* As how?

*Mar.* Madam, as thus. It is not vnknown to you that Sir Robert of Windsor, a man that you do not little esteeme, hath 80  
long importuned me of loue; but rather than I will be found  
false or vniust to the Marques Lubeck, I will, as did the constant  
ladie Penelope, vndertake to effect some great taske.

*Blaunch.* What of all this?

*Mar.* The next tyme that Sir Robert shall come in his 85  
woonted sort, to solicit me with loue, I will seeme to agree, and  
like of anything that the knight shall demaund, so far foorth as  
it be no impeachment to my chastitie. And, to conclude, poynt  
some place for to meet the man, for my conueyance from the  
Denmarke Court: which determined vpon, he will appoynt some 90  
certaine time for our departure: whereof, you hauing intelligence,  
you may soone set downe a plot to were the English Crowne,  
and then —

*Blaunch.* What then?

*Mar.* If Sir Robert proue a King and you his Queene, 95  
how then?

*Blaunch.* Were I assured of the one, as I am perswaded  
of the other, there were some possibilitie in it. But here  
comes the man.

*Mar.* Madam, begon, and you shall see I will worke 100  
to your desire and my content. [Exit BLAUNCH.

79 seqq. *esteeme* | *loue* | *false* | *Lubeck* | *Penelope* | *taske* | Qq. — 79. *It is well known to you.* Chet. — 80. *not a little* Simp. — 81. *found* om. by Del. — 85—93. *come* | *loue* | *anything* | *foorth* | *chastitie* | *the man* | *court* | *time* | *intelligence* | *crowne* | Qq. Elze arranges this passage as follows (Notes, p. 127): *The next time that Sir Robert shall come here* | *In's wonted sort to solicit me with love* | *I'll seem t'agree and like of anything* | *That th' knight shall demand, so far forth as it be* | *No impeachment to my chastity; t'conclude,* | *I will appoint some place for t'meet the man,* | *For my conveyance from the Denmark court.* — 86. *I'll* Chet. — 88. *to my honour* Chet. — *appoint* Del. — *appoint some meeting place for my conveyance* Chet. — 90. *thc Danish Court* Chet. — *Which fix'd, he will appoint* Chet. — 97—101. The lines end at *perswaded* | *in it* | *the man* | *see* | *content* | in Qq. — 100, 101. *Madam, begone, and you shall see* | *That I will work to both your souls' content.* | Chet.

*Enter W. CONQUEROR.*

*Wm.* Sweet Lady, this is well and happily met,  
 For Fortune hetherto hath been my foe,  
 And though I haue oft sought to speake with you,  
 105 Yet stil I haue beene crost with sinister happs.  
 I cannot, Madam, tell a louing tale,  
 Or court my Maistres with fabulous discourses,  
 That am a souldier sworne to follow armes —  
 But this I bluntly let you vnderstand —  
 110 I honour you with such religious zeale  
 As may become an honorable minde.  
 Nor may I make my loue the siege of Troy,  
 That am a straunger in this Countrie.  
 First, what I am I know you are resolued,  
 115 For that my friend hath let you t'vnderstand,  
 The Marques Lubeck, to whom I am so bound  
 That whilst I liue I count me onely his.

*Mar.* Surely you are beholding to the Marques,  
 For he hath beene an earnest spokesman in your cause.

120 *Wm.* And yealdes my Ladie then, at his request,  
 To grace Duke William with her gracious loue?

*Mar.* My Lord,

I am a prisoner, and hard it were  
 To get me from the Court.

125 *Wm.* An easie matter, to get you from the Court,

101. [*Enter W. Cong.*] not in Qq; added by Del. — 102. *Lady* Qq, *Sweet lady* proposed by El. (Notes, p. 127); cp., above, l. 54. — 102—104. Printed as prose by Del. and Simp. — 103. *For* added by Simp. — 104. Del. erroneously prints *often*. — 105. *sinister* to be pronounced as a dissyllable (*sin'ster*). — 106. 'Compare Henry V th's courtship: Henry V., V. 2. 98 et seq.' Simp. — 107. Are we allowed to consider *Maistres* as a monosyllable here? Or must we pronounce *Maist(e)res*? The latter pronunciation would involve the admittance of a weak-ending alexandrine. Chet. reads *with false vows of love*; Simp. proposes *Or with discourses fabulous court my mistress*, and El. would regulate the line thus (Jahrb., XV, p. 346): *Or court with fabulous discourse my mistress*. — 113. *Countrie*, a trisyllable here; cp. Abbott, s. 477. — The line is omitted in Chet. — 115. *you that to* Qq, corr. by Simp. — *let you understand* Chet. — 118. Cp. As You Like It, IV. 1. 60, *you are faine to be beholding to your wives for*, where Pope reads *beholden*; just so in our passage Chet.: *beholden to that lord*. — 119. *spokes-man for you* Chet. — 122. *My Lord* placed in a separate line by El. (Jahrb., XV, 346).

If case that you will thereto giue consent.

*Mar.* Put case I should, how would you vse me than?

*Wm.* Not otherwise but well and honorably.

I haue at Sea a shipp that doth attend,  
Which shall foorthwith conduct vs into England; 130  
Where, when we are, I straight will marrie thee.  
We may not stay deliberating long,  
Least that suspition, enuious of our weale,  
Set in a foot to hinder our pretence.

*Mar.* But this I thinke were most conuenient, 135  
To maske my face, the better t'scape vnknowne.

*Wm.* A good deuise: till then, Farwell, faire loue.

*Mar.* But this I must intreat your grace,  
You would not seek by lust vnlawfully  
To wrong my chaste determinations. 140

*Wm.* I hold that man most shamelesse in his sinne  
That seekes to wrong an honest ladies name,  
Whom he thinkes worthy of his marriage bed.

*Mar.* In hope your othe is true,  
I leaue your grace till the appoynted tyme. 145

[*Exit* MARIANA.]

*Wm.* O happie William, blessed in thy loue,

Most fortunate in Marianaes loue!

Well, Lubeck, well, this courtesie of thine

I will requite, if God permit me life. [*Exit.*

## SCENE II.

*Enter* VALINGFORD and MOUNTNEY at two sundrie dores,  
looking angerly each on other with Rapiers drawn.

*Mount.* Valingford,  
So hardlie I disgest an iniurie

127. *What if I should* Chet. — 133. Simp. erroneously reads *conscious of our weal*; both of the old copies have *enuious*. — 134. *to hinder our pretence*; cp. Mucedorus, III. 5. 3: *But other business hind'ed my pretence*, and ib., III. 4. 2: *frustrate my pretence*. — 136. *to scape* Qq and Edd. — 146. 'Qy, read, *fortune for loue P*' Simp. — 147. Omitted by Chet. — 149. *if heav'n permit* Chet.

SCENE II. 1—5. Printed as three lines in Qq, ending at *iniurie* | *stands* | *name* |; in the edd. of Del. and Simp. the lines end *proffered me* | *detest* | *name* |. For our arrangement see El., Notes, p. 12 seq.

- Thou 'st profered me,  
 As, were it not that I detest to do  
 5 What stands not with the honor of my name,  
 Thy death should paie the ransom of thy fault.  
*Val.* And, Mountney, had not my reuenging wrath,  
 Incenst with more than ordinarie loue,  
 Beene such for to depriue thee of thy life,  
 10 Thou hadst not liued to braue me as thou doest.  
 Wretch as thou art,  
 Wherein hath Valingford offended thee?  
 That honorable bond which late we did  
 Confirme in presence of the gods,  
 15 When with the Conqueror we arriued here,  
 For my part hath been kept inviolably,  
 Till, now, too much abused by thy villanie,  
 I am inforced to cancell all those bands,  
 By hating him which I so well did loue.  
 20 *Mount.* Subtill thou art, and cunning in thy fraud,  
 That, giuing me occasion of offence,  
 Thou pickst a quarrell to excuse thy shaine.  
 Why, Valingford, was 't not enough for thee,  
 To be a ryvall twixt me and my loue,  
 25 But counsell her, to my no small disgrace,  
 That, when I came to talke with her of loue,  
 She should seeme deafe, as fayning not to heare?  
*Val.* But hath shee, Mountney, vsed thee as thou sayest?  
*Mount.* Thou knowest too well shee hath: wherein  
 30 Thou couldest not do me greater iniurie.  
*Val.* Then I perceiue we are deluded both,  
 For when I offered many gifts of Gold,

3. *Thou hast* Qq. — 4. *as were not* A, *as wer't not* B (adopted by Simp.), *as were it not* Del. — *that* om. by Simp. — 6. *thy ransom* Qq; corr. by Del. — 10, 11. Form one line in Qq; divided by Del. — 11. Omitted by Chet. — 13, 14 Divided at *confirme* | in Qq; set right by Del. — 14. *in presence of the Gods* om. by Chet. — *Conqueror* as a dissyllable here. — 17. *villanie* may be pronounced as a dissyllable; see Abbott, s. 468. — 18. *to cancel* Del. (a misprint). — 23. *was it* Qq, *was't* Del. and Simp. — 29. Ending at *hath* | in Qq; corr. by Del. — 32—34. Printed as two lines in Qq,

And iewels to entreate for loue,  
 Shee hath refused them with a coy disdaine,  
 Alledging that shee could not see the sunne! 35  
 The same conjectured I to be thy drift,  
 That fayning so shee might be ridd of mee.

*Mount.* The like did I by thee. But are not these  
 Naturall impediments?

*Val.* In my coniecture merely counterfeit: 40  
 Therefore let us ioyne hands in frindship once againe,  
 Since that the iarre grew onely by coniecture.

*Mount.* With all my heart: Yet lets trye th' truth thereof.

*Val.* With right good will. We'll straight vnto her father,  
 And there to learne whither it be so or no. [*Exeunt.* 45

### SCENE III.

*Enter WILLIAM and BLAUNCH disguised, with  
 a maske ouer her face.*

*Wm.* Come on, my loue, the comfort of my life.  
 Disguised thus, we may remaine vnknowne,  
 And get we once to Seas, I force not then  
 We quickly shall attaine the English shore.

the first ending at *iewels* |. Arranged by Del. — 33, 34. Contracted into one line by Chet.: *T'entreat for love, she scorn'd them with disdain.* — 34. Simp. expunges *a.* — 38, 39. Printed as one line in Qq; divided by Del. — In Chet. l. 38 ends at *thee* (and so El. conj., Jahrb., XV, 346). — 41. *lets A, let's B, let us Dcl.* — El. proposes to read: *Therefore in friendship let's join hands again* (Jahrb., XV, 346); but, with stricter adherence to the originals, we might restore a regular blank verse thus: *Therefore let's once again join hands in friendship.* — 42. *yars Del.* (a misprint). — 43. *lets Qq, let us Del. and Simp. — the truth Qq, th' truth El. conj. (Jahrb., l. c.).* — 44. *We will Qq, We'll Dcl., we will unto her Chet. (straight om.).* — 45. *whither* is to be pronounced as a monosyllable. — Although the construction is rather a loose one, it seems unnecessary to alter it and to read with Elze either *To learn there* or *And there we'll learn* (see Jahrb., XV, 347). — *And thereto learn Chet.*

SCENE III. 3. *I force not then*; cp. Mucedorus, Induction, l. 68: *I force it not, I scorn what thou canst do*; New Custom (apud Dodsley, Old Plays, ed. Hazlitt, vol. III, p. 39): *I force not, I, so the villain were dead. — to sea, I doubt not then.* Chet.

5 *Blaunch.* But this I vrge you with your former oath:  
 You shall not seeke to violate mine honour  
 Vntill our marriage rights be all performed.

*Wm.* Mariana, here I sweare to thee by heauen,  
 And by the honour that I beare to Armes,  
 10 Neuer to seeke or craue at hands of thee  
 The spoyle of honourable chastitie,  
 Vntill we do attaine the English coast,  
 Where thou shalt be my right espoused Queen.

*Blaunch.* In hope your oath proceedeth from your heart,  
 15 Let's leaue the Court, and betake vs to his power  
 That gouernes all things to his mightie will,  
 And will reward the iust with endlesse ioye,  
 And plague the bad with most extreme annoy.

*Wm.* Lady, as little tarriance as we may,  
 20 Lest some misfortune happen by the way.

[*Exit* BLAUNCH and WILLIAM.]

#### SCENE IV.

*Enter the MILLER, his man TROTTER, and MANUILE.*

*Mil.* I tell you, sir, it is no little greefe to mee, you  
 should so hardly conseit of my daughter, whose honest report,  
 though I saie it, was neuer blotted with any title of de-  
 famation.

5 *Man.* Father Miller, the repaire of those gentlemen to  
 your house hath giuen me great occasion to mislike.

7. *rights* is, of course, the old spelling for *rites* (as Del. prints); cp. Al. Schmidt, Shak.-Lex., s. v. *rite*, p. 982<sup>b</sup>. — 13. *right-espoused* Del. — 15. *betake* is to be pronounced as a monosyllable (*b'take*). — 16. *by his mighty will* Chet. — 20. *Least* B. — *mis-fortune* Qq.

SCENE IV. The same remarks that we have made on Act III, Scene I, ll. 73 seqq., apply to this scene. In all probability it was originally written in blank verse, which, in some passages, may be restored without great difficulty; but, in general, the text of the scene is so utterly corrupt that no critic seems able to amend it except by violent and arbitrary alterations. Here, therefore, as in all similar cases, we have thought it best to follow Del. and Simp., who have printed the whole scene as prose. — 1–4. Printed as four lines in Qq, ending *mee | daughter | it | defamation* |. — 5, 6. As two lines, divided at *house* | in Qq. — 5. *these gentlemen* Chet.

*Mil.* As for those gentlemen, I neuer saw in them any euill intreatie. But should they haue profered it, her chaste minde hath prooffe enough to preuent it.

*Trot.* Those gentlemen are as honest as euer I saw: 10  
For yfaith one of them gaue me six pence to fetch a quart of Seck. — See, maister, here they come.

*Enter VALINGFORD and MOUNTNEY.*

*Mil.* Trotter, call Em. Now they are here together, Ile haue this matter throughly debated. [*Exit TROTTER.*

*Mount.* Father, well met. We are come to confer 15  
with you.

*Man.* Nay, with his daughter rather.

*Val.* Thus it is, father, we are come to craue your frindship in a matter.

*Mil.* Gentlemen, as you are straungers to me, yet by the 20  
way of courtesie you shall demaund any reasonable thing at my hands.

*Man.* What, is the matter so forward they come to craue his good will?

*Val.* It is giuen us to vnderstand that your daughter is 25  
sodenly become both blinde and deafe.

*Mil.* Mary, God forbid! I have sent for her. Indeed, she hath kept her chamber this three daies. It were no little grieffe to me if it should be so.

*Man.* This is Gods iudgement for her trecherie! 30

*Enter TROTTER, leading EM.*

*Mil.* Gentlemen, I feare your words are too true. See where Trotter comes leading of her. — What ayles my Em? Not blinde, I hope?

7—9. Three lines in Qq, ending *them | it | it |*. — 14. *thoroughly* Del. and Simp. — 18. *we come* Simp. — 20—22. Three lines in Qq, ending at *me | demaund | hands |*. — 21. 'Qy, read, *shall command?*' Simp. — 23, 24. Two lines in Qq, divided at *forward*. — 23. *forward?* *They* Del. — *came* A. — 25, 26. Two lines in Qq, the first ending at *daughter*. — 27—29. In Qq the lines end at *indeed | daies | so |*. — 28. *these three days* Chet. — 30. *is heaven's judgement* Chet. — 31—33. As three lines in Qq, ending *true | her | hope |*. — 31. *two true* Qq (followed by Simp.).

*Em.* [*Aside*] Mountney and Valingford both together!  
 35 And Manuile, to whom I haue faithfully vowed my loue! Now,  
*Em.* suddenly helpe thy selfe.

*Mount.* This is no dessembling, Valingford.

*Val.* If it be, it is cunningly contriued of all sides.

*Em.* [*Aside to TROTTER*] Trotter, lend me thy hand; and  
 40 as thou louest me, keep my counsell, and iustifie what so euer  
 I saie and Ile largely requite thee.

*Trot.* Ah, that's as much as to saie you would tell a  
 monstrous, terrible, horrible, outrageous lie, and I shall sooth  
 it — no, berlady!

45 *Em.* My present extremitie wills me, if thou loue me,  
 Trotter.

*Trot.* That same word 'loue' makes me to doe any thing.

*Em.* Trotter, wheres my father?

*Trot.* Why, what a blynd dunce are you, can you not  
 50 see? He standeth right before you.

[*He thrusts EM vpon her father.*]

*Em.* Is this my father? — Good father, giue me leaue  
 to sit where I may not be disturbed, sith God hath visited  
 me both of my sight and hearing.

*Mil.* Tell me, sweet Em, how came this blindnes? Thy  
 55 eyes are louely to looke on, and yet haue they lost the  
 benefit of their sight? What a grieve is this to thy poore  
 father!

34—36. Three lines in Qq, ending *together | loue | selfe* |. — 34. [*Aside*]  
 added by Del. — 38. *if ir be A.* — *on all sides* Chet. — 39—41. Three  
 lines in Qq, ending *hand | counsell | thee* |. El. (Notes, p. 16) arranges the  
 passage in this way: *Trotter, | Lend me thy hand, and as thou lovest me |*  
*Pray keep my counsel, and justify whatever | I say, and largely I'll requite*  
*thee.* |. The same critic (Jahrb., XV, 347) proposes another arrangement:  
*Trotter, | Lend me thy hand, and as thou lovest me, keep | My counsel and*  
*justify whate'er I say, | And largely I'll requite thee.* |. — 39. [*Aside to*  
*TROTTER*] added by the pres. Edd. — 42. *that is B.* — 43. *monstrous* om.  
 by Del. — 46. *Trotter A.* — 50. The stage-direction in Qq after l. 48. —  
 51—53. As four lines in Qq, ending *father? | sit | disturbed | hearing* |. —  
 52. *since Del.* — *Since fate has robb'd me of my sight and hearing.* Chet. —  
 55. *lovely yet to look upon,* Chet. — *they've lost* El. conj. (Jahrb., XV, 347). —  
 54—57. El., who divides the lines at *blindnes | on | sight* |, proposes to add  
*Oh,* before *what*.

*Em.* Good father, let me not stand as an open gazing stock to euerie one, but in a place alone, as fits a creature so miserable. 60

*Mil.* Trotter, lead her in, the vtter ouerthrow of poore Goddardes ioy and onely solace.

[*Exit the MILLER, TROTTER and EM.*

*Man.* Both blinde and deafe! Then is she no wife for me; and glad am I so good occasion is hapned: Now will I away to Chester, and leaue these gentlemen to their blinde fortune. 65

[*Exit MANUILE.*

*Mount.* Since fortune hath thus spitefully crost our hope, let vs leaue this quest and hearken after our King, who is at this day landed at Lirpoolle.

*Val.* Goe, my Lord, Ile follow you. 70

[*Exit MOUNTNEY.*

Well, now Mountney is gone, Ile staie behind to solicit my loue; for I imagine that I shall find this but a fained inuention, thereby to haue vs leaue off our suits.

[*Exit VALINGFORD.*

58—60. Printed as two lines in Qq, divided at *euerie one* |. El. (Notes, p. 17) arranges the passage thus: *father* | *gazing-stock* (as om.) | *alone* | *miserable* (inserting *that's* between *creature* and *so*) |. — 58. *let we not* Del. (a misprint). — 59. *a lone* A. — 61, 62. El. (Jahrb., XV, 347) would arrange the passage as follows: *Trotter, lead her in!* | *This is the utter overthrow of poor* | *Old Goddard's joy and only solace.* |. — 63—66. The lines end at *me* | *hapned* | *Manchester* | *fortune.* | in Qq. — *Both blind and deaf* — *she is no wife for me;* | *And glad am I so good occasion happen'd:* | *Now will I bend my course to Manchester,* | *And leave these gentlemen to their blind fortune.* | Chet. — For El.'s metrical reconstruction see Jahrb., XV, 348. — 63. *Then she is* Del. — 64. *glad I am* Del. — Simp. is mistaken in giving *so good an occasion* as the reading of B. — 65. *Manchester* Qq, *Chester* Del.; compare, below, IV. 3. 5, 62. — 67. *spiteful* Chet. — 68. *Let's* Chet. and El. conj. — *guest* Qq, *quest* or *gear* Simp. conj. — 69. *Liverpool* Del. — *Who is at Liv'rpool landed at this day.* El. conj. (Jahrb., XV, 348). — 70. [*Exit M.*] in Qq after l. 69. — In Chet. the end of the scene runs thus: *My lord, I'll follow you* — | *Now, that Mountney's gone,* | *I'll stay behind to solicit my fair love.* | *I love her for her virtues, lasting charms;* | *A never-fading flow'r will fill my arms.* |. — 71—73. Printed as three lines in Qq, ending *gone* | *loue* | *inuention* |. — 73. [*Exit VAL.*] added by Del.

## SCENE V.

*Enter MARQUES LUBECK and the KING OF DENMARK,  
angrily with some attendants.*

- Zweno.* Well, Lubeck, well, it is not possible  
But you must be concenting to this act.  
Is this the man so highly you extold?  
And play a part so hatefull with his friend?  
5 Since first he came with thee into the court,  
What entertainment and what countenance  
He hath receiued, none better knowes than thou.  
In recompence whereof, he quites me well  
To steale away faire Mariana my prisoner,  
10 Whose raunsome being lately greed vpon,  
I am deluded of by this escape.  
Besides, I know not how to answer it,  
When shee shall be demaunded home to Swethia.  
*Lub.* My gracious Lord, coniecture not, I pray,  
15 Worser of Lubeck than he doth deserue:  
Your highnes knowes Mariana was my loue,  
Sole paragon and mistres of my thoughts.  
Is't likely I should know of her departure,  
Wherein there's no man iniured more than I?  
20 *Zweno.* That carries reason, Marques, I confesse.  
Call forth my daughter. Yet I am perswaded  
That shee, poore soule, suspected not her going;  
For as I heare, shee likewise loued the man,  
Which he, to blame, did not at all regard.

*Enter ROSILIO and MARIANA.*

- 25 *Ros.* My Lord, here is the Princessse Mariana;  
It is your daughter is conueyed away.

SCENE V. 2. *in this* Del. — 5. *in to the* Simp. — 8. *quits* Simp. — 9. *fair Marian, my captive.* Chet. — 10. *lately fixed on* Chet. — 15. *More ill of* Chet. — 18. *Is it* Qq, *Is't* Del. — 19. *there is* Qq, *there's* Del. and Simp. — *Wherein no man is injured* Chet. — 24. The stage-direction added by Del. — 25. *Rocilia B, Rosilio* Chet. — 26. For the omission of the relative see Abbott, s. 244.

*Zweno.* What, my daughter gone!

Now, Marques, your villainie breakes foorth.

This match is of your making, gentle sir,

And you shall dearly know the price thereof. 30

*Lub.* Knew I thereof, or that there was intent

In Robert thus to steale your highnes daughter,

Let heauens in iustice presently confound me!

*Zweno.* Not all the protestations thou canst vse

Shall saue thy life. Away with him to prison! 35

And, minion, otherwise it cannot be

But you 're an agent in this trecherie.

I will reuenge it throughly on you both.

Away with her to prison!

Heres stufte indeed! My daughter stolen away! 40

It booteth not thus to disturbe my selfe,

But presently to send to English William,

To send me that proud knight of Windsor hither,

Here in my Court to suffer for his shame,

Or at my pleasure to be punished there, 45

Withall that Blaunch be sent me home againe,

Or I shall fetch her vnto Windsors cost,

Yea, and Williams too, if he denie her mee.

[*Exeunt all.*]

#### SCENE VI.

*Enter WILLIAM, taken with souldiers.*

*Wm.* Could any crosse, could any plague be worse?

Could heauen or hell, did both conspire in one

T' afflict my soule, inuent a greater scourge

Than presently I am tormented with?

Ah, Mariana, cause of my lament! 5

Ioy of my hart, and comfort of my life,

For thee I breath my sorrowes in the ayre

And tyre myself, for silently I sigh,

28. *your* may be pronounced as a dissyllable; *Now, Marques, [now]* *your* Simp. — 33. *Let heaven* Chet. — 37. *you are* Qq, *you're* Del. — 38. *thoroughly* Chet. — 39, 40. Divided at *indeed!* | in Qq; set right by Del. — 48. [*Exit ZWENO.*] Qq; corr. by Del.

SCENE VI. 3. *To afflict* Qq, *T'afflict* Chet. — 7, 8. *For whether I breathe . . . . . or silently I sigh* Simp. conj.

My sorrowes afflicts my soule with equall passion.

10 *Soul.* Go to, sirrah, put vp, 'tis to small purpose.

*Wm.* Hence, villaines, hence!

Dare you to lay your hands vpon your Soueraigne?

*Soul.* Well, sir, we'll deale for that.

But here comes one will remedie all this.

*Enter DEMARCH.*

15 My Lord, watching this night in the campe

We tooke this man, and know not what he is;

And in his companie was a gallant dame,

A woman faire in outward shewe she seemd,

But that her face was masked, we could not see

20 The grace and fauour of her countenance.

*Dem.* Tell me, good fellow, of whence and what thou art.

*Soul.* Why do you not answer my Lord?

He takes scorne to answer!

*Dem.* And takest thou scorn to answer my demaund?

25 Thy proud behauiour very well deserues

This misdemeanour at the worst be construed.

Why doest thou neither know, nor hast thou heard,

That in the absence of the Saxon Duke

Demarch is his especiall Substitute,

30 To punish those that shall offend the lawes?

*Wm.* In knowing this, I know thou art a traytor;

A rebell, and mutenous conspirator.

Why, Demarch, knowest thou who I am?

9. *My griefs afflict* Chet. — *afflict* Del. — *me soule* A. — 10. *sirha* A; cp. Marlowe's *Faustus* etc., ed. Ward, Note to II. 5 (p. 142). — *it is* Qq and Edd. — 11, 12. Divided at *hands* in Qq. In the division of the lines we have followed El.'s proposal (Notes, p. 133). — 12. *Dare you lay* Qq, *How dare you lay* Del., *Dare you [to] lay* Simp. — 13. *we will* Qq; *we* om. by Del. — 15. In Qq *Souldier* is prefixed also to this line. — For the dissyllabic pronunciation of *Lord* see Marlowe's *Edward II.*, ed. Fleay, II. 5. 107 (and Notes, p. 117). — El., comparing l. 31, proposes to read *My Lord, in watching* etc. (Notes, p. 17 seq.). — 17. Pronounce *comp'ny*. — 21. *what art thou?* Simp. — 28. *The Saxon Duke*. 'He was a Norman. William is variously termed etc.' Simp., Note ad loc. — 32. *rebel* is to be pronounced as a monosyllable. It is, therefore, unnecessary to read with Simp. *and a mutinous*.

*Dem.* Pardon, my dread Lord, th' error of my sence,  
And misdemeanour to your princely excellencie! 35

*Wm.* Why, Demarch,  
What is the cause my subiects are in armes?

*Dem.* Free are my thoughts, my dread and gracious Lord,  
From treason to your state and common weale;  
Only reuengement of a priuate grudge, 40  
By Lord Dirot lately profered me,  
That stands not with the honor of my name,  
Is cause I haue assembled for my guard  
Some men in armes, that may withstand his force  
Whose settled malice aymeth at my life. 45

*Wm.* Where's Lord Dirot?

*Dem.* In armes, my gracious Lord,  
Not past two miles from hence, as credibly  
I'm ascertained.

*Wm.* Well, come, let us go.  
I feare I shall find traytors of you both.

[*Exeunt all.*]

## A C T IV.

### SCENE I.

*Enter the CITIZEN OF CHESTER, and his daughter  
ELNER, and MANUILE.*

*Cit.* Indeed, sir, it would do verie well if you could  
intreat your father to come hither; but, if you thinke it be

34. *the error* Qq. — 35. El. (Notes, p. 135) substitutes *excellence* for *excellencie*. — 36, 37. Printed as one line in Qq; divided by El. — 39. *and th' common weal* El. conj. — 46—49. Six lines in Qq, ending *Dirot | Lord | hence | ascertained | go | both |*. El. (Notes, p. 18) arranges the passage thus: WM. CONQ. *Where's Lord Dirot?* | DEM. *In arms, my gracious lord, not past two miles | From hence, as credibly I'm ascertain'd.* | The arrangement as given above is that of the present editors. — 46. *Where is* Qq. — 48. *I am* Qq. — *let's* Del. — 49. [*Exit*] Qq. — Chet. adds the following rhyme-couplet: *Traitors to kings fly in the face of heav'n, | Since by almighty Iove the sceptre's given.*

SCENE I. Also this scene is printed as verse in the old copies. — Stage-direction: *Manchester* Qq, *Chester* Del., *a Citizen of Chester* Chet. — *Elinor* Chet. (throughout), *Elinor* Del. — 1. *would be very* Del. — 2. *it to be* Del.

too farr, I care not much to take horse and ride to Manchester. I am sure my daughter is content with either. How  
 5 sayest thou, Elner, art thou not?

*El.* As you shall thinke best I must be contented.

*Man.* Well, Elner, farewell. Only thus much, I pray: make all things in a readines, either to serue here, or to carry thither with vs.

10 *Cil.* As for that, sir, take you no care; and so I betake you to your iournie. *[Exit MANUILE.]*

*Enter VALINGFORD.*

But soft, what gentleman is this?

*Val.* God speed, sir. Might a man craue a word or two with you?

15 *Cil.* God forbid els, sir; I pray you speake your pleasure.

*Val.* The gentleman that parted from you, was he not of Manchester, his father luying there of good account?

*Cil.* Yes, mary is he, sir. Why doe you aske? Belike you haue had some acquaintance with him?

20 *Val.* I haue been acquainted, in times past, but, through his double dealing, I am growen werie of his companie. For, be it spoken to you, he hath been acquainted with a poore millers daughter, and diuers tymes hath promist her marriage. But what with his delayes and flouts he hath brought her into  
 25 such a taking that I feare me it will cost her her life.

*Cil.* To be playne with you, sir, his father and I haue been of old acquaintance, and a motion was made betweene my daughter and his sonne, which is now throughly agreed vpon, saue onely the place appoynted for the mariage, whether  
 30 it shall be kept here or at Manchester; and for no other occasion he is now ridden.

*El.* What hath he done to you, that you should speake so ill of the man?

*Val.* Oh, gentlewoman, I crie you mercie: he is your  
 35 husband that shalbe.

4. *I'm sure* Chet. — 10. *and so betake* Chet. — 11. *[Exit M.]* added by Del. — 27. *betewene* A. — 28. *now is* Simp. — *thoroughly* Chet.

*El.* If I knew this to be true, he should not be my husband were he neuer so good. And therefore, good father, I would desire you to take the paines to beare this gentleman companie to Manchester, to know whether this be true or no.

*Cil.* Now trust mee, gentleman, hee deales with mee very hardly, knowing how well I ment to him; but I care not much to ride to Manchester, to know whether his fathers will be he should deale with me so badly. Will it please you, sir, to go in? We will presently take horse and away.

*Val.* If it please you to go in, Ile follow you presently.

[*Exit ELNER and her father.*

Now shall I be reuenged on Manuile, and by this meanes get Em to my wife; and therefore I will strayght to her fathers, and informe them both of all that is hapned.

[*Exit.*

## SCENE II.

*Enter WILLIAM, the AMBASSADOR OF DENAMARKE,  
DEMARCH, and other attendants.*

*Wm.* What newes with the Denmarke Embassador?

*Emb.* Mary, thus:

The King of Denmarke and my Soueraigne  
Doth send to know of thee what is the cause,  
That iniuriously, against the law of armes, 5  
Thou 'st stolen away his onely daughter Blanch,

44. *we'll presently* Chet. — 45. *Exeunt ELINER . . .* Chet. — 46—48. *Now shall I be reuenged on faithless Manuile, | And, by this means, fair Em will be reuenged.* | Chet. — 47. *to be my Simp.* — *to her father* Del. — 48. *has happened.* Simp. This alteration is quite uncalled for, as in the English of Shakespeare's time the intransitive verbs were more commonly used with *is* than with *has*. Cp. Abbott, s. 295.

SCENE II. 2, 3. Forming one line in Qq and Edd.; separated by El. — 4. *of the* Qq. — 5, 6. Elze, who, very likely, is right in thinking the reiteration of *onely* in ll. 6 and 7 to be what the German critics call a 'dittography', alters (Notes, p. 19): *That thou hast stol'n, against the law of arms | Injuriously away his daughter Blanch, |*. But, in our opinion, it would be better, not to separate *away* from its participle *stol'n*, and to read: *That thou hast stol'n away, injuriously, | Against the law of armes, his daughter Blanch |*. More conservative critics may perhaps prefer another proposal made by El. (p. 20): *That, 'gainst the law of arms, injuriously | Thou'st stol'n away his only daughter Blanch.* — 6. *Thou hast* Qq.

The onely stay and comfort of his life?

Therefore by me

He willeth thee to send his daughter Blaunch,

10 Or else foorthwith he'll leuy such an host,

As soone shall fetch her in despite of thee.

*Wm.* Embassador, this answer I retorne thy king.

He willeth me to send his daughter Blaunch,

Saying, I conuaid her from the Danish court,

15 That neuer yet did once as thinke thereof.

As for his menacing and daunting threats,

I nill regard him nor his Danish power;

For if he come to fetch her foorth my Realme

I will prouide him such a banquet here,

20 That he shall haue small cause to giue me thanks.

*Emb.* Is this your answer, then?

*Wm.* It is; and so begone.

*Emb.* I goe; but to your cost. [Exit AMBASSADOR.]

*Wm.* Demarch,

25 Our subiects, earst leuied in ciuill broyles,

Muster foorthwith, for to defend the Realme.

In hope whereof, that we shall finde you true,

We freely pardon this thy late offence.

*Dem.* Most humble thanks I render to your grace.

[Exeunt.]

### SCENE III.

*Enter the MILLER and VALINGFORD.*

*Mil.* Alas, gentleman, why should you trouble your selfe so much, considering the imperfections of my daughter, which

8, 9. One line in Qq. — 9. El. thinks the same compositor's error as in ll. 6, 7 to have occurred here, *his daughter Blanch* having come down from l. 6, or up from l. 13; he, therefore, proposes to read: *Therefore . . . to send her.* Chet. alters: *Therefore, by me, he wills thee send her back.* In placing *Therefore by me* in a separate line we have followed Del. and Simp. — 10. *he will* Qq and Simp., *he'll* Del. — 14. *Saying*, a monosyllable here. — 15. *yet once did* Simp. — 17. Simp. reads, by mistake, *I will regard.* For the archaic form *nill* = *ne will*, cp. Tam., II. i. 273, and Haml., V. i. 19. — 18. *comes* Del. — 24, 25. As one line in Qq; divided by Del. — 26. *Mustred* Qq; corr. by Del. and Simp.

SCENE III. This scene is again printed as verse in the old copies. — *Enter the Millier. A.*

is able to with-draw the loue of any man from her, as  
 already it hath done in her first choyce. Maister Manuile  
 hath forsaken her, and at Chester shall be married to a mans  
 daughter of no little wealth. But if my daughter knew so  
 much, it would goe verie neere her heart, I feare me. 5

*Val.* Father Miller, such is the entyre affection to your  
 daughter, as no misfortune whatsoever can alter. My fellow  
 Mountney, thou seest, gaue quickly ouer; but I, by reason of  
 my good meaning, am not so soone to be changed, although  
 I am borne off with scornes and deniall. 10

*Enter EM to them.*

*Mil.* Trust me, sir, I know not what to saie. My daughter  
 is not to be compelled by me; but here she comes her selfe:  
 speake to her and spare not, for I neuer was troubled with  
 loue matters so much before. 15

*Em.* [*Aside*] Good Lord! shall I neuer be rid of this  
 importunate man? Now must I dissemble blyndnes againe.  
 Once more for thy sake, Mannile, thus am I inforced, because  
 I shall complete my full resolved mynde to thee. Father, 20  
 where are you?

*Mil.* Here, sweet Em. Answer this gentleman, that would  
 so fayne enioy thy loue.

*Em.* Where are you, sir? will you neuer leaue this idle  
 and vaine pursuit of loue? Is not England stor'd enough  
 to content you, but you must still trouble the poore con-  
 temptible mayd of Manchester? 25

*Val.* None can content me but the fayre maide of Man-  
 chester.

*Em.* I perceiue loue is vainly described, that, being  
 blynd himselfe, would haue you likewise troubled with a blinde  
 wife, hauing the benefit of your eyes. But neither follow him  
 so much in follic, but loue one in whom you may better  
 delight. 30

8. 'Oy, my entire' Simp. — *Father, such is th' entire* Chet. — 9—12.  
*My fellow . . . deniall.* Omitted by Chet. — 10. *quickly* A. — 12. *denials*  
 Del. — 13. *daughter's* Chet. — 17. [*Aside*] added by Del. — 19. *I am*  
 Del. — *insorced* A. — 25. *enought* A. — 26. *still* om. by Del.

35 *Val.* Father Miller, thy daughter shall haue honor by  
graunting mee her loue. I am a Gentleman of King Williams  
Court, and no meane man in King Williams fauour.

*Em.* If you be a Lord, syr, as you say, you offer both  
your selfe and mee great wrong; yours, as apparant, in limit-  
40 ing your loue so vnorderly, for which you rashly endure re-  
prochement; mine, as open and euident, when, being shut  
from the vanities of this world, you would haue me as an  
open gazing stock to all the world; for lust, not loue, leades  
you into this error. But from the one I will keepe me as well  
45 as I can; and yeeld the other to none but to my father, as  
I am bound by dutie.

*Val.* Why, faire Em, Manuile hath forsaken thee, and  
must at Chester be married: which if I speake otherwise than  
true, let thy father speake what credibly he hath heard.

50 *Em.* But can it be Manuile will deale so vnkindly to  
reward my iustice with such monströus vngentlenes? Haue I  
dissembled for thy sake, and doest thou now thus requite it?  
In deed these many daies I haue not seen him, which hath  
made me marueile at his long absence. But, father, are you  
55 assured of the words he spake were concerning Manuile?

*Mil.* In sooth, daughter, now it is foorth I must needs  
confirme it: Maister Manuile hath forsaken thee, and at Chester  
must be married to a man's daughter of no little wealth. His  
owne father procures it, and therefore I dare credit it; and  
60 doe thou beleeeue it, for trust me, daughter, it is so.

*Em.* Then, good father, pardon the iniurie that I haue  
don to you, onely causing your grieffe, by ouer-fond affecting  
a man so trothlesse. And you likewise, sir, I pray hold me  
excused, as I hope this cause will allow sufficiently for mee:  
65 My loue to Manuile, thinking he would requite it, hath made

38. *man in fauour with my prince.* Chet. — 39. *your's* Chet. —  
41. *which, being* Del. — 41, 42. *shut out from Simp.* — 42. *of the world*  
Del. — 42, 43. *haue me a gazing-stock* Chet. — 44, 45. *I'll keep me as I*  
*can* Chet. — 49. *credibly I haue heard* Del. — 54, 55. *are you assured*  
*of the words he speak were true concerning Manuile?* Chet.; *are you assured*  
*if the words he spake were true, concerning Manuile?* Del. — 56. *Indeed,*  
*daughter, now it is such, I must* Del. — 63. *I pray you* Del.

me double with my father and you, and many more besides, which I will no longer hyde from you: That inticing speeches should not beguile mee, I haue made my selfe deafe to any but to him; and lest any mans person should please mee more than his, I haue dissembled the want of my sight: Both 70 which shaddowes of my irreuocable affections I haue not spar'd to confirme before him, my father, and all other amorous solicitors — wherewith not made acquainted, I perceiue my true intent hath wrought mine owne sorrow, and seeking by loue to be regarded, am cut of with contempt, 75 and dispised.

*Mil.* Tell me, sweet Em, hast thou but fained all this while for his loue, that hath so discourteously forsaken thee?

*Em.* Credit me, father, I haue told you the troth; where-with I desire you and Lord Valingford not to be displeased. 80 For ought else I shall saie, let my present grieve hold me excused. But, may I liue to see that vngratfull man iustly rewarded for his trecherie, poore Em would think her selfe not a little happie. Favour my departing at this instant; for my troubled thought desires to meditate alone in silence. 85

[*Exit* EM.

*Val.* Will not Em shew one cheerefull looke on Valingford?

*Mil.* Alas, sir, blame her not; you see shee hath good cause, being so handled by this gentleman: And so Ile leane you, and go comfort my poore wench as well as I may.

[*Exit* the MILLER.

*Val.* Farewell, good father.

[*Exit* VALINGFORD. 90

77. *but* om. by Del. — 77, 78. *all this only for his* Chet. — 79. *told you truth* Chet. — 80. *desire yon* A. — 85. *in silence* om. by Chet. — 88. *being so handled by this gentleman* om. by Chet. — 89. *as well as I may* om. by Chet. — 90 Chet. adds the following rhyme couplet: *O love! deceiuing mirror, bane to joy, | Who lights a flame, whose lustre will destroy |*

## A C T V.

## SCENE I.

*Enter ZWENO, King of Denmarke, with ROSILIO  
and other attendants.*

*Zweno.* Rosilio, is this the place whereas  
The Duke William should meet mee?

*Ros.* It is, and like your grace.

*Zweno.* Goe, capitaine! Away, regard the charge I gaue:  
5 See all our men be martialled for the fight;  
Dispose the wards, as lately was deuised;  
And let the prisoners, vnder seuerall guards,  
Be kept apart, vntill you heare from us.  
Let this suffice, you know my resolution.  
10 If William, Duke of Saxonie, be the man,  
That by his answer sent us, he would send  
Not words, but wounds; not parleis, but alarms,  
Must be descider of this controuersie.  
Rosilio, stay with mee; the rest begone. *[Exeunt.]*

*Enter WILLIAM, and DEMARCH with other attendants.*

15 *Wm.* All but Demarch go shroud you out of sight;  
For Ile goe parley with the Prince my selfe.

*Dem.* Should Zweno, by this parley, call you foorth,  
Vpon intent iniuriously to deale,  
This offereth too much oportunitie.

20 *Wm.* No, no, Demarch,  
That were a breach against the law of Armes.  
Therefore be gone, and leaue vs here alone. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE I. 1, 2. Divided in Qq at *William* |; corr. by Del. — 3. *an't* Del. — 10. *Duke of Saxon Qq, Duke of Normandy Chet. Saxony*, as we have given in our text, is written in the margin of the copy, which was used by Malone (the undated Q, Bodl. Libr.). — 11. *he would seem* Simp. conj. — 13. *deciders* Del.; cp., however, *As You Like It*, III. 4. 33 seqq.: *the oath of a lover is no stronger than the word of a tapster; they are both the confirmer of false reckonings*. — 15. Here begins another scene in Del.'s edition. But *Zweno* and *Ros.* remain on the stage, and *Wm.* and *Dem.* enter to them. — *shroud yon* Del. (a misprint). — 16. *For I will go parley* Qq, *For I will parley* Del., *For I'll go parley* Simp. — 20—22. As three lines in Qq, ending *breach | begone | alone* |; corr. by Del.

I see that Zweno's maister of his word,  
 Zweno, William of Saxonie greeteth thee,  
 Either well or yll, according to thy intent. 25  
 If well thou wish to him and Saxonie,  
 He bids thee frindly welcome as he can;  
 If yll thou wish to him and Saxonie,  
 He must withstand thy mallice as he may.

*Zweno.* William, 30

For other name and title giue I none  
 To him, who, were he worthie of those honours  
 That Fortune and his predecessors left,  
 I ought, by right and humaine courtesie,  
 To grace his style the duke of Saxonie; 35  
 But, for I finde a base, degenerate mynde,  
 I frame my speech according to the man,  
 And not the state that he vnworthie holds.

*Wm.* Herein, Zweno, doest thou abase thy state,  
 To breake the peace which by our auncesters 40  
 Hath heretofore been honourably kept.

*Zweno.* And should that peace for euer haue been kept,  
 Had not thy selfe been author of the breach:  
 Nor stands it with the honor of my state,  
 Or nature of a father to his childe, 45  
 That I should so be robbed of my daughter,  
 And not, vnto the vtmost of my power,  
 Reuenge so intollerable an iniurie.

*Wm.* Is this the colour of your quarrell, Zweno?  
 I well perceiue the wisest men may erre. 50  
 And thinke you I conueied away your daughter Blaunch?

23. In Del.'s edition *Zweno* and *Ros.* reenter here. — *Zweno* is Qq. —  
 24. *William of England* Chet. — 26. *to him, and England's crown.* Chet.  
 — 28. *to him, and this my realm.* Chet. — *Saxanie* A. — 30, 31. One line  
 in Qq and Edd. — 34. *common courtesy* El. conj. — 35. *To grace his style*  
*with King of England.* Chet. — *To style his grace* Simp. — 39. *abuse thy*  
*Del.* — 42. El. proposes to read: *And that peace should for ever have been*  
*kept.* — 44. *of thy state* Del. — 50. *man* Del. — 51. El. supposes *Blaunch*  
 to have been inserted here by faulty anticipation from l. 56. In the same  
 critic's opinion the metre of this line might also be regulated by omitting  
 either *And* or *away* (see Notes, p. 135 seq.).

*Zweno.* Art thou so impudent to deny thou didst,  
When that the prooffe thereof is manifest?

*Wm.* What prooffe is there?

55 *Zweno.* Thine owne confession is sufficient prooffe.

*Wm.* Did I confesse I stole your daughter Blaunch?

*Zweno.* Thou didst confesse thou hadst a Ladie hence.

*Wm.* I haue, and do.

*Zweno.* Why, that was Blaunch, my daughter.

*Wm.* Nay, that was Mariana,

60 Who wrongfully thou detainest prisoner.

*Zweno.* Shamelesse persisting in thy ill!

Thou doest mayntaine a manifest vntroth,

As shee shall iustifie vnto thy teeth.

Rosilio, fetch her and the Marques hether.

[*Exit ROSILIO for MARIANA.*]

65 *Wm.* It cannot be I should be so deceiued.

*Dem.* I heard this night among the souldiers

That in their watch they tooke a pensiuie ladie,

Who, at th' appoyntment of the Lord Dirot,

Is yet in keeping. What shee is I know not:

70 Onely thus much I ouer-heard by chance.

*Wm.* And what of this?

*Dem.* It may be Blaunch, the King of Denmarkes daughter.

*Wm.* It may be so; but on my lyfe it is not;

Yet, Demarch, goe, and fetch her strayght. [*Exit DEMARCH.*]

*Enter ROSILIO with the MARQUES.*

75 *Ros.* Pleaseth your highnes, here is the Marques and Mariana.

*Zweno.* See here, Duke William, your competitors,

That were consenting to my daughters scape:

Let them resolue you of the truth herein.

And here I vow and solemnly protest,

58. Printed as two lines in Qq and Del., as one line by Simp. — 60. *Whom Del. — detainedst Chet. and Del. — 66. I heare B and Edd. — 68. the appoyntment Qq, th' appointment Chet. — 68, 69. Divided at keeping in Qq and Chet.; regulated by Del. — 70. ouer-hard Qq; corr. by Del. — 74. El. proposes to transpose Demarch and go. — Stage-direction added by El. — 78. resolut you of the trueth hereing A.*

That in thy presence they shall lose their heds,  
Vnlesse I here whereas my daughter is! 80

*Wm.* Oh, Marques Lubeck, how it griueth me,  
That for my sake thou shouldest indure these bondes!  
Be iudge, my soule, that feeles the martirdome!

*Lub.* Duke William, you know it's for your cause 85  
It pleaseth thus the King to misconceiue of me,  
And for his pleasure doth me iniurie.

*Enter DEMARCH with the Ladie BLAUNCH.*

*Dem.* May it please your highnesse,  
Here is the Ladie whom you sent me for.

*Wm.* Away, Demarch! what tellest thou me of Ladies? 90  
I so detest the dealing of their sex,  
As that I count a louers state to be  
The base and vildest slauerie in the world!

*Dem.* What humors are these? Heres a straunge alteration!

*Zweno.* See, Duke William, is this Blaunch or no? 95  
You know her if you see her, I am sure.

*Wm.* Zweno,  
I was deceiued, yea vtterly deceiued;  
Yet this is shee: this same is Ladie Blaunch.  
And for mine error, here I am content 100  
To do whatsoever Zweno shall set downe.  
Ah, cruell Mariana, thus to vse  
The man which loued and honoured thee with's heart!

85. *it is* Qq and Del., *it's* Simp. — 86. *It pleaseth th' King to misconceiue of me* El. conj. — 89. *whom* not in Qq; inserted on El.'s authority (Notes, p. 136). — 92, 93. Divided at *the base* in Qq. — 93. *vilest* Chet. — *i' th' world* Simp. — 94. As two lines in Chet., the first ending at *these?* |. — 95. *See* is to be considered as a monosyllabic foot. — 96. The words of ZWENO: *You know her, if you see her* bring to mind the title of Sam. Rowley's chronicle-history 'When you see me, you know me' Compare Mucedorus, I. 4. 62 (in Warnke and Proescholdt's ed. I. 4. 30; p. 31) where the words of *Mouse*: *Why, then you know nobody, an you know not me* seem to refer to the title of Tho. Heywood's play 'If you know not me, you know nobody'. — 97, 98. Forming one line in Qq and Edd. — 99. El. proposes *Yes* for *Yet*. — 101. *whatever* Simp.; *whatsoever* to be pronounced as a trisyllable. — 103. *with his* Qq and Del., *with's* Simp. — *thee so much* Chet.

*Mar.* When first I came into your highnes court,  
 105 And William oft importuning me of loue,  
 I did deuse, to ease the grieve your daughter did sustain,  
 Shee'ld meete Sir William masked, as I it were.  
 This put in prooffe did take so good effect,  
 As yet it seemes his grace is not resolved,  
 110 But it was I which he conueied away.

*Wm.* May this be true? It cannot be but true.  
 Was't Ladie Blaunch which I conueied away?  
 Vnconstant Mariana, thus to deale  
 With him which meant to thee nought but faith!  
 115 *Blaunch.* Pardon, deere father, my follyes that are past,  
 Wherein I haue neglected thus my dutie,  
 Which I in reuerence ought to shew your grace;  
 For, led by loue, I thus haue gone astray,  
 And now repent the errors I was in.

120 *Zweno.* Stand vp, deare daughter. Though thy fault deserues  
 For to be punisht in th' extremest sort,  
 Yet loue, that couers multitude of sinns,  
 Makes loue in parents winke at childrens faults.  
 Sufficeth, Blaunch, thy father loues thee so,  
 125 Thy follies past he knowes, but will not know.

104. El. proposes *unto your*; cp. I. 1. 78. — 105. *often importing* Qq, *oft' importing* Simp., *oft importuning* El. conj.; cp. III. 1. 81. — 107. *Shee should* Qq, *She 'ld* El. conj. — *meet, Sir, William* Chet. — 111. Simp. proposes to read *It cannot but be true*. — 112. *Was it* Qq, *Was't* Del. and Simp. — 113, 114. Divided at *Mariana* | in Qq; corr. by Del. — 114. *nought* is to be pronounced as a dissyllable; cp. *Which else | would frée | have wró | ught. All | is well* |, Macb. II. 1. 19, quoted by Abbott, s. 484, p. 381 (El., Jahrb., XV, 349). — 115. Almost the same line (*Pardon, dear father, the follies that are past*) occurs in *The London Prodigal* (Doubtful Plays of Wm. Shakespeare, ed. Moltke; Leipzig, Tauchnitz) V. 1. (p. 276). — *are pas* Del. (a misprint). — 116. *thus* not in Qq, added by Del. — *this my duty* Chet. — *me dutie* A. — 118. *For led by loue* Qq and Simp.; the punctuation added by the pres. Edd. — *Forled by love* Del.; the verb *forlead*, however, occurs so seldom in the Elizabethan literature, that we have not ventured to admit the reading of Del. into the text. See Nares, Gloss., and Halliwell, Dict. of Arch. and Prov. Words, s. v. — 121. *the* Qq. — 122. *multitudes* Chet. — 123. *Makes loving parents* Chet. and Del. — 124. *Suffice it* Simp. conj.; but *sufficeth* without it often occurs in Shak.

And here, Duke William, take my daughter to thy wife,  
For well I am assured shee loues thee well.

*Wm.* A proper coniunction!

As who should say, lately come out o' th' fyer,  
I would go thrust my selfe into the flame. 130  
Let Maistres nice go saint it where shee list,  
And coyly quaint it with dissembling face;  
I hold in scorne the fooleries that they vse:  
I being free, will ne'er subiect my selfe  
To any such as shee is underneath the sunne. 135

*Zuveno.* Refusest thou to take my daughter to thy wife?

I tell thee, Duke, this rash deniall may bring  
More mischief on thee then thou canst auoyd.

*Wm.* Conseit hath wrought such generall dislike,  
Through the false dealing of Mariana, 140  
That vtterly I doe abhor their sex.  
They're all disloyall, vnconstant, all vniust:  
Who tryes as I haue tryed, and findes as I haue found,  
Will say there's no such creatures on the ground.

*Blaunch.* Vnconstant Knight, though some deserue no trust, 145  
Thers others faithfull, louing, loyall, and iust!

*Enter to them VALINGFORD with EM and the MILLER, and  
MOUNTNEY, and MANUILE, and ELNER.*

*Wm.* How now Lord Valingford, what makes these women here?

*Val.* Here be two women, may it please your grace,  
That are contracted to one man, and are :  
In strife whether shall haue him to their husband. 150

*Wm.* Stand foorth, women, and saie  
To whether of you did he first giue his faith.

*Em.* To me, forsooth.

128, 129. Divided at *say* | in Qq; corr. by Del. — 128. *coniunction* A. — 129. *of the* Qq, *o' th'* pres. Edd. — 132. *cryly* Del. (a misprint). — 134. *neuer* Qq, *ne'er* Del. — 135. *such as* om. Simp. conj. — 137, 138. Divided at *deniall* in Qq; corr. by Del. — 141. *abhor the sex* Chet. — 142. *they are* Qq, *they're* Del. — 143. Two lines in Qq, the first ending at *tryed* |; corr. by Del. — 145. *though same* Del. (a misprint). — 146. *and* om. by Chet. — 148. *Here is two* Del. — 149, 150. Divided at *man* | in Qq. — 150. *to her husband* Simp. — 152. *first give faith* Chet. — 153. *To me, my liege.* Chet.

*El.* To me, my gracious Lord.

155 *Wm.* Speake, Manuile: to whether didst thou giue thy faith?

*Man.* To saie the troth, this maid had first my loue.

*El.* Yea, Manuile, but there was no witsnesse by.

*Em.* Thy conscience, Manuile, is a hundred witnesses.

*El.* Shee hath stolne a conscience to serue her owne  
160 turne; but you are deceiued, yfaith, he will none of you.

*Man.* Indeed, dred Lord, so deere I held her loue

As in the same I put my whole delight;

But some impediments, which at that instant

Hapned, made me forsake her quite;

165 For which I had her fathers franke consent.

*Wm.* What were th' impediments?

*Man.* Why, shee could neither heare nor see.

*Wm.* Now shee doth both. Mayden, how were you cured?

*Em.* Pardon, my Lord, Ile tell your grace the troth,  
170 Be't not imputed to me as discredit.

I loued this Manuile so much, that still my thought,

When he was absent, did present to mee

The forme and feature of that countenance

Which I did shrine an ydoll in mine heart.

175 And neuer could I see a man, methought,

That equald Manuile in my partiall eye.

Nor was there any loue betweene us lost,

But that I held the same in high regard,

Vntill repaire of some vnto our house,

180 Of whom my Manuile grew thus ieaious.

As if he tooke exception, I vouchsafed

To heare them speake, or saw them when they came:

155. *faith* A. — 158. QA omits *is*. — By a mistake Simp. gives *is a thousand witnesses* as the reading of QB. — 159, 160. Printed as two lines in Qq, the first ending at *turne*. — 163. Ending at *hapned* in Qq. — 166. *the impediments* Qq, *th' impediments* Simp. — 168. Two lines in Chet., ending *both | cured |*. — 170. *Be it* Qq, *Be't* Del. — 171. *me thought* Qq, *mythought* Del., *methought* Simp. The emendation *my thought* is to be found in the margin of QA, written by the same hand as above, l. 10. As to the use of *me* for *my* in A, cp. III. 6. 9, and V. 1. 116. — 173. *The frame and* Del. — 174. *in my heart* B. — 180. *iealous* is to be pronounced as a trisyllable (*ieal-i-ous*); cp. S. Walker, *Versif.*, p. 154 seqq., *El. Jahrb.*, XV, 350.

On which I straight tooke order with my selfe,  
 To voyde the scrupule of his conscience,  
 By counterfaiting that I neither saw 185  
 Nor heard, any wayes to rid my hands of them.  
 All this I did to keepe my Manuiles loue,  
 Which he vnkindly seekes for to reward.

*Man.* And did my Em, to keepe her faith with mee,  
 Dissemble that shee neither heard nor sawe? 190  
 Pardon me, sweet Em, for I am onely thine!

*Em.* Lay off thy hands, disloyall as thou art!  
 Nor shalt thou haue possession of my loue,  
 That canst so finely shift thy matters off!  
 Put case I had been blind, and could not see — 195  
 As often times such visitations falles  
 That pleaseth God, which all things doth dispose —  
 Shouldst thou forsake me in regard of that?  
 I tell thee Manuile, hadst thou been blinde,  
 Or deafe, or dumbe, 200  
 Or else what impediments might befall to man,  
 Em would haue loued, and kept, and honoured thee;  
 Yea, begg'd, if wealth had faylde, for thy releefe.

*Man.* Forgiue me, sweet Em!

*Em.* I do forgiue thee, with my heart, 205  
 And will forget thee too, if case I can:  
 But neuer speake to mee, nor seeme to know mee!

*Man.* Then farewell, frost! farewell a wench that will!  
 Now, Elner, I am thine owne, my gyrl.

*El.* Myne, Manuile? thou neuer shalt be myne. 210

185, 186. Divided at *heard* | in Qq; our division has been proposed by El. — 196. *visitation* Del. — 199. El. proposes *haddest* for *hadst*. — 200—203. In Qq the lines end *impediments* | *kept* | *faylde* | *releefe* |. — 201. The line is to be scanned: *Or else* | *what* 'mpéd | 'ments might | &c. See Jahrb., XV, 350. It is therefore unnecessary to read with Simp.: *Or what impediments else might befall man*. — 205. *I do forgive with all my heart*. Del. — 207. *now seem* Del. (a misprint). — 208. Printed as two lines in Qq, ending *frost* | *will* |. — Del.'s and Simp.'s transposition *Well-fare a wench* is an unnecessary alteration of the text, *farewell* having a shifting accent; cp. K. John, III. 3. 17; Mucedorus, III. 4. 34; see also above, II. 1. 157, and Abbott, s. 475, p. 361. — 209. We must either pronounce *Elner* as a trisyllable (*Eliner*), or consider the line with Simp. as a verse of four accents, and read *I'm*.

I so detest thy villanie,  
That whilest I liue I will abhor thy companie!

*Man.* Is't come to this? Of late I'd choyce of twaine,  
On either side, to haue me to her husband,  
215 And now am vtterly reiected of them both.

*Val.* My Lord,  
This gentleman stood something in our light,  
When time was; now I thinke it not amisse  
To laugh at him that sometime scorned at vs.  
220 *Mount.* Content my Lord, inuent the forme.

*Val.* Then thus.  
*Wm.* I see that women are not generall euils,  
Blaunch is faire: methinkes I see in her  
A modest countenance, a heavenly blush.  
225 *Zweno,* receiue a reconciled foe,  
Not as thy friend, but as thy sonne-in-law,  
If so that thou be thus content.

*Zweno.* I ioy to see your grace so tractable.  
Here, take my daughter Blaunch;  
230 And after my desease the Denmarke Crowne.

*Wm.* Now, sir, how stands the case with you?

*Man.* I partly am perswaded as your grace is;  
My Lord, he's best at ease that medleth least.

*Val.* Sir, may a man  
235 Be so bold as to craue a word with you?

*Man.* Yea, two or three. What are they?

*Val.* I say, *this* maid will haue thee to her husband.

*Mount.* And I say *this*: and thereof will I lay  
An hundred pound.

213. *Is it* Qq, *Is't* Del. — *I had* Qq. — 216—218. *My Lord, this gentleman, when time was,* | *Stood something in our light,* | *And now I thinke it not amisse* | Qq; we have adopted El.'s arrangement. — 221. El. thinks the conclusion of the play to be corrupt, or, at least, in great disorder. He proposes to arrange the lines that follow in this way: 221, 234—254, 231—233, 222—230, 255—278. For further particulars see Jahrb., XV, 351 seq. — 233. *he is* Qq, *he's* Chet. and Simp. — 234, 235. Divided at *bold* | in Qq. — 238, 239. Forming one line in Qq. — 238—240. *thereof*. . . *whereon*, a striking example for the free interchange between *on* and *of*. See Doctor Faustus, ed. Ward, note to II. 15, p. 142 seq., and Abbott, s. 181.

*Val.* And I say *this*: whereon Ile lay as much. 240

*Man.* And I say neither: what say you to that?

*Mount.* If that be true, then are we both deceiued.

*Man.* Why, it is true, and you are both deceiued.

*Lub.* In mine eyes this' the properest wench;

Might I aduise thee, take her to thy wife! 245

*Zweno.* It seemes to me, shee hath refused him.

*Lub.* Why, theres the spite.

*Zweno.* If one refuse him, yet may he haue the other.

*Lub.* He'll aske but her good will, and all her friends.

*Zweno.* Might I aduise thee? Let them both alone. 250

*Man.* Yea, thats the course, and thereon will I stand;

Such idle love hencefoorth I will detest.

*Val.* The foxe will eat no grapes, and why?

*Mount.* I know full well, because they hang too hie.

*Wm.* And may it be a Millers daughter by her birth? 255  
I cannot thinke but shee is better borne.

*Val.* Sir Thomas Goddard hight this reuerent man  
Famed for his virtues, and his good succeſſe,  
Whose fame hath been renownmed through the world.

*Wm.* Sir Thomas Goddard, welcome to thy Prince; 260  
And, faire Em, frolike with thy good father;  
As glad am I to find Sir Thomas Goddard,  
As good Sir Thomas Treford, on the plaines,  
He like a sheepheard, and thou our countrie Miller.

*Mil.* And longer let not Goddard liue a day 265  
Than he in honour loves his soueraigne.

*Wm.* But say, Sir Thomas, shall I giue thy daughter?

240. *I will* Qq, *I'll* Del. and Simp. — 242. *we are* Del. — 244, 245. Printed as three lines in Del. and Simp., ending *eyes* | *thee* | *wife* |. We have retained the arrangement of the original and printed the lines according to El.'s corrections. The old copies read *this is* for *this'* and *unto* for *to*. As to the contraction *this'*, see S. Walker, Versif., p. 80 seqq., and Abbott, s. 461. — 244. *In my eyes* Del. — 248. *he may* Del. — 249. *He will* Qq, *He'll* Del. — 255. *may't* Simp. — 259. *renown'd throughout the world*. Chet. — 261. Simp., in order to improve the metre, inserts *thou* after *frolic*. This insertion, however, seems needless, as the line may perhaps be scanned thus: *And* | *fair Em* | *frôlic* | *with thy* | *good fa* | *ther*. See El., Jahrb., XV, 352. — 262. *I am* Del. — 263. *Edmund Treford* Del., *Edmond Treford* Simp. — 264. *and* om. by Del.

*Mil.* Sir Thomas Goddard, and all that he hath,  
Doth rest at th' pleasure of your Maiestie.

270 *Wm.* And what sayes Em to louely Valingford?  
It seemed he loued you well, that for your sake  
Durst leaue his King.

*Em.* Em restes at the pleasure of your highnes;  
And would I were a wife for his desert.

275 *Wm.* Then here, Lord Valingford, receiue faire Em.  
Here take her, make her thy espoused wife.  
Then goe we in, that preparation may be made,  
To see these nuptials solemnly performed.

*[Exeunt all. Sound Drummes and Trumpets.]*

268. *Sir Thomas* not in Qq; added by Simp. — 269. *the* Qq. — 270. *says lovely Em to Valingford?* Del. — 271, 272. Divided at *well* | in Qq. — 271. *It seem's* Del. — 272. *Durst* Del. — 273. *rests* B. — 274. Chet. adds a line: *I know his merit, and I know his truth.* — 275. Printed as two lines in Qq, ending *Valingford* | *Em* |. — 276. Chet. inserts two lines: VAL. *I take her as the treasure of my life.* | EM. *And with this hand I give thee all my heart.* — 278. Chet. ends the play with the following rhyme couplet: *Thus war tumultuous flies to banishment, | And England's breast is fraught with rich content.*

THE END.

## APPENDIX.

A. II. Sc. 2. In all probability, the whole scene was originally written in verse. Prof. Elze (Notes, p. 128 seqq.) has tried to restore the shape in which, in his opinion, it came from the author's pen. His arrangement is, as follows:

*Mar.* Trust me, my Lord, I'm sorry for your hurt.

*Lub.* Gramercy, madam; but it is not great,  
Only a thrust, prick'd with a rapier's point.

*Mar.* How grew the quarrel, my Lord?

*Lub.* Sweet, for thy sake.  
There was last night two maskers in our company,  
Myself the foremost; the others strangers were  
'Mongst which, when th'music 'gan to sound the measures,  
Each masker made choice of his lady; and one,  
More forward than the rest, stept towards thee;  
Which I perceiving  
Thrust him aside and took thee out myself.  
But this was taken in so ill a part  
That at my coming out of the court-gate,  
With justling together, it was my chance to be  
Thrust into th'arm. The doer thereof, because  
He was th'original cause of the disorder,  
At th'inconvenient time, was presently  
Committ'd, and is this morning sent for hither  
To answer th'matter; and here, I think, he comes.

*Enter WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR with a JAILOR.*

What, Sir Robert of Windsor? How now!

*Wm. Conq.* I' faith, a prisoner; but what ails your arm?

*Lub.* Hurt by mischance last night.

*Wm. Cong.* What? Not in the mask at the court-gate?

*Lub.* Yes, trust me, there.

*Wm. Cong.* Why then, my Lord, I thank you for my lodging.

*Lub.* And I you for my hurt, if it were so.

Keeper, away!

I here discharge you of your prisoner. *[Exit Keeper.*

*Wm. Cong.* Lord Marquess!

You offer'd me disgrace to shoulder me.

*Lub.* Sir!

I knew you not, and therefore pardon me,  
And th'rather as it might be alleged to me  
Of mere simplicity, to see another  
Dance with my mistress, disguis'd, myself in presence.  
But seeing it was our haps to damnify  
Each other unwillingly, let's be content  
With both our harms and lay the fault where 't was,  
And so be friends.

*Wm. Cong.* I' faith, I am content with my night's lodging,  
If you be with your hurt.

*Lub.* Not that I have't,  
But I'm content to forget how I came by't.

*Wm. Cong.* My Lord,  
Here comes the lady Blanch, let us away.

*Enter BLANCH.*

*Lub.* With right good will. *[To Mariana]* Lady, will you stay?

*Mar.* Madam — *[Exeunt William the Conqueror and Lubeck.]*

*Blanch.* Mariana, as I'm grievèd with thy presence,  
So am I not offended for thy absence,  
And, were it not a breach to modesty,  
Thou shouldst know before I left thee.

*Mar.* *[Aside]* How near this humour is akin to madness!  
If you hold on to talk as you begin,  
You're in a pretty way to scolding.

*Blanch.* To scolding, huswife?

*Mar.* Madam, here comes one.

*Enter a MESSENGER with a Letter.*

*Blanch.* There does indeed. Fellow, wouldst thou  
Have anything with anybody here?

*Mess.* I have a letter to deliver to the Lady Mariana.

*Blanch.* Give it me.

*Mess.* There must none but she have it.

*[Blanch snatcheth the letter from him.]*

*Blanch.* Go to, foolish fellow.

*[Exit Messenger.]*

And, therefore, to ease the anger I sustain,

I'll be so bold to open it. What's here?

'Sir Robert greets you well!'

You, mistress, his love, his life? Oh, amorous man,

How he his new mistress entertains,

And on his old friend Lubeck doth bestow

A horned nightcap to keep in his wit.

*Mar.* Madam,

Though you discourteously have read my letter,

Yet, pray you, give it me.

*Blanch.* Then take it, there, and there, and there.

*[She tears it. Exit Blanch.]*

*Mar.* How far doth this differ from modesty!

Yet I will gather up the pieces, which,

Haply, may show to me th' intent thereof,

Though not the meaning.

*[She gathers up the pieces and joins them.]*

*[Reads]* 'Your servant and love, Sir Robert of Windsor, alias William the Conqueror, wisheth long health and happiness.'

Is this then William the Conqueror

Shrouded under th' name of Sir Robert of Windsor?

Were he the monarch of the world, he should

Not dispossess my Lubeck of his love.

Therefore I'll to the court, there, if I can,

Close to be friends with Lady Blanch, thereby

To keep my love, my Lubeck, for myself,

And further the Lady Blanch in her own suit,

As much as c'er I may.

---

---

E. KARRAS, Printer, Halle.

---



# PSEUDO-SHAKESPEARIAN PLAYS.

EDITED

BY

KARL WARNKE, PH. D.

AND

LUDWIG PROESCHOLDT, PH. D.

II. THE MERRY DEVIL OF EDMONTON.

---

HALLE:

MAX NIEMEYER.

1884.

THE  
MERRY DEVIL OF EDMONTON.

REVISED AND EDITED

WITH INTRODUCTION AND NOTES

BY

KARL WARNKE, PH. D.

AND

LUDWIG PROESCHOLDT, PH. D.

---

HALLE:  
MAX NIEMEYER.

1884.  
B  
V.

A.257859

## INTRODUCTION.



THE earliest known edition of *The Merry Devil of Edmonton* was published in 1608, with the title: '*The Merry Devill of Edmonton. As it hath beene sundry times Acted, by his Maiesties Seruants, at the Globe on the bank-side. London, Printed by Henry Ballard for Arthur Johnson, dwelling at the signe of the white-horse in Paules Churchyard, ouer against the great North doore of Paules. 1608.*' (A). In the course of the next fifty years five more editions of the play were issued, the first two of which were likewise printed for Arthur Johnson in 1612 and 1617 (BC), the third and fourth for Francis Falkner in 1626 and 1631 (DE), and the fifth for W. Gilbertson in 1655 (F).

The *Editio princeps* of the play has been accessible to us in a copy, preserved in Trinity College, Cambridge, and bearing the press-mark *Capell R. 23*. The edition of 1612 is, as far as we know, not to be found in any public library; we owe the knowledge of it to the liberality of Mr. A. H. Huth, who kindly allowed us to make a transcript from his own copy of it. The remaining four editions of the play have been collated by us after copies preserved in the British Museum and bearing the press-marks C. 24. l. 12 (C), C. 34. b. 19 (D), 161. a. 23 and 643. c. 12 (E, two copies), 643. c. 13 (F).

Even *a priori* it may be supposed that the first three editions of the play, being printed for the same publisher, are nearly related to each other. And indeed, in a number of cases B and C show the same mistakes as the edition of 1608. So *panling* is printed for *parting* II. 3. 16, *steale* for *stealth* II. 3. 27, *parsonages* for *parsonage* IV. 2. 34; wrong prefixes are put before the lines I. 3. 31; II. 2. 20; IV. 1. 12; IV. 2. 63; V. 1. 72, 113; stage-directions are omitted IV. 1. 172; V. 1. 111; V. 2. 104. On the other hand, not unfrequently two of the editions exhibit a mistake, avoided or corrected by the third. So AB Ind. 72; III. 1. 11; V. 2. 44; AC I.

I. 33, 40; I. 2. 23; BC II. 3. 56; III. 2. 11; IV. 2. 67. It is evident that C, having some mistakes or misprints in common only with A, others only with B, cannot have been directly derived either from A or from B. On the contrary we must suppose that B and C are independent of each other, and that both of them are based on a lost or at least unknown edition of our play (A'). This hypothetical edition preserved part of the mistakes of A, and added a few more of its own. To the former class belong all those which are to be met with either in AB or in AC, to the latter those which we find in BC. At any rate, A' seems to have been of little intrinsic value and was probably a mere reprint of A. For C, though deriving from A', differs from A only in subordinate and unimportant points. So C prints *shall* for *can* I. 2. 50, *toward* for *towards* I. 3. 66, *this night* for *to night* II. 2. 79, *yonder* for *yond* II. 3. 17, *betweene* for *betwixt* ib. 50, *some* for *such* III. 2. 64, *your* for *our* ib. 157, *at* for *in* IV. 1. 20, *blacke* for *dark* IV. 2. 1.<sup>1)</sup> Whilst C in all essential points agrees with the *Editio princeps* of the play, B offers a great many different readings from A. As all subsequent editions are, directly or indirectly, based on B, it matters much to know whether the readings of B are to be considered as corrections of the poet himself, or as the arbitrary alterations of some unknown editor. Setting aside all those readings which may be quite as genuine and quite as correct in B as in A, we shall turn our eye only to those passages in which either of the editions presents a reading decidedly superior to the other. There can be little doubt that the reading of A must be preferred by us Ind. 39; I. 1. 3; I. 2. 25; I. 3. 68; I. 3. 85, 86; III. 2. 90; IV. 2. 6. To these passages we add II. 1. 23 and V. 1. 72 where, in all probability at least, A presents the original reading. B, on the other hand, exhibits a better reading than A I. 1. 40; I. 3. 91; II. 1. 44. The misprint in A I. 3. 98 was already corrected in A', as the reading of C agrees with that of B. Thus we see that only in a few instances the editor of B succeeded in removing a wrong reading, but that, on the contrary, he introduced into the text a number of alterations which must be rejected by us. As to the indifferent passages, it will therefore certainly be best not to depart from the reading of A, particularly when supported by C.

---

<sup>1)</sup> A' added I. 3. 111 which had dropped out in A (only in some copies?).

It is easily to be seen that D and E, which form the second group of the old editions, directly emanate from B. We meet in them not only with the same mistakes which we have pointed out in B, but with some misprints not contained either in A or in C; cp. I. 2. 19 *discontinnance* BD for *discontinuance*, II. 2. 25 *no om.* BDE, V. 2. 26 *Venere* BDEF for *Cerere*. Far however from merely reprinting B, the editor of D tried to adapt the text of the play as much as possible to his own age. So he wrote *miles* for *mile* Pr. 13, *cough o'th lungs* for *cough a'th lungs* I. 3. 50, *horse is* for *horses* I. 3. 126, *frowardnesse* for *soares* II. 2. 57, *you* for *yee* V. 1. 39, *at the next assizes* for *at next a.* V. 2. 11, *doe you see* for *dee see* A, *doe see* B V. 2. 44; cp., besides, *to acquaint* for *t'acquaint* III. 2. 165, *Metropolitane* for *Metrapolitan* IV. 1. 64 &c. In conformity with the statute of King James I., the editor of D either omitted or altered the name of God; so he omitted *to God* IV. 2. 44, *Lord* ib. 57, and wrote *by the mass* for *by the Lord* ib. 43, *before Iove* for *before God* V. 1. 125, *by my sword* for *by the Lord* II. 1. 59. For the same reason he always printed *blood* for *zblood*, *hart* for *zhart*, *foot* for *zfoot*, *life* for *slife*, *nounes* for *zounds* &c. Of greater interest to us are those alterations by which the editor of D tried to restore the defective sense of some passages. In our opinion he succeeded in giving a right or at least an acceptable reading I. 1. 16; II. 1. 6; II. 2. 5; ib. 54; II. 3. 2; ib. 27; III. 2. 127; IV. 2. 34; V. 2. 142. Besides D is right in assigning I. 3. 31 to *Ierningham*, II. 2. 20 to *Sir Arthur*, IV. 2. 63 to *Sexton*, and in adding stage-directions where they are wanted. In all other cases, however, where D differs from A (AC), we have not deviated from the reading which must be considered by us as the original one.

The same remark applies to E. Published five years afterwards by the same book-seller, it agrees in all essential points with D; the few slight alterations which it offers are of little or no interest for the modern reader of the play.

A similar place to that of D is held by F, published twenty-four years after E (1655). The editor of F chose the last edition published (E) as the model to work on, and followed it so closely as to adopt even some glaring mistakes; cp. the notes to Pr. 36; Ind. 70; I. 1. 99; I. 3. 30; ib. 42; II. 2. 7; III. 2. 19; IV. 1. 77; IV. 2. 30; V. 1. 66; V. 2. 66; besides V. 2. 10; ib. 31; ib. 116. Notwithstanding we owe to F the correction of a number of passages

which had been quite disregarded by all preceding editors. Not unfrequently it happens that the names of Raph, Harry, Arthur, Clare and Ierningham are confounded with one another in ABCDE; cp. II. 2. 44; III. 1. 68; III. 2. 150; IV. 1. 99; V. 1. Stage-dir.; ib. 106, 107. As in some of these passages the verse suffers from the alteration required by the sense, we have perhaps to suppose that the poet himself, carelessly preparing his manuscript for the press, committed the blunders which were faithfully preserved in the following editions. Be that as it may, there can be no doubt that the alterations of F must be considered as corrections and are to be put into the critical text of the play. Besides, the editor took care to regulate the versification of the play, in printing as verse a number of prose-passages which doubtless must be read as verse; s. II. 3. 22—24; III. 2. 128, 129; V. 1. 43—45; ib. 97—105; V. 2. 82, 83. In a few isolated cases some trivial mistakes of a different kind were removed by F; cp. the notes to I. 1. 70, 72; II. 3. 27; III. 2. 28; IV. 1. 134.

Eighty-nine years after F the first modern edition of the play was published in 'A Select Collection of Old Plays. London, Printed for R. Dodsley in Pall-Mall, 1744, Vol. XI, pp. 123—169' (G). In the Introductory Notice it is distinctly stated that this edition was printed from the one published in 1655; and even without that notice it might easily be seen that the editor of G did not resort to any of the earlier editions; cp. ad I. 3. 23; II. 2. 69; II. 3. 72; III. 1. 117; V. 1. 70; V. 2. 31. The meaning of many an expression having become obsolete and obscure in the course of a century, a number of passages were altered in G; cp. the notes to I. 2. 4; I. 3. 73; II. 1. 56; ib. 60; III. 1. 77; III. 2. 89; ib. 158; IV. 1. 79 &c. Only in two cases (I. 1. 70 and II. 1. 68) we have thought fit to avail ourselves of the alterations of G.

The second edition of Dodsley's Select Collection of Old Plays was published by Isaac Reed, London 1780 (H). The title asserts that this edition has been 'corrected and collated with the old copies', and at the end of the Merry Devil of Edmonton (Vol. V, 245—306) Isaac Reed says: 'That (the edition) of 1655, from which the former edition of this play was printed, is unworthy of any notice from the number of errors it contains.' Notwithstanding this, Reed did not hesitate substantially to reprint G; cp. I. 1. 101; I. 3. 42; ib. 48; ib. 110; II. 3. 40; III. 1. 77; IV. 1. 79; ib. 118 &c. Now and then,

it is true, he must have had recourse to one of the older editions; for in some few cases he disdains the reading of DEFG and agrees with ABC, s. I. 3. 133; II. 2. 38; IV. 2. 57. That old edition was in all probability C, cp. I. 2. 25; I. 3. 98 and V. 2. 56. On the whole, however, the editor of H stuck to G, i. e. to BDEFG, and only in the few instances just mentioned he preferred the reading of A (C). As the editor did not choose to add any corrections, the addition of *the* II. 2. 71 may be considered merely as a mistake.

A new edition of the comedy was published in 'The Ancient British Drama. London, Printed for William Miller, Albemarle Street, By James Ballantyne and Co. Edinburgh 1810', 3 voll., vol. II, 238—257 (I). This edition, though superintended by Walter Scott, is of little interest to the critic; it is evidently based on H, and it is certainly only a matter of chance if it agrees with other editions, as Ind. 1; IV. 1. 86; V. 1. 118.

H was likewise the basis of the reprint of our play in the third edition of Dodsley's Collection, ed. J. P. Collier, London 1825, vol. V, p. 221—274 (K). Now and then, however, G also must have been compared by the editor; cp. I. 2. 25; I. 3. 98, and particularly II. 1. 68. Only in few instances Collier corrected the verse or tried to throw light on an obscure passage by adding a conjecture of his own.

Lastly the comedy of the Merry Devil was published in the fourth edition of Dodsley's Collection, ed. W. Carew Hazlitt, London 1875, vol. X, p. 201—264 (L). This edition is doubtless superior to all preceding it; Mr. Hazlitt collated some of the old editions and in many cases tried to re-establish the sense and the metre of an apparently corrupt passage. But as Mr. Hazlitt did not examine the *Editio princeps* and was not aware of the second edition of the play, his edition too, careful as it is, cannot stand the test to which we now-a-days submit a critical edition.

Three different Elizabethan dramatists, Shakespeare, Drayton, and Heywood, have been proposed as presumptive authors of the play; but as cogent arguments are absolutely wanting, it will hardly ever be possible to settle the question definitively.

In the Library of King Charles II., we are told, there existed a volume, containing Mucedorus, The Merry Devill of Edmonton

and Faire Em, and labelled *Shakespeare, vol. I.*<sup>1)</sup> On the authority of that inscription, Kirkman, the bookseller, registered the play in his catalogue as a comedy of Shakespeare's. In England that tradition seems not to have met with any advocate; in Germany, however, two well-known Shakespearian critics, L. Tieck and H. von Friesen, felt inclined to attribute the play to Shakespeare.

In Tieck's opinion<sup>2)</sup>, the whole play is of a piece with the Merry Wives of Windsor, particularly in the form which the latter comedy had in its first edition; some of the personages closely resemble Shakespearian characters; the Induction as well as the scene in the forest bear the stamp of Shakespeare's genius. Tieck's opinion as to the author of the play has been adopted and supported by H. von Friesen.<sup>3)</sup> Friesen, it is true, owns that one of the most striking characteristics of Shakespeare's art, the symmetry and skilful arrangement of the whole, is wanting; yet he is of opinion that the play, both in language and contents, is not unworthy of Shakespeare. The Host in the Merry Devil of Edmonton is cast in the same mould as the Host in the Merry Wives, and the conversation between Sir Arthur, Sir Raph and Friar Hildersham reminds the reader of the Comedy of Errors; some parallel thoughts and expressions may be traced in Romeo and Juliet, Richard II., the Merchant of Venice, and even the Sonnets; the trochaic short-lines III. 1 and 2 are something like to the invocations and magical charms of the elves in the Midsummernight's-Dream. All such analogies and parallel passages, however, amount to little in the way of evidence. Besides, in nothing do scholars disagree more than in literary questions of the kind. The very resemblance of the two hosts makes Ch. Knight<sup>4)</sup> think it impossible that Shakespeare wrote the play, since he, in the abundance of his riches, would certainly not have repeated himself. The same forest scene, which to Tieck seems to have a Shakespearian touch, lacks in Ulrici's opinion<sup>5)</sup> all that fine irony which is characteristic of the comical

---

<sup>1)</sup> Afterwards in Garrick's Collection; now, broken up, in the British Museum. According to Simpson, Transactions of the New-Shakspeare-Society, the label was *Shakespeare, vol. II.*

<sup>2)</sup> Tieck, Alt-Englisches Theater, vol. II, pp. 7—9.

<sup>3)</sup> H. von Friesen, Flüchtige Bemerkungen über einige Stücke, welche Shakespeare zugeschrieben werden. Shakespeare-Jahrbuch, vol. I, pp. 160—165.

<sup>4)</sup> Charles Knight, Studies on Shakespeare, p. 288 seqq.

<sup>5)</sup> Ulrici, Shakespeare's Dramatische Kunst, ed. 2, vol. III, p. 71 seqq.

episodes in Shakespeare's plays. The action of the play, the same critic continues, is likewise destitute of that unity which we admire in all the plays of the great dramatist; the story of Fabell's treaty with the devil has nothing to do with the subject of the play; the love-affair between Milliscent and Young Mountchensey is but loosely and quite externally connected with the pranks of Sir John and his merry companions. The conclusion, arrived at by Ulrici, is that the author of the *Merry Devil of Edmonton* must have been a not unskilful poet, endowed particularly with a certain talent for popular poetry, and grown up under Shakespeare's influence, but that we can by no means set down Shakespeare himself as the author of the play. Every reader, we feel sure, will subscribe to Ulrici's opinion, and hardly any critic will now-a-days venture to claim the play for England's greatest poet.

In his *Dramatic Literature of the Age of Elizabeth* 1820, p. 221, Hazlitt proposes Thomas Heywood as the author of the play. 'The *Merry Devil of Edmonton*', he says, 'which has been sometimes attributed to Shakespeare, is assuredly not unworthy of him. It is more likely, however, both from the style and subject-matter, to have been Heywood's than any other person's. Romantic, sweet, tender, it expresses the feelings of honour, of love, and friendship in their utmost delicacy, enthusiasm and purity.' Also Ulrici is of opinion that the management of the fable as well as the style of the comedy remind the reader of Heywood's plays. The exterior evidence, however, which the same learned gentleman has adduced in favour of his theory, is based on a mistake and cannot be turned to any account. On March 5<sup>th</sup> 1608 the two booksellers Joseph Hunt and Thomas Archer had a book registered with the title: 'A Book called the Lyfe and Deathe of the Merry Devil of Edmonton, with the pleasant Pranks of Smugge the Smyth, Sir John and mine Hoste of the George, about their stealing of Venison. By T. B.' This 'book' is certainly identical with the prose-tract which was published (for the second time?) in 1631 and the author of which was Tony Brewer.<sup>1</sup>) Ulrici, however, identifies this tract

---

<sup>1</sup>) The prose-tract has been described by Dr. L. Proescholdt in 'Eine prosaische Nachbildung der Erzählung des Müllers aus Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*', *Anglia* VII, p. 116 seqq. According to the entry in the catalogue of the British Museum Dr. P. stated the author of the book to have been *Thomas Brewer*. Mr. Bullen kindly hinted to us that the author's name was *Tony*

with our comedy and supposes T. B. to have been the initials of the author of our play. As there is no dramatic poet known to him, whose name shows the initials T. B., Ulrici thinks T. B. to be a misprint for T. H. i. e. Thomas Heywood.<sup>1)</sup>

For completeness' sake we add that Thomas Coxeter (d. 1747) and Oldys have ascribed our play to Michael Drayton, perhaps only because he has in his *Polyolbion* described the localities mentioned in our play.

The comedy of the *Merry Devil of Edmonton* is, as far as we know, mentioned for the first time in the *Blacke Booke* by T. M., 1604: 'Giue him leaue to see the *Merry Devil of Edmunton*, or *A Woman kill'd with kindness*.' The play was not entered into the Stationers' Registers till on the 22<sup>d</sup> October 1607; the earliest edition extant (1608) seems in fact to be the *Editio princeps* of the play. The resemblance to the *Merry Wives* induced Tieck to assign it to the year 1600; but A. W. Ward, l. c. I. 463, is probably right in believing this year in any case too late a date. The battle of S. Quentins (1558) would indeed hardly have been mentioned in a comedy like ours, if the remembrance of it had no more been within the memory of men.

The *Merry Devil of Edmonton* must have been a highly popular performance. This not only appears from the number of early editions, but is attested in plain words by Ben Jonson, who in the prologue of '*The Devil is an Ass*' says<sup>2)</sup>:

'And show this but the same face you have done  
Your dear delight, the *Devil of Edmonton*.'

Of modern critics Ch. Lamb in his '*Specimens of English Dramatic Poets*' I. 55—60 speaks with great warmth and admiration of the play, and Ch. Knight and Ulrici pronounce a by no means unfavourable judgment on it. Mr. Swinburne in his '*Sonnets on the English Dramatic Poets*', No. XVIII, calls our comedy

---

Brewer, whose initials 'T. B.' also stand on the titlepage of the '*Country Girl*', the scene of which is laid in *Edmonton*.

<sup>1)</sup> The same mistake occurs again in A. W. Ward, *History of English Dramatic Literature* I, p. 463: 'The first edition of the play did not bear the initials of Shakspeare, but those of T. B.'

<sup>2)</sup> Ben Jonson, ed. Cunningham, vol. II, p. 212.

‘that sweet pageant of the kindly fiend  
 Who, seeing three friends in spirit and heart made one,  
 Crowned with good hap the true love-wiles he screened  
 In the pleached lanes of pleasant Edmonton.’

The principal charm of the play lay for contemporaries doubtless in the comical scenes; and also Peter Fabell, the merry Fiend of Edmonton, may be supposed to have been a favourite personage with them. It is much to be regretted that all we know about Peter Fabell amounts to little more than what we learn from our comedy. In T. Brewer's prose-tract only the first four chapters treat of Maister Peter, all the rest is devoted to Smug and his ‘pleasant Francks.’ ‘In Edmonton’, Brewer says, ‘he was borne, liued and died, in the reign of King H. VII [1485—1509]. He was a man of good discent: and a man, either for his gifts externall or internall, inferior to few. For his person he was absolute. Nature had never showne the fulnesse of her skill more in any then in him. For the other, I meane his great learning (including many misteries), hee was as amply blest as any.’<sup>1</sup> As early as 1533 Peter Fabell was made the hero of a ballad, entitled *Fabyls Ghoste*. Th. Warton, in his *History of English Poetry*, ed. W. C. Hazlitt (London, 1871), vol. IV, p. 76, says: ‘In the dispersed library of the late Mr. William Collins I saw a thin folio of two sheets in black letter, containing a poem in the octave stanza, entitled *Fabyls Ghoste*, printed by John Rastell in the year 1533. The piece is of no merit... [The old play] has nothing, except the machine of the chime, in common with *Fabyll's Ghoste*.’

As in most comedies of the age, the blank-verse in the *Merry Devil of Edmonton* is interspersed with numerous prose-passages. All persons of an essentially comical character do not ‘speake in Numbers’, as the Host calls it. Thus Master Blague the Host, and his boon-companions Banks and Smug, Sir John the priest<sup>2</sup>, and his Sexton, Bilbo and the Chamberlain speak in prose, and so do the other persons when conversing with them; s. I. 1; I. 2; II. 3. 44 seqq.; V. 1. 111; V. 2. When any of the other persons are joking, they also use prose instead of verse; cp. the scene in the *Abbey*

---

<sup>1</sup>) Quoted by Nares, s. v. Fabell.

<sup>2</sup>) But cp. II. 1. 22 seqq.

III. 1. 12 seqq.; ib. 27; ib. 36; ib. 45 seqq.; III. 2. 132. Prose is also used to express passion or anger; cp. especially V. 1. 19 seqq. where the comical effect is heightened by the sudden change of verse and prose; V. 1. 49 seqq.; ib. 54 seqq.; V. 2. 65 seqq. There-  
 7. fore we have thought it best to print A. Jerningham's speech and H. Clare's answer to it as prose I. 3. 61 seqq. and 67 seqq. In some other instances prose is intended to lower the dramatic pitch.  
*Frank* Harry Clare and Arthur Jerningham, when in the forest with Milliscent, use prose when talking about the way and the time (IV. 1. 33—45), but they pass to verse as soon as they address Milliscent (ib. 46). Raph, Brian's man, speaks in prose IV. 1. 72; Brian's words are printed in the editions partly as prose, partly as verse. It seems possible to re-establish verse in most passages; the two prose-passages which we admit may be explained as spoken in anger.

Frequently passages which must doubtless be regarded as verse are printed as prose in the old editions. In most cases the metre is restored by the subsequent editions; so by D II. 2. 90; by F II. 3. 22; III. 2. 128; V. 1. 43; ib. 97; by K III. 2. 123; ib. 162; by L III. 1. 112; by the present Edd. III. 2. 139; IV. 1. 161 &c. On the other hand a prose-passage is printed as verse by part of the Edd. I. 3. 61 seqq.

Proper Alexandrines with six accents are seldom to be met with in our play. As apparent Alexandrines may be considered I. 3. 40; III. 1. 1; III. 2. 4 where the redundant two or three syllables are best put in separate lines; besides III. 1. 94; V. 1. 38; ib. 92; ib. 107. Real Alexandrines seem to be II. 2. 66; III. 1. 68; IV. 1. 129; ib. 145.

The Prioress and Raymond, in the disguise of Benedick, speak in rhymed lines with four accents; the metre is generally trochaic, but is frequently interchanged with iambic lines. Bilbo, finally, uses some short-lines (II. 3. 58—63), the rhythm of which agrees very well with their contents.

The text of the present edition of the Merry Devil of Edmon-ton has been based on the edition of 1608. Wherever the text of A offers a mistake, we have tried to correct it according to the subsequent editions; wherever, on the other hand, the original reading may be justified, we have taken care not to depart from it in an arbitrary manner. Only in a few isolated instances where

the tradition was in all appearance corrupt, we have ventured to emend the passage to the best of our power. The readings of all subsequent editions have been embodied by us in the foot-notes, which, we hope, will prove to be faithful and complete. It seemed, however, unnecessary to swell the foot-notes by pointing out the merely orthographical changes of the different editions. The text of the play has been printed in the orthography exhibited by A. The two or three words where for distinctness' sake we have altered the original spelling, have been indicated in the notes. We have not thought it necessary to smooth the metre by contracting forms like *ouer*, *we haue*, *we will* &c., where the verse requires a monosyllable, or by dissolving forms like *o're*, *nunry*, *absolude*, where the metre requires a word of two or three syllables.

The Explanatory Notes, added to our text, are intended to expound the sense of an obscure passage, or to give the meaning of a word now out of use.<sup>1)</sup> The parallel passages from Shakespeare and other contemporary poets, by which some passages and constructions have been illustrated, will, we hope, not be disdained by the reader of the play.

In the old editions our play is not divided into acts and scenes. Tieck first divided the play into eleven scenes; we have styled the first scene Induction and have divided the remainder of the play into five acts and twelve scenes.

---

<sup>1)</sup> We beg the reader's indulgence for a mistake occurring in the Notes, ad I. 2. 26. Cooper's Dictionary bears the title 'Thesaurus Linguae Romanae et Britannicae', and was first published in 1565.

---



THE  
MERRY DEVIL OF EDMONTON.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

SIR ARTHUR CLARE.	SIR JOHN, <i>a Priest.</i>
SIR RICHARD MOUNCHENSEY.	BANKS, <i>the Miller of Waltham.</i>
SIR RAPH IERNINGHAM.	SMUG, <i>the Smith of Edmonton.</i>
HARRY CLARE, <i>son to Sir Arthur.</i>	SEXTON.
RAYMOND MOUNCHENSEY, <i>son to</i> <i>Sir Richard.</i>	BILBO.
FRANCKE IERNINGHAM, <i>son to Sir</i> <i>Raph.</i>	BRIAN.
PETER FABELL, <i>the Merry Devil.</i>	RAPH, <i>Brian's man.</i>
COREB, <i>a Spirit.</i>	FRIAR HILDERSHAM.
BLAGUE, <i>the Host.</i>	BENEDICK.
	CHAMBERLAINE.

LADY DORCAS CLARE.

MILLISCENT CLARE, *her Daughter.*

THE PRIORESSE *of Cheston Nunnery.*

NUNS *and* ATTENDANTS.

---

## THE PROLOGUE.

Your silence and attention, worthy friends,  
 That your free spirits may with more pleasing sense  
 Relish the life of this our actiue sceane!  
 To which intent, to calme this murmuring breath,  
 We ring this round, with our innuoking spellles; 5  
 If that your listning eares be yet prepard  
 To entertayne the subject of our play,  
 Lend vs your patience!  
 Tis Peter Fabell, a renowned Scholler,  
 Whose fame hath still beene hitherto forgot 10  
 By all the writers of this latter age.  
 In Middle-sex his birth and his abode,  
 Not full seauen mile from this great famous Citty,  
 That, for his fame in sleights and magicke won,  
 Was calde the merry Fiend of Edmonton. 15  
 If any heere make doubt of such a name,  
 In Edmonton yet fresh vnto this day,  
 Fixt in the wall of that old antient Church,  
 His monument remayneth to be seene;  
 His memory yet in the mouths of men, 20  
 That whilst he liude he could deceiue the Deuill.  
 Imagine now that whilst he is retirde  
 From Cambridge backe vnto his natiue home,  
 Suppose the silent, sable-visagde night  
 Casts her blacke curtaine ouer all the World; 25  
 And whilst he sleepes within his silent bed,  
 Toylde with the studies of the passed day,

PROLOGUE. 13. *miles* D and the rest. — 14. *in sseights* A, *in flights* I. —  
 20. *yet liues in* or *yet is in* Collier conj. — 24. *visage* C.

The very time and houre wherein that spirite  
 That many yeeres attended his commaund,  
 30 And oftentimes twixt Cambridge and that towne  
 Had in a minute borne him through the ayre,  
 By composition twixt the fiend and him,  
 Comes now to claime the Scholler for his due.

[*Draw the Curtaines.*

Behold him heere, laide on his restlesse couch,  
 35 His fatall chime prepared at his head,  
 His chamber guarded with these sable slights,  
 And by him stands that Necromanticke chaire,  
 In which he makes his direfull inuocations,  
 And binds the fiends that shall obey his will.  
 40 Sit with a pleased eye, vntill you know  
 The Commicke end of our sad Tragique show.

[*Exit.*

33. The stage-dir. after l. 32 in the old copies. — 36. *with his sable* EFG.

---

## INDUCTION.

*The Chime goes, in which time Fabell is oft seene to stare about him, and  
hold vp his hands.*

*Fab.* What meanes the tolling of this fatall chime?  
O, what a trembling horror strikes my hart!  
My stiffned haire stands vpright on my head,  
As doe the bristles of a porcupine.

*Enter Coreb, a Spirit.*

*Cor.* Fabell, awake! or I will beare thee hence 5  
Hedlong to hell.

*Fab.* Ha, ha,  
Why dost thou wake me? Coreb, is it thou?

*Cor.* Tis I.

*Fab.* I know thee well: I heare the watchfull dogs 10  
With hollow howling tell of thy approach;  
The lights burne dim, affrighted with thy presence;  
And this distemperd and tempestuous night  
Tells me the ayre is troubled with some Deuill.

*Cor.* Come, art thou ready? 15

*Fab.* Whither? or to what?

*Cor.* Why, Scholler, this the houre my date expires;  
I must depart, and come to claime my due.

*Fab.* Hah, what is thy due?

*Cor.* Fabell, thy selfe!

*Fab.* O, let not darkenes heare thee speake that word,  
Lest that with force it hurry hence amaine, 20

INDUCTION. *Induction* pres. Edd., not marked in the old copies; *Scene I.*  
Tieck. 1. *rouling* FGI, *trolling* H. — 5. *for I* L. — 7, 8. Divided at *me* |  
in all former Edd. — 16. *this is the hour* GHI.

And leaue the world to looke vpon my woe:  
 Yet ouerwhelme me with this globe of earth,  
 And let a little sparrow with her bill  
 Take but so much as shee can beare away,  
 25 That, euery day thus losing of my load,  
 I may againe in time yet hope to rise.

*Cor.* Didst thou not write thy name in thine owne blood,  
 And drewst the formall deed twixt thee and mee,  
 And is it not recorded now in hell?

30 *Fab.* Why comst thou in this sterne and horred shape,  
 Not in familiar sort, as thou wast wont?

*Cor.* Because the date of thy command is out,  
 And I am master of thy skill and thee.

*Fab.* Coreb, thou angry and impatient spirit,  
 35 I haue earnest busines for a priuate friend;  
 Reserue me, spirit, vntill some further time.

*Cor.* I will not for the mines of all the earth.

*Fab.* Then let me rise, and ere I leaue the world,  
 Dispatch some busines that I haue to doe;  
 40 And in meane time repose thee in that chayre.

*Cor.* Fabell, I will.

[*Sit downe.*]

*Fab.* O, that this soule, that cost so great a price  
 As the deere pretious blood of her redeemer,  
 Inspirde with knowledge, should by that alone  
 45 Which makes a man so meane vnto the powers,  
 Euen lead him downe into the depth of hell,  
 When men in their owne pride striue to know more  
 Then man should know!  
 For this alone God cast the Angelles downe.  
 50 The infinity of Arts is like a sea,  
 Into which, when man will take in hand to saile  
 Further then reason, which should be his Pilot,  
 Hath skill to guide him, losing once his compasse,  
 He falleth to such deepe and dangerous whirlepooles,  
 55 As he doth lose the very sight of heauen:

27. *name with thine* G and the rest. — 36. *farther* G and the rest. —  
 39. *Ile dispatch* BDEFG. — 41. [Stage-dir.] *Sits down in the necromantic*  
*chair.* L. — 42. *great*] *dear* G and the rest. — 45. *meane*] *near* FG. —  
 52, 57. *farther* G and the rest. — 55. *hauen* I.

The more he striues to come to quiet harior,  
 The further still he finds himselfe from land.  
 Man, striuing still to finde the depth of euill,  
 Seeking to be a God, becomes a Diuell.

*Cor.* Come, Fabell, hast thou done? 60

*Fab.* Yes, yes. Come hither!

*Cor.* Fabell, I cannot.

*Fab.* Cannot? — What ailes your holownes?

*Cor.* Good Fabell, helpe me!

*Fab.* Alas! where lies your grieve? some *Aqua-vitae*!  
 The Deuill's very sicke, I feare hee'le die; 65  
 For he looks very ill.

*Cor.* Darst thou deride the minister of darkenes?  
 In Lucifers dread name Coreb coniures thee  
 To set him free.

*Fab.* I will not for the mines of all the earth, 70  
 Vnles thou giue me libertie to see  
 Seauen yeares more, before thou seaze on mee.

*Cor.* Fabell, I giue it thee.

*Fab.* Sweare, damned fiend!

*Cor.* Vnbind me, and by hell I will not touch thee,  
 Till seauen yeares from this houre be full expirde. 75

*Fab.* Enough, come out.

*Cor.* A vengeance take thy art!  
 Liae and conuert all piety to euill: ✓  
 Neuer did man thus ouer-reach the Deuill.  
 No time on earth like Phaetontique flames  
 Can haue perpetuall being. Ile returne 80  
 To my infernall mansion; but be sure,  
 Thy seauen yeeres done, noe tricke shall make me tarry,  
 But, Coreb, thou to hell shalt Fabell carry. [*Exit.*]

*Fab.* Then thus betwixt vs two this variance ends,  
 Thou to thy fellow Fiends, I to my friends! [*Exit.* 85

58. *finde*] *know* C. — 68. *dread*] *great* D and the rest. — 70. *for all the mines* EF. — 72. *yeares*] *fiends* AB. — 79. *Phaetontique* ABC, *Phaetonic* L. — 83. *Exit* om. BDEFG. — 84. *between* F and the rest.

## A C T I.

### SCENE I.

*Enter* SIR ARTHUR CLARE, DORCAS, *his Lady*, MILLISCENT, *his daughter*,  
yong HARRY CLARE, *the men booted*, *the Gentlewomen in Cloakes and safe-*  
*guardes*, BLAGUE, *the merry host of the George*, *comes in with them.*

*Host.* Welcome, good knight, to the George at Waltham,  
my free-hold, my tenements, goods and chattels! Madam,  
heer's a roome is the very *Homer* and *Iliads* of a lodging,  
it hath none of the foure elements in it; I built it out of the  
5 Center, and I drinke neere the lesse sacke. Welcome, my  
little wast of maiden-heads! What? I serue the good Duke  
of Norfolke.

*Sir Ar.* God a mercie, my good host Blague! Thou hast  
a good seate here.

10 *Host.* Tis correspondent or so: there's not a Tartarian nor  
a Carrier, shall breath vpon your geldings; they haue villanous  
rancke feete, the rogues, and they shall not sweat in my linnen.  
Knights and Lords too haue bene drunke in my house, I thanke  
the destinies.

15 *Y. Cla.* Pre' the, good sinful Inkeeper, wil that corruption,  
thine Ostler, looke well to my gelding. Hay, a poxe of these  
rushes!

*Host.* You, Saint Dennis, your gelding shall walke without  
doores, and coole his feete for his masters sake. By the body  
20 of S. George, I haue an excellent intillect to goe steale som  
venison. Now, when wast thou in the forrest?

SCENE I. *Scene II.* Tieck. 3. is] in BDEF. — 16. *Ostler* to looke F  
and the rest. — 16, 18. *geldings* ABC. — 19. *feete*] *heels* FG. — 20. *goe*  
om. F; *go to steale* C. — 21. *venison now*, when AC, *venison*, Now when B,  
*venison: Now when* the rest.

*F. Cla.* Away, you stale messe of white-broth! Come hither, sister, let me helpe you.

*Sir Ar.* Mine Host, is not Sir Richard Mouchensey come yet, according to our appointment, when we last dinde here? 25

*Host.* The knight's not yet apparent. — Marry, heere's a forerunner that summons a parle, and saith, heele be here top and top-gallant presently.

*Sir Ar.* Tis well. Good mine host, goe downe, and see breakfast be provided. 30

*Host.* Knight, thy breath hath the force of a woman, it takes me downe; I am for the baser element of the kitchin: I retire like a valiant souldier, face point-blanke to the foe-man, or, like a Courtier, that must not shew the Prince his posteriors; I vanish to know my canuasadoes, and my interrogatories, for 35 I serue the good Duke of Norfolk. [*Exit.*]

*Sir Ar.* How doth my Lady? are you not weary, Madam? Come hither, I must talke in priuate with you; My daughter Milliscent must not ouer-heare.

*Mil.* I, whispring, pray God it tend to my good! 40 Strange feare assailes my heart, vsurps my blood.

*Sir Ar.* You know our meeting with the knight Mouchensey Is to assure our daughter to his heire.

*L. Dor.* Tis, without question.

*Sir Ar.* Two tedious winters haue past ore, since first 45 This couple lou'd each other, and in passion Glewd first their naked hands with youthfull moysture — Iust so long, on my knowledge.

*L. Dor.* And what of this?

*Sir Ar.* This morning should my daughter lose her name, And to Mouchenseys house conuey our armes, 50 Quartered within his scutchion; th' affiance, made Twixt him and her, this morning should be sealde.

*L. Dor.* I know it should.

27. a parley and saith B, a parle and faith C, a parley and faith the rest. — 33. souldiers face, point blanche AC. — 34. the] his F and the rest. — 35. I added by the present Edd. — 36. Exit om. EFG. — 39. [Stage-dir.] Speaking low added by L. — 40. tend my good AC. — 41. feares assailes E, fears assail F, fears assail G. — 46. These couple all Edd., except FG. — 51. the affiance F and the rest.

- Sir Ar.* But there are crosses, wife; heere's one in Waltham,  
 55 Another at the Abby, and the third  
 At Cheston; and tis ominous to passe  
 Any of these without a pater-noster.  
 Crosses of loue still thwart this marriage,  
 Whilst that we two, like spirits, walke in night  
 60 About those stony and hard hearted plots.  
*Mil.* O God, what meanes my father?  
*Sir Ar.* For looke you, wife, the riotous old knight  
 Hath ouer-run his annual reuenue  
 In keeping iolly Christmas all the yeere:  
 65 The nostrilles of his chimney are still stuf  
 With smoake, more chargeable then Cane-tobacco;  
 His hawkes deuoure his fattest dogs, whilst simple,  
 His leanest curres eate his hounds carrion.  
 Besides, I heard of late, his yonger brother,  
 70 A Turkey merchant, hath sore suck'de the knight  
 By meanes of some great losses on the sea;  
 That, you conceiue mee, before God all's naught,  
 His seate is weake. Thus, each thing rightly scand,  
 You'll see a flight, wife, shortly of his land.  
 75 *Mil.* Treason to my hearts truest soueraigne!  
 How soone is loue smothered in foggy gaine!  
*L. Dor.* But how shall we preuent this dangerous match?  
*Sir Ar.* I haue a plot, a tricke, and this it is —  
 Vnder this colour Ile breake off the match:  
 80 Ile tell the knight that now my minde is changd  
 For marrying of my daughter: for I intend  
 To send her vnto Cheston Nunry.  
*Mil.* O me accurst!

54. *in*] at FG. — 55. *and a third* G and the rest. — 56. *it is* E and the rest. — 58. *marriage* has the quality of a trisyllable here. — 59. *sprites* C. — 65. *chimneys* D and the rest. — 67, 68. *His hawks devour his fattest hogs, whilst Simple, His leanest cur, eats his hounds' carrion* L. — 68. *eate him* hounds AC. — 70. *Or Turkey* all Edd., except GL; *sure* most Edd., *sore* only FGL. — 72. *all naught* ABCDE, *all is naught* FGHI, *all's naught* KL. — 80. *knights* DE. — 81. For the monosyllabic pronunciation of *daughter* cp. *Faire Em*, I. 4. 55. — 82. *Nunry* to be pronounced as a trisyllable.

*Sir Ar.* There to become a most religious Nunne.

*Mil.* Ile first be buried quicke.

85

*Sir Ar.* To spend her beauty in most priuate prayers.

*Mil.* Ile sooner be a sinner in forsaking

Mother and father.

*Sir Ar.* How dost like my plot?

*L. Dor.* Exceeding well; but is it your intent

Shee shall continue there?

90

*Sir Ar.* Continue there? Ha, ha, that were a iest!

You know a virgin may continue there

A twelue moneth and a day onely on triall.

There shall my daughter soiourne some three moneths,

And in meane time Ile compasse a faire match

95

Twixt youthfull Ierningham, the lusty heire

Of Sir Raph Ierningham, dwelling in the forrest.

I thinke they'le both come hither with Mouchensey.

*L. Dor.* Your care argues the loue you beare our childe;

I will subscribe to any thing youle haue me.

[*Exeunt.* 100

*Mil.* You will subscribe to it! Good, good, tis well;

Loue hath two chaires of state, heauen and hell.

My dear Mouchensey, thou my death shalt rue,

Ere to thy heart Milliscent proue vntrue.

[*Exit.*

## SCENE II.

*Enter* BLAGUE.

*Host.* Ostlers, you knaues and commanders, take the horses of the knights and competitors: your honourable hulkes haue put into harborough, theile take in fresh water here, and I haue prouided cleane chamber-pots. *Via*, they come!

*Enter* SIR RICHARD MOUNCHENSEY, SIR RAPH IERNINGHAM, *young* FRANKE IERNINGHAM, RAYMOND MOUNCHENSEY, PETER FABELL, *and* BILBO.

84. Prefix om. B. — 93. *onely* om. L. — 99. *beare your childe* EFG. — 100. *Exeunt.* The stage-direction is put after l. 98 in ABC; *Exeunt Sir Arthur and Dorcas* IKL; om. in DEFGH. — 101. *good* only once in GHI. — 104. *Exeunt* G.

SCENE II. *Scene III.* Tieck. — 4. *Via they come* printed as stage-direction in Edd., *voyez — they come* G.

5 *Host.* The destinies be most neate Chamberlaines to these swaggering puritanes, knights of the subsidy.

*Sir Rich.* God a mercy, good mine host.

*Sir Raph.* Thankes, good host Blague.

*Host.* Roome for my case of pistolles, that haue Greeke  
10 and Latine bullets in them; let me cling to your flanks, my nimble Giberalters, and blow wind in your values to make them swell bigger. Ha, Ile caper in mine owne fee-simple. Away with puntillioes and Orthography! I serue the good Duke of Norfolke. Bilbo, *Titere tu, patulae recubans sub teg-*  
15 *mine fagi.*

*Bil.* Truly, mine host, Bilbo, though he be somewhat out of fashion, will be your onely blade still. I haue a villanous sharp stomacke to slice a breakfast.

*Host.* Thou shalt haue it without any more discontinuance,  
20 releases, or attournement. What! we know our termes of hunting and the sea-card.

*Bil.* And doe you serue the good Duke of Norfolke still?

*Host.* Still, and still, and still, my souldier of S. Quintins! Come, follow me; I haue Charles waine below in a but of  
25 sacke, 't will glister like your Crab-fish.

*Bil.* You haue fine Scholler-like tearmes; your Coopers Dictionarie is your onely booke to study in a celler, a man shall finde very strange words in it. Come, my host, lets serue the good Duke of Norfolke.

30 *Host.* And still, and still, and still, my boy, Ile serue the good Duke of Norfolke. [Exeunt HOST and BILBO.]

Enter SIR ARTHUR CLARE, HARRY CLARE and MILLISCENT.

*Sir Raph.* Good Sir Arthur Clare!

*Sir Ar.* What Gentleman is that? I know him not.

*Sir Rich.* Tis M. Fabell, Sir, a Cambridge scholler,

35 My sonnes deere friend.

*Sir Ar.* Sir, I intreat you know me.

11. *Giberalters* EFG. — 14. The words *Titere tu* &c. are given to Bilbo in D and the rest, the word *Bilbo* being erroneously taken for a prefix. — 19. *discontinuance* BD. — 20. *release* L. — 23. *S. Quintus* AC. — 25. *sacke, I will* BDEFGK. — 31. No stage-direction in most Edd. In KL *Enter Sir Arthur Clare, Harry Clare, and Milliscent.*

*Fab.* Command me, sir; I am affected to you  
For your Mounchenseys sake.

*Sir Ar.* Alas, for him,  
I not respect whether he sinke or swim! ✓  
A word in priuate, Sir Ralph Ierningham.

*Ray.* Methinks your father looketh strangely on me: 40  
Say, loue, why are you sad?

*Mil.* I am not, sweete;  
*Passion* is strong, when woe with woe doth meete.

*Sir Ar.* Shall's in to breakfast? After wee'l conclude  
The cause of this our comming: in and feed,  
And let that vsher a more serious deed. ✓ 45

*Mil.* Whilst you desire his grieffe, my heart shall bleed. ✓

*Y. Ier.* Raymond Mounchensey, come, be frolick, friend,  
This is the day thou hast expected long.

*Ray.* Pray God, deere Ierningham, it proue so happy.

*Y. Ier.* There's nought can alter it! Be merry, lad! 50

*Fab.* There's nought shall alter it! Be liuely, Raymond!  
Stand any opposition gainst thy hope,  
Art shall confront it with her largest scope. [Exeunt.

### SCENE III.

PETER FABELL, *solus.*

*Fab.* Good old Mounchensey, is thy hap so ill,  
That for thy bounty and thy royall parts  
Thy kind alliance should be held in scorne,  
And after all these promises my Clare  
Refuse to giue his daughter to thy sonne, 5  
Onely because thy Reuenues cannot reach  
To make her dowage of so rich a ioynture  
As can the heire of wealthy Ierningham?  
And therefore is the false foxe now in hand  
To strike a match betwixt her and th' other; 10

41. *are you so sad* C. — 42. *woe doe mete* E. — 47, 50. Given to *Y. Clare* in L. — 49. *deere Harry Clare* Edd. — 50. *nought shall alter* C. — 53. *Exeunt, save Fabel* L.

SCENE III. 4. *promises by Clare* Edd., corr. by L. — 10. *the other* F and the rest.

- And the old gray-beards now are close together,  
 Plotting it in the Garden. Is't euen so?  
 Raymond Mounchensey, boy, haue thou and I  
 Thus long at Cambridge read the liberall Arts, ✓  
 15 The Metaphisickes, Magicke, and those parts  
 Of the most secret deepe Philosophy?  
 Haue I so many melancholy nights  
 Watch'd on the top of Peter-house highest tower,  
 And come we backe vnto our natie home,  
 20 For want of skill to lose the wench thou lou'st?  
 Weele first hang Enfield in such rings of miste  
 As neuer rose from any dampish fenne:  
 Ile make the brinde sea to rise at Ware,  
 And drowne the marshes vnto Stratford bridge;  
 25 Ile driue the Deere from Waltham in their walkes,  
 And scatter them like sheepe in euery field.  
 We may perhaps be crost; but, if we be,  
 He shall crosse the Deuill, that but crosses me.

*Enter* RAYMOND, *yong* IERNINGHAM and *yong* CLARE.

- But here comes Raymond, disconsolate and sad,  
 30 And heeres the gallant that must haue the wench.  
*I. Ier.* I pri'thee, Raymond, leaue these solemne dumps:  
 Reuiue thy spirits, thou that before hast beene  
 More watchfull then the day-proclayming Cocke,  
 As sportiue as a Kid, as francke and merry  
 35 As mirth herselfe!  
 If ought in me may thy content procure,  
 It is thine owne, thou mayst thy selfe assure.  
*Ray.* Ha, Ierningham, if any but thy selfe  
 Had spoke that word, it would haue come as cold  
 40 As the bleake Northerne winds upon the face  
 Of winter.

21. *I'll first L.* — *Enuill* most Edd., *Enuill C.*, *Enfield L.* — 23. *brinde* to be pronounced *brinèd*; *brinish* FG. — 28. [Stage-dir.] *Enter Raymond and yong Ierningham* most Edd., and *young Clare* only added in FG. — 29. *disconsolate* DE. — 30. *And heere comes the Gallant must haue* EFG. — 31. The prefix *Ier.* om. in ABC. — 40. *wind* C. — 40, 41. As one line in FG. — 41—46. Printed as five lines in L, ending *power* | *thee* | *lips* | *won* | *cannot*.

From thee they haue some power vpon my blood;  
 Yet being from thee, had but that hollow sound  
 Come from the lips of any liuing man,  
 It might haue won the credite of mine eare;  
 From thee it cannot. 45

*F. Ier.* If I vnderstand thee, I am a villain:  
 What, dost thou speake in Parables to thy friends?

*F. Cla.* Come, boy, and make me this same groning loue,  
 Troubled with stitches and the cough a'th lungs, 50  
 That wept his eyes out when he was a Childe,  
 And euer since hath shot at hudman-blind,  
 Make her leape, caper, ierke, and laugh, and sing,  
 And play me horse-trickes;  
 Make Cupid wanton as his mothers doue: 55  
 But in this sort, boy, I would haue thee loue.

*Fab.* Why, how now, Mad cap? What, my lusty Franke,  
 So neere a wife, and will not tell your friend?  
 But you will to this geere in hugger-mugger;  
 Art thou turnde miser, Rascall, in thy loues? 60

*F. Ier.* Who, I? z'sblood, what should all you see in me,  
 that I should looke like a married man, ha? am I balde? are  
 my legs too little for my hose? If I feele any thing in my  
 forehead, I am a villain. Doe I weare a night-cap? doe I  
 bend in the hams? What dost thou see in mee, that I should 65  
 be towards marriage, ha?

*F. Cla.* What, thou married? let me looke vpon thee, Rogue;

42. *power* a monosyllable here. — *vpon*] of EF, on GHI. — 48. *friend*  
 G and the rest. — 50. *o'th* D and the rest. — 56. *But*, in Edd. — 61—66.  
 Printed partly as verse in ABC, the lines ending at *in me* | *ha* | *hose* | *I*  
*am* | . The rest is printed as prose. In DEFGHI the passage is printed  
 in six lines, divided at *me* | *ha* | *hose* | *villaine* | *hams* | *ha*. If, indeed, the  
 passage is to be considered as verse corrupted into prose, we should per-  
 haps scan it: *Who I?* | *Z'sblood, what should all you see in mee, that*  
*I should* | *Looke like a married man?* *ha, am I balde?* | *Are my legs too little,*  
*for my hose?* *If I* | *Feele anything in my forehead, I am* | *A villain; doe*  
*I weare a night-cap?* *doe* | *I bend i'th hams?* *What doest thou see in*  
*mee* | *That I should be towards marriage, ha?* We have thought it best  
 to follow KL and print the whole passage as prose. — 66. *toward* C. —  
 67—69. Apparently a prose-passage (KL). In ABC divided at *thee* | *how* |  
*company* | *in* | .

who has giuen out this of thee? how camst thou into this ill name? What company hast thou bin in, Rascall?

- 70 *Fab.* You are the man, sir, must haue Millescent,  
The match is making in the Garden now;  
Her ioynture is agreed on, and th' old men,  
Your fathers, meane to lanch their busie bags,  
But in meane time to thrust Mountchensey off.  
75 For colour of this new intended match,  
Faire Millescent to Cheston must be sent,  
To take the approbation for a Nun.  
Nere looke vpon me, Lad, the match is done.

- F. Ier.* Raymond Mountchensey, now I touch thy grieve  
80 With the true feeling of a zealous friend.  
And as for faire and beauteous Millescent,  
With my vaine breath I will not seeke to slubber  
Her angell-like perfections; but thou know'st  
That Essex hath the Saint that I adore.  
85 Where ere did we meete thee and wanton springs,  
That like a wag thou hast not laught at me,  
And with regardles iesting mockt my loue?  
How many a sad and weary summer night  
My sighs haue drunke the dew from off the earth,  
90 And I haue taught the Nightingale to wake,  
And from the meadowes sprung the earely Larke  
An houre before she should haue list to sing:  
I haue loaded the poore minutes with my moanes,  
That I haue made the heauy slow-pasde houres  
95 To hang like heauie clogs vpon the day.  
But, deere Mounchensey, had not my affection  
Seazde on the beauty of another dame,  
Before I'de wrong the chase, and o'regiue th' loue

68. *giuen this out of* BD and the rest. — 69. *ill-name* L. — 73. *pursy bags* G. — 81. *And as for thy fair beauteous* G. — 85—86. *Where ere did'st meete me, but we two were Iouiall, | But like a wag &c.* BDE; *Where ere didst meet me, that we two were jovial, | But like a wag &c.* F and the rest. — 88. *How*] *Now* ABCDEF; *summer's night* GHIK. — 89. *sights* C. — 90. *And om.* AC. — 91. *spring* AC. — 92. *list*] *rest* AC. — 98. *Before I would vnage the chase, and ouer giue loue* A, *Before I'de wrong the chase, and o'regiue loue* C, *Before I would wrong the chase and leaue the loue* BDEFG, *Before I'd wrong the chase and leaue the loue* KL.

Of one so worthy and so true a friend,  
 I will abiure both beauty and her sight, 100  
 And will in loue become a counterfeit.

*Ray.* Deere Ierningham, thou hast begot my life,  
 And from the mouth of hell, where now I sate,  
 I feele my spirit rebound against the stars:  
 Thou hast conquerd me, deere friend; in my free soule 105  
 Neither time nor death can by their power controule.

*Fab.* Franke Ierningham, thou art a gallant boy;  
 And were he not my pupill, I would say  
 He were as fine a metled Gentleman,  
 Of as free spirit, and of as fine a temper 110  
 As is in England; and he is a man  
 That very richly may deserue thy loue.  
 But, noble Clare, this while of our discourse,  
 What may Mouchenseys honour to thy selfe  
 Exact vpon the measure of thy grace? 115

*V. Cla.* Raymond Mouchensey? I would haue thee know,  
 He does not breath this ayre,  
 Whose loue I cherish, and whose soule I loue  
 More then Mouchenseyes:  
 Nor euer in my life did see the man 120  
 Whom, for his wit and many vertuous parts,  
 I thinke more worthy of my sisters loue.  
 But since the matter growes vnto this passe,  
 I must not seeme to crosse my Fathers will;  
 But when thou list to visit her by night, 125  
 My horses sadled, and the stable doore  
 Stands ready for thee; vse them at thy pleasure.  
 In honest marriage wed her frankly, boy,  
 And if thou getst her, lad, God giue thee joy!

*Ray.* Then, care, away! Let fates my fall pretend, 130  
 Backt with the fauours of so true a friend!

105. friend, and my free soul G. — 106. Their time or death AB, Their time nor death C, There time or death DEF, Nor time nor death G, There time, nor death HIKL. — 110. and as GHI. — 111. Dropped out in A; As is] As any G. — 117—119. As two lines in L, divided at cherish. — 122. more worthy] no more B. — 126. horse is saddled D and the rest. — 130. The prefix Ray. wanting in B; Fate D and the rest.

- Fab.* Let vs alone, to bussell for the set; ✓  
 For age and craft with wit and Art haue met.  
 Ile make my spirits to dance such nightly Iigs  
 135 Along the way twixt this and Totnam crosse,  
 The Carriers Iades shall cast their heauie packs,  
 And the strong hedges scarce shall keepe them in:  
 The Milke-maides Cuts shall turne the wenches off,  
 And lay the Dossers tumbling in the dust:  
 140 The franke and merry London Prentises,  
 That come for creame and lusty country cheere,  
 Shall lose their way; and, scrambling in the ditches,  
 All night shall whoop and hollow, cry and call,  
 Yet none to other finde the way at all. ‘  
 145 *Ray.* Pursue the proiect, scholler: what we can do  
 To helpe indeauour, ioyne our liues thereto! ~ [*Exeunt.*

## A C T II.

## SCENE I.

*Enter BANKS, SIR IOHN and SMUG.*

- Banks.* Take me with you, good Sir Iohn! A plague on thee,  
 Smug, and thou touchest liquor, thou art founderd straight.  
 What! are your braines alwayes water-milles? must they euer  
 runne round?  
 5 *Smug.* Banks, your ale is a Philistine fox; z’ hart, theres fire  
 i’th taile on’t; you are a rogue to charge vs with Mugs i’th  
 rereward. A plague of this winde; O, it tickles our Cata-  
strophe.  
*Sir Io.* Neighbour Banks of Waltham, and Goodman Smug,  
 10 the honest Smith of Edmonton, as I dwell betwixt you both  
 at Enfield, I know the taste of both your ale houses, they  
 are good both, smart both. Hem, Grasse and hay! we are

133. *haue*] *hath* DEFG. — 134. *sprites* B; *to* om. G; *Iigs* om.  
 C. — 135. *Totnan* C. — 139. *their Dossers* D and the rest. — 143.  
*hallow* D, *hallo* L. — 144. *Yet*] *And* BDEFG. — 146. *Exeunt* first  
 added in D.

SCENE I. *Scene IV.* Tieck. — 5. *is a*] *is as a* E and the rest; *there* C;  
*nounes theres* D and the rest. — 6. *taile* : *out* ABC.

all mortall; lets liue till we die, and be merry; and theres an end.

*Banks.* Well said, Sir Iohn, you are of the same humor 15  
still; and doth the water runne the same way still, boy?

*Smug.* Vulcan was a rogue to him; Sir Iohn, locke, lock,  
lock fast, sir Iohn; so, sir Iohn. Ile one of these yeares, when  
it shall please the Goddesses and the destinies, be drunke in  
your company; thats all now, and God send vs health. Shall 20  
I sweare I loue you?

*Sir Io.* No oathes, no oaths, good neighbour Smug;  
Weel wet our lips together in hugge;  
Carrouse in priuate, and eleuate the hart,  
And the liuer and the lights, and the lights, marke you me, 25  
within vs; for hem, Grasse and hay! we are all mortall, lets  
liue till we die, and bee Merry, and thers an end.

*Banks.* But to our former motion about stealing some venison;  
whither goe we?

*Sir Io.* Into the forrest, neighbour Banks, into Brians walke, 30  
the madde keeper.

*Smug.* Z' blood! Ile tickle your keeper.

*Banks.* Yfaith, thou art alwayes drunke when we haue neede  
of thee.

*Smug.* Neede of mee? z' hart! you shall haue neede of mee 35  
alwayes while theres yron in an Anuill.

*Banks.* M. Parson, may the Smith goe, thinke you, being  
in this taking?

*Smug.* Go? Ile goe in spight of all the belles in Waltham.

*Sir Io.* The question is, good neighbour Banks — let 40  
mee see: the Moone shines to night, — ther's not a narrow  
bridge betwixt this and the forrest, — his braine will be settled  
ere night; he may go, he may go, neighbour Banks. Now  
we want none but the company of mine host Blague of the  
George at Waltham; if he were here, our Consort were full. 45

13, 26. *we are not yet all G.* — 13. *till he die B.* — 23. *together and hugge*  
BD and the rest. — 25. *and the lights* only once in EFG. — 31. *madkeeper*  
H, *mad-keeper* KL. — 32. *Blood* D and the rest. — 35. *hart* D and the  
rest. — 36. *there is* F and the rest. — 40. *The question is good, neigh-*  
*bour* L. — 42. *will]* may BD and the rest. — 44. *Blague at the George*  
AC. — 45. *our comfort were full.* I.

Looke where comes my good host, the Duke of Norfolks man!  
and how? and how? a hem, grasse and hay! wee are not  
yet mortall; lets liue till we die, and be merry; and ther's  
an end.

*Enter Host.*

- 50 *Host.* Ha, my Castilian dialogues! and art thou in breath  
stil, boy? Miller, doth the match hold? Smith, I see by thy  
eyes thou hast bin reading little Geneua print: but wend we  
merrily to the forrest, to steale some of the kings Deere! Ile  
meet you at the time apointed. Away, I haue Knights and  
55 Colonells at my house, and must tend the Hungarions. If we  
be scard in the forrest, weele meete in the Church-porch at  
Enfield; ist Correspondent?

*Banks.* Tis well; but how, if any of vs should be taken?

*Smug.* He shall haue ransome, by the Lord.

- 60 *Host.* Tush, the knaue keepers are my bosonians and my  
pensioners. Nine a clock! be valiant, my little Gogmagogs;  
Ile fence with all the lustices in Hartfordshire. Ile haue a  
Bucke till I die; Ile slay a Doe while I liue. Hold your bow  
straight and steady! I serue the good Duke of Norfolke.

- 65 *Smug.* O rare! who, ho, ho, boy!

- Sir Io.* Peace, neighbor Smug! You see this is a Boore, a  
Boore of the country, an illiterate Boore, and yet the Cittizen  
of good fellowes. Come, lets prouide; a hem, Grasse and  
hay! wee are not yet all mortall; weel liue till we die, and  
70 be merry; and theres an end. Come, Smug!

*Smug.* Good night, Waltham — who, ho, ho, boy! [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.

*Enter the Knights and Gentlemen from breakfast againe.*

*Sir Rich.* Nor I for thee, Clare, not of this.

What? hast thou fed me all this while with shalles?

And com'st to tell me now, thou lik'st it not?

48. *let vs liue* F and the rest. — 52. *reading a little* D and the rest. —  
55. *Hungarians* F and the rest. — 56. *scatter'd* G. — 59. *ransome by my*  
*Sword* D and the rest. — 60. *knaues* D and the rest, except L; *my bonasosis*  
DEF; *my bona socias* G and the rest. — 66. *is a* om. BD and the rest. —  
68. *good-fellows* KL; *lets prouide a hen, grass* most Edd. The mistake is  
corrected in GKL.

*Sir Ar.* I doe not hold thy offer competent;  
Nor doe I like th' assurance of thy land, 5  
The title is so brangled with thy debts.

*Sir Rich.* Too good for thee; and, knight, thou knowest it well,  
I fawnd not on thee for thy goods, not I;  
Tw'as thine owne motion; that thy wife doth know.

*L. Dor.* Husband, it was so; he lies not in that. 10

*Sir Ar.* Hold thy chat, queane.

*Sir Rich.* To which I hearkned willingly, and the rather,  
Because I was perswaded it proceeded  
From loue thou bor'st to me and to my boy;  
And gau'st him free accesse vnto thy house, 15  
Where he hath not behaude him to thy childe,  
But as befits a Gentleman to doe:

Nor is my poore distressed state so low,  
That Ile shut vp my doores, I warrant thee.

*Sir Ar.* Let it suffice, Mounchensey, I mislike it; 20  
Nor thinke thy sonne a match fit for my childe.

*Sir Rich.* I tell thee, Clare, his blood is good and cleere,  
As the best drop that panteth in thy veines:  
But for this maide, thy faire and vertuous childe,  
She is no more disparagd by thy basenes 25  
Then the most orient and the pretious iewell,  
Which still retaines his lustre and his beauty,  
Although a slaue were owner of the same.

*Sir Ar.* She is the last is left me to bestow,  
And her I meane to dedicate to God. 30

*Sir Rich.* You doe, sir?

*Sir Ar.* Sir, sir, I doe, she is mine owne.

*Sir Rich.* And pity she is so! [Aside.  
Damnation dog thee and thy wretched pelfe!

*Sir Ar.* Not thou, Mounchensey, shalt bestow my childe.

*Sir Rich.* Neither shouldst thou bestow her where thou mean'st. 35

SCENE II. *Scene V.* Tieck. — 5. *the assurance* F and the rest; *of thy loue* ABC. — 7, 8. Divided at *knowst it* EFG. — 20, 21. Added to Moun.'s speech in ABC. — 22. *To tell thee* ABC. — 25. *no om.* BDE. — 26. *and most precious* L. — 28. *were the owner* C. — 33. *damnation, dog* Edd.; *pelfe aside* ABC, *aside* a stage-direction in D and the rest. — 35. *shall'st* L.

*Sir Ar.* What wilt thou doe?

*Sir Rich.*

No matter, let that bee;

I wil doe that, perhaps, shall anger thee:

Thou hast wrongd my loue, and, by Gods blessed Angell,

Thou shalt well know it.

*Sir Ar.*

Tut, braue not me!

40 *Sir Rich.* Braue thee, base Churle! Were't not for man-hood

I say no more, but that there be some by [sake —

Whose blood is hotter then ours is,

Which, being stird, might make vs both repent

This foolish meeting. But, Harry Clare,

45 Although thy father haue abused my friendship,

Yet I loue thee, I doe, my noble boy,

I doe, yfaith.

*L. Dor.* I, doe, do,

Fill all the world with talke of vs, man, man;

50 I neuer lookt for better at your hands.

*Fab.* I hoped your great experience and your yeeres

Would haue prou'de patience rather to your soule,

Then with this frantique and vntamed passion

To whet their skeens. And, but for that

55 I hope their friendships are too well confirmd,

And their minds temperd with more kindly heat,

Then for their froward parents soares,

That they should breake forth into publike brawles.

Howere the rough hand of th' vntoward world

60 Hath moulded your proceedings in this matter,

Yet I am sure the first intent was loue:

Then since the first spring was so sweet and warme,

Let it die gently; ne're kill it with a scorne.

*Ray.* O thou base world, how leprous it that soule

65 That is once lim'd in that polluted mudde!

38. *Gods*] a DEFG. — 42. *Whose youthful blood* pres. Edd. conj.; cp. Sh., Rich. II., I. 3. 83: *Rouse up thy youthful blood*, and Rom., II. 5. 12: *Had she affections and warm youthful blood*. — 44. *Raph Clare* ABCDE. — 45. *hath* E and the rest. — 51. *hope* ABC. — 54. *and but that* ABC. — 57. *forward* B; *their forward Parents frowardnesse* DEFGKL, *their froward parent's frowardness* HI. — 59. *the untoward* F and the rest. — 63. *with scorn* L. — 65. *in thy polluted* G.

Oh, sir Arthur, you haue startled his free actiue spirits  
 With a too sharpe spur for his minde to beare.  
 Haue patience, sir; the remedy to woe  
 Is to leaue what of force we must forgoe.

*Mil.* And I must take a twelue moneths approbation, 70  
 That in meane time this sole and priuate life  
 At the yeares end may fashion me a wife. ✓  
 But, sweet Mounchensey, ere this yeare be done,  
 Thou'st be a frier, if that I be a Nun. ✓  
 And, father, ere young lerninghams Ile bee, 75  
 I will turne mad to spight both him and thee.

*Sir Ar.* Wife, come to horse, and, huswife, make you ready;  
 For, if I liue, I sweare by this good light, ✓  
 Ile see you lodgde in Chesson house to night. [*Exeunt.*]

*Sir Rich.* Raymond, away! Thou seest how matters fall. 80  
 Churle, hell consume thee, and thy pelfe, and all!

*Fab.* Now, M. Clare, you see how matters fadge;  
 Your Milliscent must needes be made a Nun.  
 Well, sir, we are the men must plie this match:  
 Hold you your peace, and be a looker on, 85  
 And send her vnto Chesson where he will;  
 Ile send mee fellowes of a handfull hie  
 Into the Cloysters where the Nuns frequent,  
 Shall make them skip like Does about the Dale,  
 And make the Lady prioressé of the house 90  
 To play at leape-frogge, naked in their smockes,  
 Untill the merry wenches at their masse  
 Cry teehee weehee;  
 And tickling these mad Lasses in their flankes,  
 Shall sprawle, and squeake, and pinch their fellow Nunnes. 95  
 Be liuely, boyes, before the Wench we lose,  
 Ile make the Abbas weare the Cannons hose. [*Exeunt.*]

66. *spirit* L. — 67. *With too sharp a spur* G. — 69. *what*] *that* D  
 and the rest; *we must of force* FG. — 71. *in the mean* HIKL. — 79. *this*  
*night* C; *Exeunt* first in D. — 84. *the match* E and the rest. — 86. *when*  
*he will* L. — 90, 91. Divided at *play* in ABC. — 91. *in her smock* GL. —  
 96. *we'll lose* G.

## SCENE III.

*Enter* HARRY CLARE, FRANKE IERNINGHAM, PETER FABELL,  
and MILLESCENT.

*F. Cla.* Spight now hath done her worst; sister, be patient!

*F. Ier.* Forewarnd, poore Raymonds company! O heauen!  
When the composure of weake frailtie meete  
Vpon this mart of durt, o, then weake loue  
5 Must in hir owne vnappines be silent,  
And winck on all deformities.

*Mil.*

Tis well:

Whers Raymond, Brother? Whers my deere Mouchensey?  
Would wee might weepe together and then part;  
Our sighing parle would much ease my heart.

10 *Fab.* Sweete beautie, fould your sorrowes in the thought  
Of future reconcilment. Let your teares  
Shew you a woman; but be no farther spent  
Then from the eyes; for, sweet, experience sayes  
That loue is firme thats flattered with delays.

15 *Mil.* Alas, sir, thinke you I shall ere be his? <sup>v</sup>

*Fab.* As sure as parting smiles on future blisse.  
Yond comes my friend! See, he hath doted  
So long vpon your beautie, that your want  
Will with a pale retirement wast his blood;  
20 For in true loue Musicke doth sweetly dwell:  
Seuerd, these lesse worlds beare within them hell.

*Enter* RAYMOND MOUCHENSEY.

*Ray.* Harry and Francke, you are enioynd to waine  
Your friendship from mee; we must part the breath.  
Of all aduised corruption pardon mee!  
25 Faith, I must say so; you may thinke I loue you;  
I breath not, rougher spight do seuer vs;

SCENE III. *Scene VI.* Tieck. — 2. *company to heauen* ABC. —  
3. *meet[s]* L. — 9. *parley* BDEFGK; *One sighing parley* L. Pronounce  
*par'le*. — 12. *be om.* L.; *further* CDEF. — 14. *for, sweet experience* H, *for*  
*sweet experience* KL. — 16. *parting* ABC. — 17. *Yonder* C. — 22—24.  
Printed as prose in ABCDE. — 23, 24. *part the breath* Of all a. c., *pardon*  
*mee.* all Edd. — 24. *of ill advis'd* L. — 26. *Tho' I breathe not, and tho' rough*  
*spite do seuer us* G; *to seuer* L.

— Weele meete by stealth, sweet friends, by stealth you twaine;  
Kisses are sweetest got with struggling paine.

*F. Ier.* Our friendship dies not Raymond.

*Ray.*

Pardon mee:

I am busied; I haue lost my faculties, 30  
And buried them in Milliscentes cleere eyes.

*Mil.* Alas, sweete Loue, what shall become of me?

I must to Chesson to the Nunery,  
I shall nere see thee more.

*Ray.*

How, sweete?

Ile be thy votary, weele often meete: 35  
This kisse diuides vs, and breathes soft adiew, —  
This be a double charme to keepe both true.

*Fab.* Haue done: your fathers may chance spie your parting.  
Refuse not you by any meanes, good sweetnes,  
To goe vnto the Nunnery; farre from hence 40  
Must wee beget your loues sweete happines.  
You shall not stay there long; your harder bed  
Shall be more soft when Nun and Maide are dead.

*Enter BILBO.*

*Ray.* Now, sirra, whats the matter?

*Bil.* Marry, you must to horse presently; that villanous 45  
old gowty churle, Sir Arthur Clare, longs till he bee at the  
Nunry.

*F. Cla.* How, sir?

*Bil.* O, I cry you mercy, he is your father, sir, indeed; but  
I am sure that theres lesse affinitie betwixt your two natures 50  
then there is betweene a broker and a Cutpurse.

*Ray.* Bring my gelding, sirra.

*Bil.* Well, nothing greeues me, but for the poore wench;  
she must now cry *vale* to Lobster pies, hartichokes, and all  
such meates of mortalitie; poore gentlewoman, the signe must 55

27. *by steale* ABC; *friend* most Edd., *friends* only FG. — 28. *with*] *by*  
D and the rest. — 39. *Refuse you not* EFG. — 40. *vnto*] *into* G and the  
rest; *farre*] *for* D and the rest. — 46. *Sir Richard Clare* all Edd. — 49. The  
prefix *Bil.* om. ABCDE; *sir* om. CHI. — 50. *betweene* C. — 52. *Bring me*  
*my* F and the rest.

not be in *Virgo* any longer with her, and that me grieues  
ful wel.

Poor Milliscent  
Must pray and repent:  
60 O fatalle wonder!  
Sheele now be no fatter,  
Loue must not come at her,  
Yet she shall be kept vnder. [Exit.

*Y. Ier.* Farewell, deere Raymond.

*Y. Cla.* Friend, adew.

*Mil.* Deere sweete,

65 No ioy enioyes my hearte till wee next meete. [Exit.

*Fab.* Well, Raymond, now the tide of discontent  
Beats in thy face; but, er't be long, the wind  
Shall turne the flood. Wee must to Waltham Abby,  
And as faire Milliscent in Cheston liues,  
70 A most vnwilling Nun, so thou shalt there  
Become a beardles Nouice; to what end,  
Let time and future accidents declare:  
Tast thou my sleights, thy loue Ile onely share.

*Ray.* Turne frier? Come, my good Counsellor, lets goe,  
75 Yet that disguise will hardly shrowd my woe. [Exit.

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.

*Enter the Prioresse of Cheston, with a Nun or two, SIR ARTHUR  
CLARE, SIR RALPH IERNINGHAM, HENRY and FRANCKE, the Lady,  
and BILBO, with MILLISCENT.*

*L. Dor.* Madam,  
The loue vnto this holy Sister-hood,  
And our confirmd opinion of your zeale  
Hath truely wonne vs to bestow our Childe  
5 Rather on this then any neighbouring Cell.

*Pri.* Iesus, Daughter Maries childe,

56. *grieues fall well* BC; *grieues; farewell* D and the rest. — 65. *Now*  
*ioy* B. — 69. *Chesson* DE. — 72. *future*] further F, farther G.

SCENE I. *Scene VII.* Tieck. — 6. *Iesus' Daughter, Mary's Child*, L.

Holy Matron, woman milde,  
 For thee a masse shall still be sayd,  
 Euery Sister drop a bead;  
 And those again succeeding them 10  
 For you shall sing a Requiem.

*F. Ier.* The wench is gone, Harry; she is no more a woman  
 of this world. Marke her well, shee lookes like a Nun already.  
 What thinkst on her?

*F. Cla.* By my faith, her face comes handsomly to 't. But 15  
 peace, lets heare the rest.

*Sir Ar.* Madam, for a twelue-months approbation,  
 Wee meane to make this triall of our childe.  
 Your care and our deere blessing, in meane time,  
 Wee pray, may prosper this intended worke. 20

*Pri.* May your happie soule be blithe,  
 That so truely pay your Tithe:  
 He who many children gaue,  
 Tis fit that he one child should haue.  
 Then, faire Virgin, heare my spell, 25  
 For I must your duty tell.

*Mil.* Good men and true, stand together, and heare your charge!

*Pri.* First, a mornings take your booke,  
 The glasse wherein your selfe must looke;  
 Your young thoughts, so proud and iolly, 30  
 Must be turnd to motions holy;  
 For your buske, attires, and toyes  
 Haue your thoughts on heauenly ioyes;  
 And for all your follies past  
 You must doe penance, pray, and fast. 35

*Bil.* Let her take heed of fasting; and if euer she hurt her  
 selfe with praying, Ile nere trust beast.

*Mil.* This goes hard, berladye!

*Pri.* You shal ring the sacring Bell,  
 Keepe your howers, and toll your knell, 40  
 Rise ad midnight to your Mattins,

11. *riug* A, *ring* B. — 18. *this*] *the* EFG. — 21. *happie* om. EFG. —  
 23. *He that* D and the rest. — 32. *busk attires* KL. — 39. *sacring*] *sauing*  
 A. — 40. *tell* all Edd. except L.

Read your Psalter, sing your Lattins,  
 And when your blood shall kindle pleasure,  
 Scourge your selfe in plenteous measure.

45 *Mil.* Worse and worse, by Saint Mary!

*F. Ier.* Sirra Hal, how does she hold her countenance?  
 Wel, goe thy wayes, if euer thou proue a Nunne, Ile build  
 an Abby.

*F. Cla.* She may be a Nun; but if euer shee prooue an  
 50 Anchoresse, Ile dig her graue with my nailes.

*F. Ier.* To her againe, mother!

*F. Cla.* Hold thine owne, wench!

*Pri.* You must read the mornings Masse,  
 You must creepe vnto the Crosse,  
 55 Put cold Ashes on your head,  
 Haue a Haire-cloth for your bed.

*Bil.* She had rather haue a man in her bed.

*Pri.* Bid your beads, and tell your needs,  
 Your holy *Avies*, and your Creedes;  
 60 Holy maide, this must be done,  
 If you meane to liue a Nun.

*Mil.* The holy maide will be no Nun.

*Sir Ar.* Madam, we haue some busines of import,  
 And must be gone.  
 65 Wilt please you take my wife into your closet,  
 Who further will acquaint you with my mind;  
 And so, good madam, for this time Adiew. [*Exeunt women.*]

*Sir Raph.* Well now, Francke Ierningham, how sayest thou?  
 To be brieft, —

What wilt thou say for all this, if we two,  
 70 Her father and my selfe, can bring about,  
 That we conuert this Nun to be a wife,  
 And thou the husband to this pretty Nun?  
 How then, my Lad? ha, Francke, it may be done.

*F. Cla.* I, now it workes.

75 *F. Ier.* O God, sir, you amaze mee at your words;

53. *morning masse* B and the rest. — 58. *Bind your beads* all Edd. —  
 66. *farther* G and the rest. — 68. *Francke Clare* ABCDE; printed as two  
 lines in HIKL, the first ending at *thou*. — 70. *Thy father* ABCDE. —  
 75. *words* om. K.

Thinke with your selfe, Sir, what a thing it were  
 To cause a Recluse to remoue her vow:  
 A maymed, contrite, and repentant soule,  
 Euer mortified with fasting and with prayer,  
 Whose thoughts, euen as hir eyes, are fixd on heauen, 80  
 To drawe a virgin, thus deuour'd with zeale,  
 Backe to the world: O impious deede!  
 Nor by the Canon Law can it be done  
 Without a dispensation from the Church;  
 Besides, she is so prone vnto this life, 85  
 As sheele euen shreeke to heare a husband namde.

*Bill.* I, a poore innocent shee! Well, heres no knauery; hee  
 flowts the old fooles to their teeth.

*Sir Raph.* Boy, I am glad to heare  
 Thou mak'st such scruple of that conscience; 90  
 And in a man so young as is your selfe,  
 I promise you tis very seldome seene.  
 But Franke, this is a tricke, a meere deuise,  
 A sleight plotted betwixt her father and my selfe,  
 To thrust Mouncenseyes nose besides the cushion; 95  
 That, being thus debard of all accesse,  
 Time yet may worke him from her thoughts,  
 And giue thee ample scope to thy desires.

*Bill.* A plague on you both for a couple of Iewes!

*F. Cla.* How now, Franke, what say you to that? 100

*F. Ier.* Let me alone, I warrant thee.

Sir,  
 Assurde that this motion doth proceede  
 From your most kinde and fatherly affection,  
 I do dispose my liking to your pleasure: 105  
 But for it is a matter of such moment  
 As holy marriage, I must craue thus much,  
 To haue some conference with my ghostly father,  
 Frier Hildersham, here by, at Waltham Abby,

77. renounce GHI. — 78. maymed] sainted L. — 81. deuout D and the rest. — 87. innocent, she L. — 90. of thy conscience L. — 93. is om. B. — 94. Scan: *A sleight | plott(ed) 'twixt | her fâth | er* etc. — 95. beside BCDEKL. — 102. *Sir* placed in a separate line by the pres. Edd. — 103. *Assurde* to be pronounced as a trisyllable.

- 110 To be absolude of things, that it is fit  
 None only but my confessor should know.  
*Sir Raph.* With all my heart. He is a reuerend man;  
 And to morrow-morning wee will meet all at the Abby,  
 Where by th' opinion of that reuerend man  
 115 Wee will proceede; I like it passing well.  
 Till then we part, boy; I thinke of it; farewell!  
 A parents care no mortall tongue can tell. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II.

*Enter* SIR ARTHUR CLARE, *and* RAYMOND MOUNCHENSEY, *like a Frier.*

- Sir Ar.* Holy yong Nouice, I haue told you now  
 My full intent, and doe refer the rest  
 To your professed secrecy and care:  
 And see,  
 5 Our serious speech hath stolne vpon the way,  
 That we are come vnto the Abby gate.  
 Because I know Mountchensey is a foxe,  
 That craftily doth ouerlooke my doings,  
 Ile not be seene, not I; tush, I haue done,  
 10 I had a Daughter, but shee's now a Nun.  
 Farewell, deere sonne, farewell. [Exit.]  
*Ray.* Fare you well! — I, you haue done!  
 Your daughter, sir, shall not be long a Nun.  
 O my rare Tutor, neuer mortall braine  
 15 Plotted out such a masse of pollicie;  
 And my deere bosome is so great with laughter,  
 Begot by his simplicity and error,  
 My soule is fallen in labour with her ioy.  
 O my true friends, Franke Ierningham and Clare,  
 20 Did you now know but how this iest takes fire —

112—117 wrongly given to *Sir Arthur* in ABCDE. — 112—114. Printed as prose in Edd., only L divides the lines at *man | abbey | man |*. — 112. *hees* BCDE. — 114. *the opinion* F and the rest. — 116. *boy. Ay, think* L. — 117. *Exeunt* om. FG.

SCENE II. *Scene VIII.* Tieck, — 10. *she is* G. — 11. *deere onne* B, *deare one* C. — 15. *masse] plot* DEHIK, *piece* FG, *mesh* L. — 18. in om. B. — 19. *true* om. E and the rest. — 20. *Did you but know, but how* D and the rest, except G: *Did you but know, how this.*

That good sir Arthur, thinking me a Nouice,  
 Had euen powrd himselfe into my bosome,  
 O, you would vent your spleenes with tickling mirth!  
 But, Raymond, peace, and haue an eye about,  
 For feare perhaps some of the Nuns looke out. 25  
     Peace and charity within,  
     Neuer toucht with deadly sin;  
     I cast my holy water pure  
     On this wall and on this doore,  
     That from euill shall defend, 30  
     And keepe you from the vgly fiend:  
     Euill spirit, by night nor day,  
     Shall approch or come this way;  
     Elfe nor Fairy, by this grace,  
     Day nor night shall haunt this place. 35  
 Holy maidens! [Knocke.  
 [Answer within.] Who's that which knocks? ha, who is there?  
 Ray. Gentle Nun, here is a Frier.

*Enter NUN.*

Nun. A Frier without, now Christ vs saue!  
 Holy man, what wouldst thou haue? 40  
 Ray. Holy Mayde, I hither come  
 From Frier and Father Hildersome,  
 By the fauour and the grace  
 Of the Prioress of this place  
 Amongst you all to visit one 45  
 That's come for approbation;  
 Before she was as now you are,  
 The Daughter of Sir Arthur Clare,  
 But since she now became a Nun,  
 Call'd Milliscent of Edmunton. 50  
 Nun. Holy man, repose you there;  
 This newes Ile to our Abbas beare,  
 To tell her what a man is sent,  
 And your message and intent.

28. *my* om. D and the rest; *water poore* ABCDE. — 32. *Spright* D and the rest. — 36. *Holy maidens knocke*, printed as stage-dir. in ABCDEF, first printed as part of Mounchensey's speech in G. — 53. *her* only in CGL.

55 *Ray.* Benedicite.

*Nun.* Benedicite.

[*Exit.*

*Ray.* Doe, my good plumpe wench; if all fall right,  
Ile make your sister-hood one lesse by night. *2<sup>d</sup> wench?*  
Now happy fortune speede this merry drift,

60 I like a wench comes roundly to her shrift.

*Enter LADY and MILLISCENT.*

*L. Dor.* Haue Friers recourse then to the house of Nuns?

*Mil.* Madam, it is the order of this place,

When any Virgin comes for approbation, —

Lest that for feare or such sinister practise

65 Shee should be forcde to vndergoe this vaile,

Which should proceed from conscience and deuotion, —

A visitor is sent from Waltham house,

To take the true confession of the maide.

*L. Dor.* Is that the order? I commend it well:

70 You to your shrift, Ile backe vnto the Cell. *2<sup>d</sup> wench?* [*Exit.*

*Ray.* Life of my soule! bright Angel!

*Mil.* What meanes the Frier?

*Ray.* O Milliscent, tis I.

*Mil.* My heart misgiues me; I should know that voyce.

You? who are you? the holy virgin blesse me!

75 Tell me your name: you shall, ere you confesse me.

*Ray.* Mountchensey, thy true friend.

*Mil.* My Raymond, my deere heart!

Sweete life, giue leaue to my distracted soule,

To wake a little from this swoone of joy. —

80 By what meanes camst thou to assume this shape?

*Ray.* By meanes of Peter Fabell, my kind Tutor,

Who in the habite of Frier Hildersham,

Franke Ierninghams old friend and confessor,

Plotted by Francke, by Harry and my selfe,

85 And so deliuered to Sir Arthur Clare,

Who brought me heere vnto the Abby gate,

To be his Nun-made daughters visitor.

60. [Stage-dir.] *Enter Lady, Milliscent ABC.* — 64. *feare of some sinister C.* — 84. *by Fabell and all Edd.*

*Mil.* You are all sweete traytors to my poore old father.  
 O my deere life! I was a dream't to night  
 That, as I was a-praying in mine Psalter, 90  
 There came a spirit vnto me as I kneeld,  
 And by his strong perswasions tempted me  
 To leaue this Nunry; and methought  
 He came in the most glorious Angell-shape,  
 That mortall eye did euer looke vpon. 95  
 Ha, thou art sure that spirit, for theres no forme  
 Is in mine eye so glorious as thine owne.

*Ray.* O thou Idolatresse, that dost this worship  
 To him whose likenes is but praise of thee!  
 Thou bright vnsetting star, which through this vaile, 100  
 For very enuy, mak'st the Sun looke pale!

*Mil.* Well, Visitor, lest that perhaps my mother  
 Should thinke the Frier too strict in his decrees,  
 I this confesse to my sweet ghostly father:  
 If chast pure loue be sin, I must confesse, 105  
 I haue offended three yeares now with thee.

*Ray.* But doe you yet repent you of the same?

*Mil.* Yfaith, I cannot.

*Ray.* Nor will I absolue thee  
 Of that sweete sin, though it be venial;  
 Yet haue the pennance of a thousand kisses, 110  
 And I enioyne you to this pilgrimage:  
 That in the euening you bestow your selfe  
 Heere in the walke neere to the willow ground,  
 Where Ile be ready both with men and horse  
 To waite your comming, and conuey you hence 115  
 Vnto a lodge I haue in Enfield chase.  
 No more replie, if that you yeeld consent —  
 I see more eyes vpon our stay are bent."

*Mil.* Sweete life, farewell! Tis done: let that suffice;  
 What my tongue failes, I send thee by mine eyes." [*Exit.* 120

*Enter* FABELL, CLARE, and IERNINGHAM.

*F. Ier.* Now, Visitor, how does this new made Nun?

89. a *dreaming* G. — 90. was *praying* B and the rest; in my *Psalter*  
 CE and the rest. — 94. *Angell-shape*. The hyphen added by L.

*Y. Cla.* Come, come, how does she, noble Capouchin?

*Ray.* She may be poore in spirit, but for the flesh,

Tis fatte and plumpe, boyes. Ah, rogues, there is

125 A company of girles would turn you all Friers.

*Fab.* But how, Mountchensey, how, lad, for the wench?

*Ray.* Sounds, lads, yfaith, I thanke my holy habit,

I haue confest her, and the Lady Prioress

Hath giuen me ghostly counsell with her blessing.

130 And how say yee, boyes,

If I be chose the weekely visitor?

*Y. Cla.* Z'blood, sheel haue nere a Nun vnbagd to sing  
masse then.

*Y. Ier.* The Abbot of Waltham will haue as many Children  
135 to put to nurse as he has calues in the Marsh.

*Ray.* Well, to be breefe, the Nun will soone at night turne  
tippit; if I can but deuise to quit her cleanly of the Nunry,  
she is mine owne.

*Fab.* But, Sirra Raymond,

140 What newes of Peter Fabel at the house?

*Ray.* Tush, hees the onely man;

A Necromancer and a Coniurer

That workes for yong Mountchensey altogether;

And if it be not for Fryer Benedicke,

145 That he can crosse him by his learned skill,

The Wench is gone;

Fabell will fetch her out by very magicke.

*Fab.* Stands the winde there, boy? Keepe them in that key,  
The wench is ours before to-morrow day.

150 Well, Harry and Franke, as ye are gentlemen,

Sticke to vs close this once! You know your fathers

Haue men and horse lie ready still at Chesson,

123—125. Printed as two lines, the first ending at *boyes* in most Edd., first set right in K. — 125. *you Friers* all. pres. Edd. conj. — 127. *Sound* ABC. — 128, 129. Printed as prose in ABCDE. — 132. *Blood* D and the rest. — 134. *Waltham-house will* BC. — 136, 137. *turne tippet* most Edd., *tippet* first in K. — 137. *can* om. C. — 139—147. Printed as prose in Edd. — 141. *he* is F and the rest. — 145. *him* by om. C. — 148. *keeps* C. — 150—158. Printed as prose in most Edd., printed as verse in KL. — 150. *Raph* and *Franke* ABCDE.

To watch the coast be cleere, to scowt about,  
 And haue an eye vnto Mountchenseys walks:  
 Therefore you two may houer thereabouts, 155  
 And no man will suspect you for the matter;  
 Be ready but to take her at our hands,  
 Leaue vs to scramble for hir getting out.

*Y. Ier.* Z'bloud, if al Herford-shire were at our heeles,  
 Weele carry her away in spight of them. 160

*Y. Cla.* But whither, Raymond?

*Ray.* To Brians vpper lodge in Enfield Chase;  
 He is mine honest Friend and a tall keeper;  
 Ile send my man vnto him presently  
 T'acquaint him with your comminge and intent. 165

*Fab.* Be breefe and secret!

*Roy.* Soon at night remember  
 You bring your horses to the willow ground.

*Y. Ier.* Tis done; no more!

*Y. Cla.* We will not faile the hower.  
 My life and fortune now lies in your power.

*Fab.* About our busines! Raymond, lets away! 170  
 Thinke of your hower; it drawes well of the day. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.

*Enter* BLAGUE, BANKS, SMUG, and SIR IOHN.

*Host.* Come, yee Hungarian pilchers, we are once more  
 come vnder the *zona torrida* of the Forrest. Lets be resolute,  
 lets flie to and againe; and if the deuill come, weele put him  
 to his Interogatories, and not budge a foote. What? s' foote,  
 ile put fire into you, yee shall all three serue the good Duke 5  
 of Norfolke.

154. *Mountchenseny walks A, Mountchenseys walke C.* — 157. *at your hands C.* — 158. *to scramble G.* — 159, 160. Printed as prose in all Edd. — 159. *Blood D* and the rest. — 162—165. Printed generally as prose, as verse only in KL. — 163. *tall-keeper K.* — 165. *to acquaint D* and the rest. — 169. *lie L.* — 171. [*Stage-dir.*] *Exit.* ABC.

SCENE I. *Scene IX.* Tieck. — 3. *if* om. D and the rest. — 4. *What? foote D* and the rest.

*Smug.* Mine host, my bully, my pretious consult, my noble Holefernes, I haue bin drunke i' thy house twenty times and ten, all's one for that: I was last night in the third heauens,  
 10 my braine was poore, it had yest in 't; but now I am a man of action; is 't not so, lad?

*Banks.* Why, now thou hast two of the liberall sciences about thee, wit and reason, thou maist serue the Duke of Europe.

15 *Smug.* I will serue the Duke of Christendom, and doe him more credit in his celler then all the plate in his buttery; is 't not so, lad?

*Sir Io.* Mine host and Smug, stand there; Banks, you and your horse keepe together; but lie close, shew no trickes, for  
 20 feare of the keeper. If we be scard, weele meete in the Church-porch at Enfield.

*Smug.* Content, sir Iohn.

*Banks.* Smug, dost not thou remember the tree thou fellst out of last night?

25 *Smug.* Tush, and 't had bin as high as the Abby, I should nere haue hurt my selfe; I haue fallen into the riuer, comming home from Waltham, and scapt drowning.

*Sir Io.* Come, seuer, feare no spirits! Weele haue a Bucke presently; we haue watched later then this for a Doe, mine  
 30 Host.

*Host.* Thou speakst as true as veluet.

*Sir Io.* Why then, come! Grasse and hay, &c. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter CLARE, IERNINGHAM and MILLESCENT.*

*Y. Cla.* Franke Ierningham!

*Y. Ier.* Speake softly, rogue; how now?

35 *Y. Cla.* S' foot, we shall lose our way, its so darke; whereabouts are we?

*Y. Ier.* Why, man, at Potters gate; the way lies right: hearken! the clocke strikes at Enfield; whats the houre?

8. i' th house C, in thy house E and the rest. — 9. heauen D and the rest. — 12—14. Given to *Bil.* in ABC; corr. in D. — 17. so, lad om. C. — 20. in] at C. — 25. The prefix *Smug* om. C; *the*] an BD and the rest. — 26. I om. D. — 28. feare] eare A. — 37. Potters] Poiters BDEF, Porter's GHIKL.

*F. Cla.* Ten, the bell sayes.

*F. Ier.* A lies in's throate, it was but eight when we set  
out of Cheston. Sir Iohn and his Sexton are at ale to night,  
the clocke runs at random. 40

*F. Cla.* Nay, as sure as thou liu'st, the villanous vicar is  
abroad in the Chase this darke night: the stone Priest steales  
more venison then halfe the country. 45

*F. Ier.* Milliscent, how dost thou?

*Mil.*

Sir, very well.

I would to God we were at Brians Lodge.

*F. Cla.* We shall anon; z'ounds, harke! what meanes this noyse?

*F. Ier.* Stay, I heere horsemen.

*F. Cla.*

I heare footmen too.

*F. Ier.* Nay, then I haue it: we haue bin discouerd,  
And we are followed by our fathers men. 50

*Mil.* Brother and friend, alas, what shall we doe? *cf. II: 111, 32 + 130 -*

*F. Cla.* Sister, speake softly, or we are descride.  
They are hard vpon vs, what so ere they be;  
Shadow your selfe behind this brake of ferne,  
Weele get into the wood, and let them passe. 55

*Enter SIR IOHN, BLAGUE, SMUG, and BANKS, one after another.*

*Sir Io.* Grasse and hay! wee are all mortall; the keeper's  
abroad, and there's an end.

*Banks.* Sir Iohn!

*Sir Io.* Neighbour Bankes, what newes? 60

*Banks.* Z'wounds, Sir Iohn, the keepers are abroad; I was  
hard by 'am.

*Sir Io.* Grasse and hay! wher's mine host Blague?

*Host.* Here, Metropolitane. The Philistines are vpon vs, be  
silent; let vs serue the good Duke of Norfolke. But where  
is Smug? 65

*Smug.* Here; a poxe on yee all, dogs; I haue kild the  
greatest Bucke in Brians walke. Shift for your selues, all the  
keepers are vp. Lets meete in Enfield Church porch; away,  
we are all taken els. [Exeunt. 70

40. *A lie in's G*, *A lie's in's* HIKL. — 41. *at their Ale D* and the  
rest. — 46. *Milliscent, now dost L*. — 48, 73. *z'ounds*] *nounes D* and the  
rest. — 48. Two lines in Edd., divided at *harke*. — 56. *Enter*] *Exeunt B*.

*Enter BRIAN, with RAPH, his man, and his hound.*

*Bri.* Raph, hearst thou any stirring?

*Raph.* I heard one speake here hard by, in the bottome. Peace, Maister, speake low; zownes, if I did not heare a bow goe off, and the Bucke bray, I neuer heard deere in my life.

75 *Bri.* When went your fellowes out into their walks?

*Raph.* An hower agoe.

*Bri.* S' life, is there stealers abroad, and they cannot heare Of them: where the deuill are my men to night?

Sirra, goe vp the wind towards Buckleys lodge!

80 Ile cast about the bottome with my hound,

And I will meete thee vnder Cony oke.

*Raph.* I will, Sir.

*Bri.* How now? by the masse, my hound stayes vpon some- Harke, harke, Bowman, harke, harke, there! [thing;

85 *Mil.* Brother, Franke Ierningham, brother Clare!

*Bri.* Peace; thats a womans voyce! Stand! who's there? Stand, or Ile shoote.

*Mil.* O Lord! hold your hands, I meane no harme, sir.

*Bri.* Speake, who are you?

90 *Mil.* I am a maid, sir; who? M. Brian?

*Bri.* The very same; sure, I should know her voyce; Mistris Milliscent?

*Mil.* I, it is I, sir.

*Bri.* God for his passion! what make you here alone?

95 I lookd for you at my lodge an hower agoe.

What meanes your company to leaue you thus?

Who brought you hither?

*Mil.* My brother, Sir, and M. Ierningham,

Who, hearing folks about vs in the Chase,

100 Feard it had bin sir Raph and my father,

77. In C this line (*Bri. S' life . . . of*) has been erroneously placed between ll. 74 and 75. — *Life* D and the rest, *they*] *wee* E and the rest. — 79. *vp the*] *up and* G and the rest; *toward* BD and the rest. — 78. *Of them* put in a separate line in L. — 86. *that a* GHKL. — 90. *Master Brian* P D and the rest. — 96. *your*] *you* E. — 97. *Master Ierningham* D and the rest. — 99, 100. *Chase, and fearing it had* G; *sir Arthur and my father* ABCDE, *sir Raph and m. f.* FG, *Sir Arthur, my father*, HIKL; *feard* pron. *fearèd*. The metre would be smoothed by transposing *bin my father and sir Raph*.

Who had pursude vs, thus disparsed our selues,  
Till they were past vs.

*Bri.* But where be they?

*Mil.* They be not farre off, here about the groue.

*Enter CLARE and IERNINGHAM.*

*F. Cla.* Be not afraid! man, I heard Brians tongue, 105  
Thats certain.

*F. Ier.* Call softly for your sister.

*F. Cla.* Milliscent!

*Mil.* I, brother, heere.

*Bri.* M. Clare! 110

*F. Cla.* I told you it was Brian.

*Bri.* Whoes that? M. Ierningham, you are a couple of hot  
-shots; does a man commit his wench to you, to put her to  
grasse at this time of night?

*F. Ier.* We heard a noyse about here in the Chase, *u. 99* 115  
And fearing that our fathers had pursude vs, *u. 101*  
Seuerd our selues.

*F. Cla.* Brian, how hapd'st thou on her?

*Bri.* Seeking for stealers are abroad to night,  
My hound staid on her, and so found her out.

*F. Cla.* They were these stealers that affrighted vs; 120  
I was hard vpon them, when they horst their Deere,  
And I perceiue they tooke me for a keeper.

*Bri.* Which way tooke they?

*F. Ier.* Towards Enfield.

*Bri.* A plague vpon 't, thats that damned Priest, and Blague 125  
of the George — he that serues the good Duke of Nor-  
folke.

*A noyse within: Follow, follow, follow.*

*F. Cla.* Peace, thats my fathers voyce.

*Bri.* Z'ownds, you suspected them, and now they are heere indeed.

*Mil.* Alas, what shall we doe? 130

101. *vs*, and thus L. — 105. *I hear L.* — 110. *Master Clare D* and the rest. — 112. *Who is that F* and the rest; *Master I. D* and the rest. — 115. *here]* *her ABC*, *vs D* and the rest. — 117. *hapnedst BDEFG*, *happd*st L. — 118. *stealers that are G* and the rest. — 125. *that's the damnd E* and the rest. — 129. *Nownes D* and the rest; *you haue suspected EFG*.

131. The prefix *Bri.* om. B. — 133. *to you* F and the rest. — 134. *Father* ABCDE. — 135. *Keep he play* C. — 136. Stage-direction added by the present Edd. — 137. [Stage-dir.] *Enter the knight* B, *Enter the two knights* C. — 151, 152. One line in Edd. — 153, 154 (*My . . . way*). One line in Edd. — 154, 155. (*What . . . night*) printed as prose in Edd. — 159. *Where is my L.*

*Bri.* Ile complaine vnto the king you spoile his game:  
Tis strange that men of your account and calling  
Will offer it!

I tell you true, Sir Arthur and Sir Raph,  
That none but you haue onely spoild my game. 165

*Sir Ar.* I charge you, stop vs not!

*Bri.* I charge you both ye get out of my ground!  
Is this a time for such as you,  
Men of your place and of your grauity,  
To be abroad a-theeuing? Tis a shame; 170  
And, afore God, if I had shot at you,  
I had serude you well enough. [Exeunt.

## SCENE II.

*Enter BANKS THE MILLER, wet on his legges.*

*Banks.* S'foote, heeres a darke night indeed! I thinke I  
haue bin in fiftene ditches betweene this and the forrest.  
Soft, heers Enfield Church: I am so wet with climbing ouer  
into an orchard for to steale some filberts. Well, heere  
Ile sit in the Church porch, and wait for the rest of my 5  
consort. *Y. H. 1145*

*Enter the Sexton.*

*Sex.* Heeres a skye as blacke as Lucifer, God blesse vs!  
Heere was goodman Theophilus buried; hee was the best  
Nutcracker that euer dwelt in Enfield. Well, tis 9. a clock,  
tis time to ring curfew. Lord blesse vs, what a white thing 10  
is that in the Church porch! O Lord, my legges are too  
weake for my body, my haire is too stiffe for my night-cap,  
my heart failes; this is the ghost of Theophilus. O Lord,  
it followes me! I cannot say my prayers, and one would  
giue me a thousand pound. Good spirit, I haue bowld 15  
and drunke and followed the hounds with you a thousand

161—165, 167—172. Printed as prose in Edd. — 167. *ye* om. BD and the rest. — 169. *Men of place* most Edd., *men of your place and of your grauity* G, *men of place and grauity* C. — 172. *Exeunt* om. ABC.

SCENE II. *Scene X.* Tieck. — 1. *Foot* D and the rest; *darke* blacke C. — 6. *consorts* BD and the rest. — *Enter Sexton and Priest.* G. — 9. *in England* L. — 10. *what white* BC. — 15. *me thousand* C.

times, though I hate not the spirit now to deale with you.  
O Lord!

*Enter Priest.*

*Sir Io.* Grasse and hay! we are all mortall. Who's there?

20 *Sex.* We are grasse and hay indeede; I know you to bee  
Master Parson by your phrase.

*Sir Io.* Sexton!

*Sex.* I, Sir!

*Sir Io.* For mortalities sake, whats the matter?

25 *Sex.* O Lord, I am a man of another element; Maister  
Theophilus Ghost is in the Church porch. There was a hundred  
Cats, all fire, dancing here euen now, and they are clombe  
vp to the top of the steeple; ile not into the bellfree for a  
world.

30 *Sir Io.* O good Salomon; I haue bin about a deede of  
darknes to night: O Lord, I saw fifteen spirits in the forrest,  
like white bulles; if I lye, I am an arrant theefe: mortalitie  
haunts vs — grasse and hay! the deuills at our heeles, and  
lets hence to the parsonage. *[Exeunt.]*

*[The Miller comes out very softly.]*

35 *Banks.* What noise was that? Tis the watch, sure; that  
villanous vn lucky rogue, Smug, is taine, vpon my life; and then  
all our villeny comes out; I heard one cry, sure.

*Enter HOST BLAGUE.*

*Host.* If I go steale any more veneson, I am a Paradox!  
S'foot, I can scarce beare the sinne of my flesh in the day,  
40 tis so heauy; if I turne not honest, and serue the good Duke  
of Norfolke, as true mareterraneum skinker should doe, let  
me neuer looke higher then the element of a Constable.

*Banks.* By the Lord, there are some watchmen; I heare  
them name Maister Constable; I would to God my Mill were  
45 an Eunuch, and wanted her stones, so I were hence.

*Host.* Who's there?

26. *an hundred* F and the rest. — 27. *here* om. BD and the rest. —  
30. *O goodman Salomon* EF, *O goodman Solomon* GHIKL. — 34. *parso-  
nages* ABC. — 37. *villeny*] *knauerie* D and the rest. — 39. *Foot* D and the  
rest. — 41. *as a true* D and the rest; *skinner* EFG. — 43. *By the masse*  
D and the rest. — 44. *to God* om. D and the rest.

*Banks.* Tis the Constable, by this light; Ile steale hence, and if I can meete mine Host Blague, ile tell him how Smug is taine, and will him to looke to himselfe. [Exit.

*Host.* What the deuill is that white thing? this same is a Church-yard, and I haue heard that ghosts and villenous goblins haue beene seene here. 50

•  
*Enter Sexton and Priest.*

*Sir Io.* Grasse and hay! O, that I could coniure! wee saw a spirite here in the Church-yard; and in the fallow field ther's the deuill with a mans body vpon his backe in a white sheet. 55

*Sex.* It may be a womans body, Sir Iohn.

*Sir Io.* If shee be a woman, the sheets damne her; Lord blesse vs, what a night of mortalitie is this!

*Host.* Priest!

*Sir Io.* Mine host! 60

*Host.* Did you not see a spirit all in white crosse you at the stile?

*Sex.* O no, mine host; but there sate one in the porch; I haue not breath ynough left to blesse me from the Deuill.

*Host.* Whoes that? 65

*Sir Io.* The Sexton, almost frighted out of his wits. Did you see Banks or Smug?

*Host.* No, they are gone to Waltham, sure. I would faine hence; come, lets to my house: Ile nere serue the Duke of Norfolk in this fashion againe whilst I breath. If the deuill be amongst vs, tis time to hoist saile, and cry roomer. Keepe together; Sexton, thou art secret, what? Lets be comfortable one to another. 70

*Sir Io.* We are all mortall, mine host.

*Host.* True; and Ile serue God in the night hereafter afore the Duke of Norfolke. 75  
[Exeunt.

57. *Lord* om. DEFG. — 63, 64. Assigned to the *Priest* in ABC. — 66. *frightened* L. — 67. *Bank* BC. — 71. *among* L. — 76. *Exeunt* om. FG.

## A C T V.

## SCENE I.

*Enter* SIR ARTHUR CLARE *and* SIR RAPH IERNINGHAM,  
trussing their points as new vp.

*Sir Raph.* Good morrow, gentle knight.  
A happy day after your short nights rest!

*Sir Ar.* Ha, ha, sir Raph, stirring so soone indeed?  
Birlady, sir, rest would hane done right well;

5 Our riding late last night has made me drowsie.  
Goe to, goe to, those dayes are gone with vs.

*Sir Raph.* Sir Arthur, Sir Arthur, care go with those dayes,  
Let 'am euen goe together, let 'am goe!

Tis time, yfaith, that wee were in our graues,  
10 When children leane obedience to their Parents,  
When there's no feare of God, no care, no dutie.  
Well, well, nay, nay, it shall not doe, it shall not;  
No, Mountchensey, thou'lt heare on't, thou shalt,  
Thou shalt yfaith!

15 Ile hang thy son, if there be law in England.  
A mans Child rausht from a Nunry!  
This is rare!

Well, well, ther's one gone for Frier Hildersham.

*Sir Ar.* Nay, gentle knight, do not vexè thus,  
20 It will but hurt your health.

You cannot greeue more then I doe, but to what end? But  
harke you, Sir Raph, I was about to say something — it makes  
no matter. But hearke you in your eare: the Frier's a knaue;  
but God forgiue me, a man cannot tell neither; s'foot, I am  
25 so out of patience, I know not what to say.

*Sir Raph.* Ther's one went for the Frier an hower agoe.  
Comes he not yet? s'foot, if I doe find knauery unders cowlè,

SCENE I. *Scene XI.* Tieck. — [Stage-dir.] *Enter Sir Raph Clare and Sir Arthur Ierningham* ABCDE. — 12. One *nay* om. BD and the rest. — 13. *thou'st* Edd., *thou'lt* L. — 14, 15 and 17, 18. One line in Edd., in L 13—18 printed as four lines, ending at *son* | *child* | *rare* | *Hildersham*. — 18. *well* only once in E and the rest. — 20. *hurt your heate* BDEHIKL, *hurt your heart* C, *hurt you heat* F, *hurt you, heat*; G. — 27. *foote* DEFG.

Ile tickle him, Ile firke him. Here, here, hee's here, hee's here. Good morrow, Frier; good morrow, gentle Frier.

*Enter* HILDERSHAM.

*Sir Ar.* Good morrow, Father Hildersham, good morrow. 30

*Hil.* Good morrow, reuerend Knights, vnto you both.

*Sir Ar.* Father, how now? you heare how matters goe;  
I am vndone, my Childe ist cast away.

You did your best, at least I thinke the best;

But we are all crost; flatly, all is dasht. 35

*Hil.* Alas, good knights, how might the matter be?  
Let mee vnderstand your greefe for Charity.

*Sir Ar.* Who does not vnderstand my griefes? Alas, alas!  
And yet yee do not! Will the Church permit  
A Nun in approbation of her habit 40  
To be rauished?

*Hil.* A holy woman, benedicite!  
Now God forfend that any should presume  
To touch the sister of a holy house.

*Sir Ar.* Ihesus deliuer mee! 45

*Sir Raph.* Why, Milliscent, the daughter of this knight,  
Is out of Cheston taken the last night.

*Hil.* Was that faire maiden late become a Nun?

*Sir Raph.* Was she, quotha? Knauery, knauery, knauery;  
I smell it, I smell it, yfaith; is the wind in that dore? is it 50  
euen so? doost thou aske me that now?

*Hil.* It is the first time that I ere heard of it.

*Sir Ar.* That's very strange.

*Sir Raph.* Why, tell me, Frier, tell mee; thou art counted  
a holy man; doe not play the hypocrite with me, nor 55  
beare with mee. I cannot dissemble. Did I ought but by  
thy own consent, by thy allowance — nay, further, by thy  
warrant?

*Hil.* Why, Reuerend knight —

*Sir Raph.* Vnreuerend Frier — 60

38. *my grieffe?* C and the rest. — 39. *yet you doe* D and the rest. —  
43—45. Printed as prose in ABCDE. — 47. *the]* *this* BD and the rest. —  
49. *knauery* four times in BD and the rest. — 52. *that ere I heard* B. —  
55. *nor]* *now* Collier conj. — 57. *farther* GHK.

*Hil.* Nay, then giue me leaue, sir, to depart in quiet; I had hopd you had sent for mee to some other end.

*Sir Ar.* Nay, stay, good Frier; if any thing hath hapd  
About this matter in thy loue to vs,  
65 That thy strickt order cannot iustifie,  
Admit it be so, we will couer it.  
Take no care, man:

Disclayme not yet thy counsell and aduise,  
The wisest man that is may be orereacht. *if 2nd. no.*  
70 *Hil.* Sir Arthur, by my order and my faith,  
I know not what you meane.

*Sir Raph.* By your order and your faith?  
This is most strange of all: Why, tell me, Frier,  
Are not you Confessor to my Son .Francke?

75 *Hil.* Yes, that I am.

*Sir Raph.* And did not this good knight here and my selfe  
Confesse with you, being his ghostly Father,  
To deale with him about th'intended marriage  
Betwixt him and that faire young Milliscent?

80 *Hil.* I neuer heard of any match intended.

*Sir Ar.* Did not we breake our minds that very time,  
That our deuice of making her a Nun  
Was but a colour and a very plotte  
To put by young Mountchensey? Ist not true?

85 *Hil.* The more I striue to know what you should meane,  
The lesse I vnderstand you.

*Sir Raph.* Did not you tell vs still how Peter Fabell  
At length would crosse vs, if we tooke not heed?

*Hil.* I haue heard of one that is a great magician,  
90 But hees about the Vniversity.

*Sir Raph.* Did not you send your nouice Benedic  
To perswade the girle to leaue Mountchenseys loue,  
To crosse that Peter Fabell in his art,  
And to that purpose made him visitor?

66. *it to be so* E and the rest. — 68. *yet my counsell* D and the rest. —  
70. *and by my* FG. — 72—74. Two lines in Edd., ending at *all* | *Frier.* —  
72. Prefixed *Sir Arthur* in ABC; and *by your* BD and the rest. — 73. *of all*  
om. EFG. — 78. *unbanded* Edd.; for *intended* the pres. Edd. are answerable. —  
82. *of* in B and the rest. — 87, 88. Printed as prose in Edd. — 91. *Did*  
*you not* BEF.

*Hil.* I neuer sent my nouice from the house,  
Nor haue we made our visitation yet. 95

*Sir Ar.* Neuer sent him? Nay, did he not goe?  
And did not I direct him to the house,  
And conferre with him by the way? and did he not  
Tell me what charge he had receiued from you, 100  
Word by word, as I requested at your hands?

*Hil.* That you shall know; hee came along with me,  
And staves without. Come hither, Benedic!

*Enter* BENEDIC.

Yong Benedic, were you ere sent by me  
To Cheston Nunnery for a visitor? 105

*Ben.* Neuer, sir, truely.

*Sir Raph.* Stranger then all the rest!

*Sir Ar.* Did not I direct you to the house? Confer with you  
From Waltham Abby vnto Cheston wall?

*Ben.* I neuer saw you, sir, before this hower!

*Sir Raph.* The deuill thou didst not! Hoe, Chamberlen! 110

*Enter* CHAMBERLAINE.

*Cham.* Anon, anon.

*Sir Raph.* Call mine host Blague hither!

*Cham.* I will send one ouer to see if he be vp; I thinke  
he bee scarce stirring yet.

*Sir Raph.* Why, knaue, didst thou not tell me an hower 115  
ago, mine host was vp?

*Cham.* I, sir, my Master's vp.

*Sir Raph.* You knaue, is a vp, and is a not vp? Doest  
thou mocke me?

*Cham.* I, sir, my M. is vp; but I thinke M. Blague indeed 120  
be not stirring.

*Sir Raph.* Why, who's thy Master? is not the Master of  
the house thy Master?

95. *from my house* B and the rest. — 97—105. Printed as prose in ABCDE. — 99. *did not he* BDHIKL. — 106. Given to *Sir Ar.*, l. 107 to *Sir Ra.* in ABCDE. — 107, 108. Three lines in Edd., divided at *house* | *Abby* | *wall*. — 111. *Enter Chamberlaine* om. ABC. — 113. Prefixed *Cla.* in ABC; *one*] *once* B; *ouer sir to see* D and the rest. — 118. *is he up, and is he not up* HKL. — 120. *my Master* ... *Master Blague* D and the rest.

*Cham.* Yes, sir; but M. Blague dwells ouer the way.

125 *Sir Ar.* Is not this the George? Before God, theres some  
[villany in this.

*Cham.* S'foote, our signe's remoou'd; this is strange!

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.

*Enter* *BLAGUE*, *trussing his points.*

*Host.* Chamberlen, speake vp to the new lodgings, bid Nell looke well to the bakt meats!

*Enter* *SIR ARTHUR* and *SIR RAPH.*

How now, my old *Ienerts* *bauke* my house, my castle, lie in Waltham all night, and not vnder the Canopie of your host  
5 *Blagues* house?

*Sir Ar.* Mine host, mine host, we lay all night at the George in Waltham; but whether the George be your fee-simple or no, tis a doubtfull question. Looke vpon your signe!

*Host.* Body of Saint George, this is mine ouerthwart neighbour hath done this to seduce my blind customers. Ile tickle his catastrophe for this; if I do not indite him at next assises for Burglary, let me die of the *yellowes*; for I see tis no boote in these dayes to serue the good Duke of Norfolke. The villanous world is turnd manger; one lade deceiues another,  
15 and your Ostler playes his part commonly for the fourth share. Haue wee Commedies in hand, you whorson, villanous male London letcher?

*Sir Ar.* Mine host, we haue had the moylingst night of it that euer we had in our liues.

20 *Host.* Ist certaine?

124. *dwells* om. B. — 125. *before Ioue theres* D and the rest. — 126. *Foote* D and the rest. — *Exeunt* om. Edd.

SCENE II. The scene is continued in Tieck. — 1—5. Divided at *lodgings* | *meats* | *horse* | *not* | *house* in Edd. — 1. *speake*] *speed* L. — 2. *meat* F and the rest; the stage-dir. *Enter* . . . added by the pres. Edd. — 3. *my old Iennerts banke, my horse, my castle* most Edd., *old jennet's back, my house* [*Is*] *my castle* L. *house* for *horse* first conj. by Steevens. — 8. *doubtfull* om. BD and the rest. — 10, 11. *to seduce* . . . *for this* om. EFG. — 11. *at the next* D and the rest. — 12. *see it is* L. — 14. *mangy* L. — 17. *London-lechter* D, *London leather* E, *London-leather* FG. — 20. *Is it* F and the rest.

*Sir Raph.* We haue bin in the Forrest all night almost.

*Host.* S'foot, how did I misse you? Hart, I was a-stealing a Bucke there.

*Sir Ar.* A plague on you; we were stayed for you.

*Host.* Were you, my noble Romanes? Why, you shall share; 25  
the venison is a footing. *Sine Cerere & Baccho friget Venus*;  
that is, theres a good breakfast prouided for a marriage thats  
in my house this morning.

*Sir Ar.* A marriage, mine host?

*Host.* A coniunction copulative; a gallant match betweene 30  
your daughter and M. Raymond Mountchensey, yong Iuuentus.

*Sir Ar.* How?

*Host.* Tis firme, tis done. Weele shew you a president i'th

*Sir Raph.* How? married? [ciuill law for't.

*Host.* Leau trickes and admiration. Theres a cleanly paire 35  
of sheetes in the bed in the Orchard chamber, and they shall lie  
theré. What? Ile doe it; Ile serue the good Duke of Norfolk.

*Sir Ar.* Thou shalt repent this, Blague.

*Sir Raph.* If any law in England will make thee smart for 40  
this, expect it with all seuerity.

*Host.* I renounce your defiance, if you parle so roughly.  
Ile barracado my gates against you. Stand, faire bully; Priest,  
come off from the rereward! What can you say now? Twas  
done in my house; I haue shelter i'th Court for't. D'ye see yon  
bay window? I serue the good Duke of Norfolk, and tis his lodg- 45  
ing. Storm, I care not, seruing the good Duke of Norfolk. Thou  
art an Actor in this, and thou shalt carry fire in thy face eternally.

*Enter SMUG, MOUNTCHENSEY, HARRY CLARE, and MILLISCENT.*

*Smug.* Fire, s'blood, theres no fire in England like your  
Trinidado sack. Is any man heere humorous? We stole the  
venison, and weele iustifie it: say you now! 50

21. Assigned to *Sir Ar.* in L. — 22. *Foot* D and the rest; *was stealing*  
*of a D* and the rest. — 26. *Venere* BDEF. — 27. *there is* CFG and the rest;  
*that is* CFG and the rest. — 31. *M.* (i. e. *Master*) om. L; *iuuents* FG. —  
33. *in the F* and the rest. — 36. *sheets on the bed* D and the rest; *bed on*  
*the Orchard B, in Orchard Chamber A.* — 37. *I serue D* and the rest. —  
43. *reward EF.* — 44. *in the F* and the rest. — 44, 45. *Dee see your bay*  
*A, Doe see your bay B, Doe you see yon bay D* and the rest. — 48. *Fire,*  
*nouns, ther's D* and the rest.

*Host.* In good sooth, Smug, theres more sacke on the fire, Smug.

*Smug.* I do not take any exceptions against your sacke; but if youle lend mee a picke staffe, ile cudgle them all hence, by this hand.

55 *Host.* I say thou shalt into the Celler.

*Smug.* S'foot, mine Host, shalls not grapple? Pray, pray you; I could fight now for all the world like a Cockatrices ege. Shall not serue the Duke of Norfolk? [Exit.]

*Host.* In, skipper, in!

60 *Sir Ar.* Sirra, hath young Mountchensy married your sister?

*F. Cla.* Tis certaine, Sir; here's the Priest that coupled them, the parties ioyned, and the honest witnessse that cride Amen.

*Ray.* Sir Arthur Clare, my new created Father,  
I beseech you, heare mee.

65 *Sir Ar.* Sir, sir, you are a foolish boy; you haue done that you cannot answere; I dare be bould to ceaze her from you; for shee's a profest Nun.

*Mil.* With pardon, sir, that name is quite vndone;  
This true-loue knot cancelles both maid and Nun.

70 When first you told me I should act that part,  
How cold and bloody it crept ore my hart!  
To Chesson with a smiling brow I went;  
But yet, deere sir, it was to this intent,  
That my sweete Raymond might find better meanes  
75 To steale me thence. In breefe, disguised he came,  
Like Nouice to old father Hildersham;  
*subline?* His tutor here did act that cunning part,  
And in our loue hath ioynd much wit to art.

*Sir Ar.* Is't euen so?

80 *Mil.* With pardon therefore wee intreat your smiles;  
Loue, thwarted, turnes itselfe to thousand wiles.

*Sir Ar.* Young Maister Ierningham, were you an actor  
In your owne loues abuse?

*F. Ier.* My thoughts, good sir,

Did labour seriously vnto this end,

85 To wrong my selfe, ere ide abuse my friend.

53. *you lend L.* — 56, 57. *pray you, pray you* CHIKL. — 66. *to ceaze on her* EFG. — 79. *Is it* F and the rest. — 82, 83 (*. . abuse*). Printed as prose in ABCDE.

*Host.* He speakes like a Batchelor of Musicke, all in Numbers. Knights, if I had knowne you would haue let this couy of Partridges sit thus long vpon their knees vnder my signe post, I would haue spred my dore with old Couerlids.

*Sir Ar.* Well, sir, for this your signe was remoued, was it? 90

*Host.* Faith, wee followed the directions of the deuill, Master Peter Fabell; and Smug, Lord blesse vs! could neuer stand vpriht since.

*Sir Ar.* You, sir, twas you was his minister that married them?

*Sir Io.* Sir, to proue my selfe an honest man, being that I 95 was last night in the forrest stealing Venison — now, sir, to haue you stand my friend, if that matter should bee calld in question, I married your daughter to this worthy gentleman.

*Sir Ar.* I may chaunce to requite you, and make your necke crack for't. 100

*Sir Io.* If you doe, I am as resolute as my Neighbour vicar of Waltham Abby; a hem, grasse and hay! wee are all mortall; lets liue till we be hangd, mine host, and be merry, and theres an end.

*Enter FABELL.*

*Fab.* Now, knights, I enter; now my part begins. 105

To end this difference, know, at first I knew  
What you intended, ere your loue tooke flight  
From old Mountchensey; you, sir Arthur Clare,  
Were minded to haue married this sweete beauty  
To yong Franke Ierningham; to crosse which match, 110  
I vsde some pretty sleights; but I protest

Such as but sate vpon the skirts of Art;  
No coniurations, nor such weighty spells  
As tie the soule to their performancy.  
These for his loue, who once was my deere puple, 115

Haue I effected. Now, mee thinks, tis strange  
That you, being old in wisdom, should thus knit  
Your forehead on this match, since reason failes;  
No law can curbe the louers rash attempt;

89. *old* om. D and the rest. — 97. *that*] *the* D and the rest. — 98. *your*] *you* A. — 104. *Enter Fabell* om. ABC, *Enter Fabian* DE. — 108. *you*] *your* B. — 110. *which*] *this* E and the rest. — 116. *affected* EF. — 119. *lover's* L.

120 Yeares, in resisting this, are sadly spent.

Smile, then, vpon your daughter and kind sonne,

And let our toyle to future ages proue, ,

The Deuill of Edmonton did good in Loue.

*Sir Ar.* Well, tis in vaine to crosse the prouidence:

125 Deere Sonne, I take thee vp into my hart;

Rise, daughter; this is a kind fathers part.

*Host.* Why, Sir Iohn, send for Spindles noise, presently: Ha, er't be night, Ile serue the good Duke of Norfolke.

*Sir Io.* Grasse and hay! mine Host, lets live till we die, and  
130 be merry, and theres an end.

*Sir Ar.* What, is breakfast ready, mine Host?

*Host.* Tis, my little Hebrew.

*Sir Ar.* Sirra, ride straight to Chesson Nunry,  
Fetch thence my Lady; the house, I know,

135 By this time misses their yong votary.

Come, knights, lets in!

*Bil.* I will to horse presently, sir. — A plague a my Lady,  
I shall misse a good breakfast. Smug, how chaunce you cut  
so plaguely behind, Smug?

140 *Smug.* Stand away, Ile founder you else.

*Bil.* Farewell, Smug, thou art in another element.

*Smug.* I will be by and by; I will be Saint George againe.

*Sir Ar.* Take heed the fellow doe not hurt himselfe.

*Sir Raph.* Did we not last night find two S. Georges here?

145 *Fab.* Yes, knights, this martialist was one of them.

*Y. Cla.* Then thus conclude your night of merriment!

[*Exeunt omnes.*]

126. *This is a kind father's part* given to *Mil.* in L. — 127. *Why, Sir George* the old copies; corr. in L. — 132. Prefix *Host* om. C. — 137. *a my* o my D, on my E and the rest. — 142. *Sir George* ABC; corr. in D. —

THE END.

## NOTES.

### THE PROLOGUE.

✓ 5. *round*, the interior of the play-house, on account of its circular form. For the same reason the circle of the theatre is called a *wooden O* H. V. Prol. 13.

✓ 7. *to enterlayne*, to enter into, to admit. Cp. Shak. *Lucr.* 1629

*Awake, thou Roman dame*

*And entertain my love.*

14. *that* refers to *his*, l. 12: the birth and the abode of him who was called the merry Fiend of Edmonton.

19. *His monument remayneth to be seene*. 'A monument, reputed to be his, was shown in Edmonton Church, in the time of Weaver and of Norden: but it was without inscription, and therefore could throw no light on his history'. Nares, s. v. Fabell.

20. *His memory*, scil. *remaineth*, l. 19.

22 seqq. The construction of the whole sentence, in which ll. 24, 25 form a sort of parenthesis, is somewhat inexact, as the verb which ought to join *that* (l. 22) and *The very time and houre* (l. 28) is wanting.

✓ 36. *guarded with these sable slights*, ornamented with sable decorations or devices. *slight*, originally, artifice, contrivance; thence, anything artfully conceived or contrived, ornaments. Similarly, *device* originally means contrivance, stratagem; thence, anything fancifully conceived; cp. K. John I. 210

*Not alone in habit and device,*

*Exterior form, outward accoutrement.*

### INDUCTION.

3, 4. Cp. Haml. I. 5. 19, 20

*And each particular hair to stand an-end,  
Like quills upon the fretful porpentine.*

16. *this*, i. e. *this is*; see Abbot, A Shakespearian Grammar, s. 461.

22 seqq. Rather than so abruptly be carried to hell, Fabell will bear on his shoulders the whole globe of earth like Hercules,

and at the same time endure the sufferings by which Prometheus was tormented.

45. *meane*, despicable. The sense of the lines is: Immoderate desire of knowledge renders man contemptible to the powers and may even lead him down to hell.

62. *holowness*, properly, deceitfulness, treachery; as a title given to Coreb it was probably suggested by the expression *his holiness*, the appellation of the Pope of Rome.

79. *like Phaetontique flames*, such Phaetonic endeavours. As Phaeton perished in trying to take Phœbus' place, so Fabell will finally fail in attempting to out-wit the Devil.

### ACT I.

1. [Stage-dir.] *Blague*, from the French *blague*, swaggering, bragging.

Ib. *Safe-guardes*, large petticoats, worn over the other clothes, to protect them from dirt; see Nares, Gloss., s. v.

✓ 1, 5. *my little wast of maiden-heads*, addressed to Harry Clare. The abstract substantive *waste* is used here for the concrete noun *waster*, *destroyer*. Cp. the similar use of *corruption*, l. 15.

✓ 1, 10. *a Tartarian*. Nares and Webster give *thief* as the meaning of the word. More properly, *a Tartarian* seems to be any person of low order who strolls about the country like a gypsy. Cp. *a Bohemian Tartar* M. Wives IV. 5. 21; *lawny Tartar* Mids. III. 2. 101.

1, 15. *wil that corruption looke well*. As to the construction of *wil*, cp. H. V. II. 4. 90 *willing you overlook this pedigree*, Tit. V. 1. 160 *willing you to demand your hostages*.

✓ 1, 27. The Host, having a great predilection for nautical terms (cp. l. 2. 1 seqq.), means to enhance the idea of *presently* by adding *top* and *top-gallant*.

✓ 1, 35. *my canuasadoes and my interrogatories*. *canvasado*, a burlesque form for *canvass*, inspection, examination; *interrogatory* occurs again IV. 1. 4.

✓ 1, 43. *assure*, to engage, to affiancé.

1, 54. Near Waltham King Edward I. had a cross erected in remembrance of Queen Elinor. — Clare first uses *crosses* in the sense of disappointment, vexation; in order to avert Milliscent's attention, he then speaks of crosses in the proper sense of the word, and gives his whole speech such an obscure and unintelligible turn that Milliscent is right in exclaiming:

*O God, what meanes my father?*

1, 57, 58. Cp. Merch. of Ven. V. 1. 30—32

*she doth stray about*

*By holy crosses, where she kneels and prays*

*For happy wedlock hours.*

(Quoted by Hazlitt.)

✓ 1, 66. *Cane-tobacco*. 'Tobacco made up in a particular form, highly esteemed and dear.' Nares, Gloss., s. v.

1, 67, 68. Convinced that Mr. Hazlitt's alteration of the text does not hit the mark, and unable to proffer an emendation that would remove the difficulties of this buzzing passage once for all, we have left the reading of the originals unchanged. Tieck's translation of the two lines is to the following effect:

*Was Hunde haben sollten frisst der Falk,  
Ihn kost't der Spitz mehr als der Solofänger.*

✓ 1, 74. *You'll see a flight, wife, shortly of his land*, i. e. you will soon see how his land passes away; cp. V. 2. 107 *ere your loue took flight*.

2, 1. *Ostlers, you knaues and commanders*. The Host considers his ostlers as his officers, *commander* being the officer who ranks next above a lieutenant in the Navy.

2, 2. *your honourable hulkes*. As to the use of *your*, Lat. *iste*, cp. Abbott, s. 221.

✓ 2, 4. *Via* is, according to Florio, 'an adverb of encouraging, much used by commanders, as also by riders to their horses'. (Quoted by Al. Schmidt, Shakespeare-Lexicon, s. v.).

2, 5, 6 and 9—14. Tieck translates these quaint speeches of *mine Host Blague* thus: *Mögen die Verhängnisse saub're Kammerdiener diesen landstreichenden Puritanern werden, ihr Ritter der Subsidien! ... Ha! Platz da für mein Paar Pistolen, die mit griechischen und lateinischen Kugeln geladen sind; lasst mich euch in die Flanken fallen, ihr meine behenden Gibraltars, und Wind in eure Lendenstücke blasen, dass sie dicker auflaufen! Ha! springen will ich in meinem Besitzthum! Weg mit allen Punctilio's und aller Orthographie! ich diene dem guten Herzog von Norfolk!*

2, 14. *Tilre tu &c.* Verg. Ecl. I. 1 *Tityre tu &c.*

✓ 2, 16. *Bilbo*, prop., a rapier, a sword, from the town of Bilboa, in Spain, famous for the manufacture of good blades.

✓ 2, 19, 20. *without any more discontinuance, releases, or attournement*. Besides its proper meaning, the word *discontinuance* is an English law-term and refers to the alienation of an estate. The use of this word induces the loquacious Host to add two other law-terms of a similar sense, but which have nothing to do with the idea he will express.

✓ 2, 21. *sea-card*, mariner's card, compass.

2, 23. *my souldier of S. Quintins*. Eight thousand English soldiers, under the command of the Earl of Pembroke, were present at the battle of S. Quintins, 1557.

2, 24 seq. The Host compares his sack to the stars commonly called Charles' wain or the Great Bear, and to a crabfish glistening in the dark.

2, 26. *your Coopers Dictionary*. Cooper's Thesaurus Linguae Latinae was published in 1584.

✓ 2, 42. *Passion*, deep sorrow and grief, as often in Shakespeare.

2, 45. After breakfast Sir Arthur intends to communicate to Mounchensey his purpose of sending Milliscent to the Nunnery.

✓ 3, 9. *to be in hand*, to be about.

✓ 3, 14. *read*, studied.

3, 38 seqq. The sense of these lines seems to be: If any other person should have offered to help me, I should not have cared for it, knowing that nobody can bring me comfort. Thy words, however, exercise some influence upon me, as I know thou art able to help me if thou wilt. But I feel sure that thou wilt not give up Milliscent, and therefore I should have preferred any other person to offer me his help; I should have believed him, but I cannot believe thee.

3, 49 seqq. The construction of this rather diffuse passage is: Come, Raymond, and make thy groning love . . . leape, caper . . . (l. 53), i. e. do not exhibit thy love in such a melancholy way, but in a more cheerful manner. — As ll. 51, 52, like l. 50, refer to *loue*, and contain an evident allusion to Cupid, the change of the gender (l. 51, 53) may easily be accounted for.

✓ 3, 52. *at hudman-blind*, i. e. with his eyes blind-folded as in the children's game now called blind-man's-buff. Cp. Haml. III. 4. 77

*What devil was't*

*That thus hath cozened you at hoodman-blind.*

✓ 3, 59. *in hugger-mugger*, in secrecy, clandestinely. Cp. Haml. IV. 5. 84, and Ford, 'Tis Pity she's a Whore, III. 1. (Works, ed. Hartley Coleridge, p. 35 a): *there is no way but to clap up a marriage in hugger-mugger* (quoted by Elze), and The Revenger's Tragedy V. (apud Dodsley, Old Plays, ed. Hazlitt, vol. V, p. 90): *and how quainly he died, like a politician, in hugger-mugger.*

✓ 3, 65. *doe I bend in the hams?* Cp. Pericles IV. 2. 114 *The French knight that cowers i'the hams. Who? M. Veroles.*

✓ 3, 68. *to giue out*, to publish, proclaim.

✓ 3, 73. *to lanch*, to send a ship into the water, in a figurative sense here. Tieck translates: *die Alten, Eure Väter, | Gedenken thät'ge Beutel flott zu machen.*

✓ 3, 82. *to slubber*, to obscure or darken. Cp. Oth. I. 3. 227, and the First Part of Jeronimo (Dodsley, ed. Hazlitt vol. IV, p. 374): *The evening too begins to slubber day.*

✓ 3, 85. *spring*, springall, a youth, a lad.

✓ 3, 101. *a counterfeit*, a false coin; cp. Gentl. V. 4. 53 *thou counterfeit to thy true friend.*

3, 105 seq. Thou hast given me back to life, dear friend; my soul feels so free that neither time nor even death can lessen or alter my happiness.

3, 114 seq. What favour may Raymond expect at thy hands for the honour he renders to thee?

- ✓ 3, 123. *passee*, unfortunate state, predicament; cp. Lear III. 4. 65  
*have his daughters brought him to this pass!*
- ✓ 3, 143. *hollow*. The form *hollo* is also used by Shakespeare,  
 Ven. 973  
*she hears some huntsman hollo.*

## ACT II.

- ✓ 1, 7. *it tickles our Catastrophe*. The same expression occurs again V. 2. 10, and is used by Falstaff 2 H. IV., II. 1. 66:

*I'll tickle your Catastrophe.*

1, 40. *The question is*. As similar incomplete constructions very often occur in familiar conversation, Mr. Hazlitt's reading *the question is good, neighbour B.* seems to be uncalled for.

- ✓ 1, 50. *Castilian*, 'a delicate courtier.

*Come, come, Castilian, skim the pusset curd,  
 Shew thy queere substance, worthless, most absurd.'*

(Quoted by Nares, s. v., from Marston's Satires, 1599.)

1, 52. 'His address to the smith, on reading the *little Geneva print*, was an equivoque on the redness of his eyes from having drunk too much, and the small type in which the Scriptures were printed in the common Genevan version' (Hazlitt). The English bible was printed several times at Geneva, first in 1560.

- ✓ 1, 55. *Hungarions*, a cant term for *hungry person*. Cp. Shak., M. W. I. 3. 23 *O base Hungarion wight*.

✓ 1, 60. *bosonians*, the same as *bezonians*, which is used twice by Shakespeare 2 H. IV., V. 3. 118; 2 H. VI., IV. 1. 134. The word comes from the Italian *bisogno* need, want, and means *a beggar*. — The sense of the line is: The keepers beg at my house and are quite dependent on me.

1, 61. *Gog* and *Magog*, originally two nations hostile to the Israelites; popular name for two colossal statues in the Guildhall, London.

1, 67. *the Cittizen of good fellowes*, in contrast with the preceding *a Boore, a Boore of the Country*.

- ✓ 2, 2. *with shalles*. A quibble on *shall*, shale, shell, and *shall*, denoting futurity. Nares, s. v., very aptly quotes, besides our passage, Churchyard, Challenge p. 153

*Thus all with shall or shalles ye shal be fed.*

- ✓ 2, 6. *brangled*, confused, entangled.

✓ 2, 26. *orient*, bright, shining; cp. Shakespeare, Pilgr. 133 *bright, orient pearl*.

2, 40. *Were't not for manhood sake*. But for the dignity of a gentleman of my age, I should not brave thee with mere words, but challenge thee with sword in hand.

- ✓ 2, 57. *soares*, soaring flight; thence, high-flown words, quarrel.  
 2, 68, 69. Addressing his father.  
 ✓ 2, 82. *to fadge*, to go, proceed, succeed; cp. L. L. L. V. 1. 154,  
 and Tw. N. II. 2. 34.  
 2, 84. Addressing R. Mounchensey.  
 ✓ 2, 87. *fellowes of a handfull hie*, i. e. sprites. *hie*, high; *a hand-*  
*full*, a palm, a measure of four inches. Cp. B. Jonson, Cynthia's  
 Rev. III. 4:

*Here stalks me by a proud and spangled sir  
 That looks three handfulls higher than his foretop.*

(Quoted by Nares.)

3, 3. *the composure of weake frailtie meete*. As *composure* means 'the elements which compose s. t., the materials', it is not necessary to substitute *meets* (L) for the plural number *meete*.

3, 19 seq. Your absence will so waste his blood that his cheeks shall look quite pale.

✓ 3, 22. For *to waine*, to avert, to alienate, cp. 3 Henry VI., IV. 4. 17, and Tit. Andr. I. 1. 211.

✓ 3, 38. *your fathers may chance spie your parting*. The verb *to chance* is sometimes, though rarely, followed by the infinitive without *to*; cp. 2 H. IV., II. 1. 12 *It may chance cost some of us our liues*; Troil. I. 1. 26 *you may chance burn your lips* (Q), F *to burn*.

✓ 3, 63. *kept under*. *to keep under*, to restrain, detain, has here apparently an obscene sense; else *yet* at the beginning of the line can hardly be accounted for.

### ACT III.

1, 7. *Holy matron, woman milde*. Apposition to *Daughter Marie*.

1, 22. *That* refers to *your* (l. 21): *you that so truly pay your tithe*. Cp. V. 2. 115.

✓ 1, 32. *buske*. 'The busk was thought very essential to the female figure. Marston, Scourge II. 7:

*Her long slit sleeves, stiffe buske, pufte verdingall,  
 Is all that makes her thus angelical.'* Nares s. v.

✓ 1, 39. *the sacring Bell*. 'A small bell used in the Roman Catholic Church to call attention to the more solemn parts of the service of the mass.' Webster. The word also occurs Henry VIII., III. 2. 295.

✓ 1, 42. *Lattins*, Latin prayers or hymns.

1, 53. *mornings Masse*. Cp. *mornings' joy* Lucr. 1107, *morning's rest* Rom. V. 3. 189, *morning's dew* Tit. II. 3. 201, *a morning's holy office* Cymb. III. 3. 4.

1, 81. Cp. Per. IV. 4. 25: *Pericles, in sorrow all devoured*.

1, 87. *I, a poore innocent shee*. Cp. Tw. I. 5. 259 *the cruellst shee*. It is, therefore, unnecessary to alter the punctuation as Hazlitt has done.

✓ 1, 90. *conscience*, thought, consideration; Haml. III. 1. 83

*Thus conscience does make cowards of us all.*

✓ 1, 95. *To thrust Mounchenseyes nose besides the cushion*, i. e. to impose upon M. Cp. the phrases *to miss the cushion*, *to be beside the cushion*. According to Nares, *cushion* was a term of archery, being a name for the mark at which the archers shot.

1, 101. Addressed to Harry Clare.

1, 111. *None only but* (Edd. *only, but*). *But only* as well as *only but* are often used for *only* or *but*. Cp. Merch. III. 5. 51 *in none only but parrots*.

✓ 2, 16. *my deere bosome*. Cp. the Shakespearian phrases *my dear heart*, *my dear blood*, *my dear soul*, in all of which *dear* has the signification of *inmost*.

2, 20. *Did you now know but how this iest takes fire. but*, properly belonging to *know*, is attracted by the following sentence. A similar instance of attraction is Mch. V. 8. 40

*He only lived but till he was a man.*

2, 81—87. The sense of the passage as we read it (l. 84 *Harry*) is: Peter Fabell, in the habit of Frier Hildersham, made his plot with the aid of Francke and Harry and with my own assistance, and *so*, i. e. in that disguise he conversed with Sir Arthur Clare.

✓ 2, 132. *vnbagd*, not pregnant. *to bag*, to become pregnant.

✓ 2, 137. *turne tippet*, to make a complete change, particularly used of a maid becoming a wife. The origin of the phrase is not clear. Cp. Ben Jonson, *The Case is Altered* III. 3. (ed. Gifford, vol. VI, p. 378 seq.): *You to turn tippet! fie, fie!* and Beaumont and Fletcher, *Monsieur Thomas* II. 2. 5 (ed. Darnley, vol. I, p. 472<sup>b</sup>): *You must turn tippet*. (Quoted by Nares.)

2, 141. *hees the onely man*. Cp. M. Ado III. 1. 92 *he is the onely man of Italy*.

2, 144. Cp. V. 1. 91 seqq.

✓ 2, 153. *To watch the coast be cleere*. The same proverbial expression occurs 1 H. VI., I. 3. 89 *see the coast cleared*.

✓ 2, 163. *tall*, lusty, sturdy. Shakespeare generally uses the word in an ironical or derisory sense; see Al. Schmidt, *Shakespeare-Lexicon*, s. v. But the contemporary writers often use it without ridiculing it as an affected term of fashion. Cp. Nares, s. v.

#### ACT IV.

✓ 1, 19. *A horse*, a machine upon which anything is supported by laying it across (Halliwell, *Dict. of Arch. and Prov. Words*, s. v. [3]). See, below, l. 121.

1, 32. The &c. means, of course, that Sir John repeats his old saying "We are all mortal; we'll live till we die, and be merry, and ther's an end." (Collier).

- ✓ 1, 44. *the stone Priest*. Cp. *a stone horse*, i. e. a horse not castrated.
- ✓ 1, 79. *goe up the wind*, i. e. go against the wind. Cp. *down the wind*, in the direction of the wind.
- ✓ 2, 40. *mareterraneum skinker*. The Host seems to mean *mediterraneum skinker*. For *skinker*, tapster, drawer, see Nares s. v.
- ✓ 2, 71. *roomer*, an old sea term; *to go* or *put roomer*, to tack about before the wind. See Halliwell, Dict., s. v. *To cry roomer*, to give the command to tack about before the wind.

## ACT V.

- ✓ 1, 28. *Ile firke him*. *to firke*, to beat, to drub; cp. H. V., IV. 4. 29 *I'll fer him, and firke him, and ferret him*.
- 1, 55, 56. The sense of the lines is: Tell me the plain truth, for your calling forbids all hypocrisy, nor need you be indulgent towards me (*nor beare with me*): I am quite prepared to hear and to bear the whole truth. Collier's conjecture, therefore, ingenious though it be, seems to be unnecessary.
- 1, 125. *Is not this the George?* In order to mislead the two knights, Fabell and his companions seem to have interchanged the signs of the two inns, and to have engaged Smug, in the disguise of Saint George, to stand over the door of the George. Only thus can we account for V. 2. 142 where Smug says *I will be Saint George again*. Cp., besides, ib. 144, 145. See Tieck, Alt-Englisches Theater II, p. 8.
- ✓ 2, 3. *Jenerts*, jennets; see the similar expression of the Host I. 2, 11 *my nimble Giberalliers* (*gibber*, a banky horse).
- ✓ Ib. *banke*. Steevens feels inclined to retain the original reading *banke*. 'The merry Host', he says, 'seems willing to assemble ideas expressive of trust and confidence. The old quartos begin the word *jenert* with a capital letter, and therefore we may suppose *Ienert's bank* to have been the shop of some banker, in whose possession money could be deposited with security. The Irish still say, *as sure as Burton's bank*, and our own countrymen *as sure as the bank of England*.' But even granting that there were country-banks in England as early as the end of the sixteenth century, which is by no means probable, we must own that we cannot make out the meaning of the expression in our passage. Quite as little are we satisfied by Mr. Hazlitt's conjecture *Ienert's back*. The word *bank* which we have introduced into the text, is the ancient spelling of *balk* and is several times found in the old Edd. of Shakespeare (s. Al. Schmidt, Shak.-Lex., s. v.). For the use of *bank* cp. *By reason of the contagion then in London, we balked the inns* Evelyn. (Quoted by Webster.)
- Ib. *house*. The reading *horse* was probably influenced by the preceding *jenerts*. *house* was already conjectured by Nares, s. v.

*Jenerts*. As to the expression *my house, my castle*, cp. I. 1. 2 *Welcome good knight, to the George at Waltham, my free-hold, my tenements, goods and chattels*. By the reading, proposed by Mr. Hazlitt, *my house is my castle*, the construction of the whole passage seems to lose consistency.

- ✓ 2, 12. *the yellowes*, jaundice in horses; cp. Shak., Tam. III. 2. 54.
- 2, 16. *haue we Commedies in hand*, do we perform a comedy.
- 2, 26. *Sine Cerere et Baccho friget Venus*. Ter. Eun. 4, 5, 6.
- ✓ 2, 31. *Lusty Iuuentus* is the title of one of the oldest English Moral-Plays.
- ✓ 2, 46. *Storm*, be passionate, chafe.
- ✓ 2, 49. *to be humorous*, to act from caprice, cp. Span. Trag., Old Plays, ed. Hazlitt, vol. V, p. 31.
- ✓ 2, 57. *like a Cockatrices ege*. The cockatrice or basilisk was fabled to have so deadly an eye as to kill by its very look. Cp. Shak. Rom. III. 2. 45

*Say thou but I,  
And that bare vowel I shall poison more  
Than the death-darting eye of cockatrice.*

- ✓ 2, 59. *skipper*, a thoughtless young fellow. Cp. Shak. Shr. II. 341 *skipper, stand back!*
  - 2, 88. *sit thus long upon their knees*. Milliscent and Mountchensy are kneeling before Clare.
  - ✓ 2, 127. *Spindles noise*. *noise*, a company of musicians; cp. 2 H. IV., II. 4. 13 *find out Sneak's noise*.
-

EHRH. KARRAS, Printer, Halle.



# PSEUDO-SHAKESPEARIAN PLAYS.

EDITED

BY

KARL WARNKE, PH. D.

AND

LUDWIG PROESCHOLDT, PH. D.

III. KING EDWARD III.

---

HALLE:  
MAX NIEMEYER.

1886.

# KING EDWARD III.

REVISED AND EDITED

WITH INTRODUCTION AND NOTES

*Hans Fernow, rev. in E. M. xiii. 94*

BY

KARL WARNKE, PH. D.

AND

LUDWIG PROESCHOLDT, PH. D.

73

---

HALLE:

MAX NIEMEYER.

1886.

B  
✓

A.257857

# INTRODUCTION.



THE earliest edition of the Pseudo-Shakespearian play of King Edward III. (A) was published in 1596, with the title: '*The Raigne of King Edward the third. As it hath bin sundrie times plaied about the Cite of London. London, Printed for Cuthbert Burby. 1596.*' (Preserved in the British Museum; Press-mark C. 21. c. 50).<sup>1)</sup> A second edition of the play (B) was printed in 1599 for the same publisher and with the same title (*Imprinted at London by Simon Stafford, for Cuthbert Burby. And are to be sold at his shop neere the Royall Exchange. 1599*). (Preserved in the British Museum; Press-mark C. 21. b. 40).<sup>2)</sup> Like most old plays, the *Editio princeps* of Edward III. is very badly printed; there is scarcely a page in it which is not disfigured by blunders and misprints. The edition of 1599 corrected part of these mistakes, but we need hardly add that also B is far from being correctly printed; many misprints passed from A into B, and many others were added in B. B, however, is not purely a reprint of A; it was intended to be a revised edition. Unfortunately he who revised the play had no happy hand; for most of the alterations which he introduced into the text are arbitrary and decidedly inferior to the readings of A. It must be regretted therefore that modern editors should sometimes without any cogent reason have departed from A and given the preference to the readings of the edition of 1599.

Most of the gross and palpable blunders exhibited both by A and B were removed by Capell, who in 1760 edited Edward III.

---

<sup>1)</sup> The play was entered in the Stationers' Register on the first of December 1595: '*Cutbert Burby. Entred for his copie under the hands of the wardens A book Intituled Edward the Third and the Blacke Prince, their warres with King Iohn of Fraunce. . . . vjd.*' (Arber's Transcript III, p. 55).

<sup>2)</sup> According to the Stationers' Registers other editions would seem to have followed in 1609, 1617, and 1625; but none of these is known to have been preserved.

in 'Prolusions; or, Select Pieces of ancient Poetry. Compil'd with great Care from their several Originals, and offer'd to the Publick as Specimens of the Integrity that should be found in the Editions of worthy Authors. London. Printed for J. and R. Torson, in the Strand. 1760.' Capell kept what he had promised on the title-page of his edition; each scene of the play bears testimony how much care he took to give the play a form worthy of its contents. He first divided the piece into acts and scenes, added the *Dramatis Personæ*, and, which is more important, happily succeeded in correcting a great number of passages quite unintelligible in A and B. The age in which Capell lived, accounts for his sometimes overshooting the mark. Like Pope in his edition of Shakespeare, Capell, adapting the metre and grammar in Edward III. to the rules of his own time, often altered a word or a line which had been quite correctly printed in the old editions. Nor shall we be surprised to find that he did not scrupulously stick to A or B, but that he took indifferently the reading which he liked best. Mistakes, such as Capell would have thought them, are seldom to be met with in his edition (III. 3. 5 *tell me om.*). On the whole, every sensible reader must acknowledge that Capell's edition is comparatively speaking to be considered a good one, and that in many respects it is superior to all subsequent editions. None of the modern editors seem to have thought it necessary again to collate the old copies of the play; all of them entirely rely upon Capell and his notes.

In his edition of 'The Doubtful Plays of Shakespeare. London and New-York. s. a.', Tyrrell printed the play from Capell's edition, adding only some isolated conjectures of his own. But very few of these conjectures correct the reading of Capell and deserve to be introduced into the critical text of the play, viz. I. i. 105, ib. 134, II. 2. 157.

To the reader of our own age the play has been made accessible by Prof. N. Delius' edition (Pseudo-shaksperesche Dramen, No. 1. Elberfeld, 1854). Delius' edition is based on Capell's Prolusions; where his text differs from that of Capell, it is most frequently owing to a strange mistake made by him. In a list of Various Readings added to his edition, Capell gives beside the *Varia lectio* of A and B a certain number of conjectural emendations which seemed to him very plausible, but not so well-founded

as to be embodied into the text of the play. In his Introductory Notice Capell expressly says: 'he (the reader) will find at the end of each poem all the other rejected readings of the editions made use of; and, intermix'd with these, are some conjectural ones, being such as were thought plausible, but not of force enough to demand a place in the text. These latter readings have no mark given them, the others are distinguish'd by the mark of the edition they belong to.' Prof. Delius, having to all appearance not read that notice, erroneously supposed *all* the readings contained in Capell's list to have been drawn from some old edition, and consequently adopted a great part of Capell's conjectures for his edition. Besides, Delius, without giving any notice of it, altered Capell's text by introducing a number of conjectures of his own. The text which results from such a proceeding is of course by no means to be trusted, and it is the less so, as the critical notes given by Delius are scanty and inexact in the highest degree. As to the conjectural readings proposed by Capell and adopted by Delius, only a few of them seem to be incontestible, viz. I. 1. 39, I. 2. 104, I. 2. 153, III. 2. 58, III. 3. 1, III. 3. 25; most of them, however, deserve no place in the text of a critical edition. Of the conjectures made by Delius, only five (I. 1. 36, I. 2. 159, II. 1. 57, II. 2. 40, II. 2. 117) have been adopted by us.

Delius' edition has had the honour of being reprinted in the 'Leopold Shakspeare' (p. 1037—1056) and in the Doubtful Plays of William Shakespeare, edited by Max Moltke (Tauchnitz edition, Vol. 1041). The former is a mere reprint of Delius' edition, into which even obvious misprints have passed, cp. II. 1. 453 *same* f. *shame*. Mr. Moltke, likewise, worked on Delius' edition, adopting, now and then, some reading given by Delius in his *Varia Lectio*<sup>1)</sup> and inserting some few conjectures of his own.<sup>2)</sup>

The latest modern edition of Edward III. has been published by J. P. Collier in The Plays and Poems of W. Shakespeare, with the purest text and briefest notes [including Edward III., The Two

<sup>1)</sup> Viz. II. 1. 184 *treasure* f. *treasurer*, II. 2. 103 *sweep* f. *beat*, ib. 124 *objection* f. *subjection*, III. 5. 36 *his green courage with those thoughts* f. *his courage with those grievous thoughts*, IV. 4. 124 *wings* f. *strings*.

<sup>2)</sup> Viz. II. 1. 414 *environ'd* f. *inwir'd* (see ad loc.), ib. 418 *then* om., II. 2. 117 *fair rarities* f. *varieties*, ib. 158 *Arrive* f. *To arrive*, III. 2. 59 *Turned aside* f. *Turned but aside*, IV. 4. 75 *your* f. *our*.

Noble Kinsmen, Mucedorus, and A Yorkshire Tragedy]. Maidenhead (completed in 1878). Limited to 58 Copies.' Mr. Collier, too, seems only to have made use of Capell's edition, and not to have consulted the old editions. Like Prof. Delius, he succeeded in correcting some lines of the play, viz. I. 2. 159, II. 1. 285, II. 2. 40; on the whole, however, he treated both the metre and the text of the play in quite an arbitrary and uncritical manner.

The play of Edward III. has been three times translated into German, first in 1836: Vier Schauspiele von Shakespeare, übersetzt von Ludwig Tieck. Stuttgart und Tübingen, 1836. From an essay of Hermann von Friesen (Shakespeare-Jahrbuch II, p. 64 seqq.) we learn that the four plays were translated not by Tieck, but by Wolf von Baudissin, and that Tieck only intended to accompany them with an introduction, which, however, was never published. The translations of Ortlepp (Nachträge zu Shakespeare's Werken, Stuttgart 1840, vol. II) and of Max Moltke (Leipzig, Universalbibliothek 685) rely in all essential points on that of Tieck-Baudissin.<sup>1)</sup>

The greater part of Edward III. is based on Holinshed's Chronicle of England, the episode I, 2—II on Holinshed's Chronicle of Scotland and on Painter's Palace of Pleasure. With the exception of the scenes in which Villiers plays the principal part (IV. 1. 19—43, ib. 3. 1—56) and which the poet must have derived from some other source<sup>2)</sup>, there is no reason to believe that the author of the play consulted any other book. We think it best to give the

---

<sup>1)</sup> Ch. F. Weisse, the author of 'Eduard der Dritte, ein Trauerspiel in fünf Aufzügen' (Beytrag zum Deutschen Theater. Erster Theil. Zwote, verbesserte und vermehrte Auflage. Leipzig, 1765) appears not to have known the English play. His source was Rapin Thoyras' History of England. Cp. J. Minor, Ch. F. Weisse und seine Beziehungen zur deutschen Literatur des 18. Jahrhunderts, Innsbruck 1880, p. 206—208. — Whether there is an affinity or no between the Pseudo-Shakespearian 'Edward III.' and the tragedy of 'Edouard III.' by Gresset (translated into German, Wien 1758) and La Calprenède's 'Edouard III.' we are unable to say, as neither of the works have been accessible to us.

<sup>2)</sup> The name of *Villiers* occurs in Holinshed as the name of a place, II, p. 641.

passages from which the facts were taken, here at full, with the acts and scenes which they illustrate.<sup>1)</sup>

I. i. 1—50 (Hol. II, 605; A. D. 1333): 'This yeare was the warre proclaimed betwixt England and France, cheefely by the procurement of the lord Robert Dartois, a Frenchman, as then banished out of France, vpon occasion of a claime by him made vnto the earledome of Artois. This lord Robert after he was banished France, fled ouer vnto King Edward, who gladlie receiued him and made him earle of Richmond.'

(Ib., p. 611, 612): 'It is well knowne that Philip le Beau King of France had issue by his wife queene Jone three sons, Lewis surnamed Hutine, Philip Le Long, and Charles le Beau: also two daughters, the one dieing in hir infancie, and the other named Isabell liued, and was married vnto Edward the second of that name, king of England, who begot of hir this Edward the third, that made this claime. The three sonnes of the foresaid Philip le Beau reigned ech after other as kings of France . . . . (All three of them dying without leaving any heir) King Edward averred that the kingdome of France appertained vnto him as lawfull heire, bicause that he alone was remaining of the kings stock, and touched his mothers father Philip le Beau, in the next degree of consanguinitie, as he that was borne of his daughter Isabell.'

I. i. 56 seqq. According to Holinshed King Edward III. did homage to the French King for the dukedome of Guyenne. (II. p. 597; A. D. 1329) 'In the third yeare of his reigne about the Ascension-tide, King Edward went ouer into France, and coming to the French king Philip de Valois, as then being at Amiens, did there his homage vnto him for the duchie of Guien.'

I. i. 121—138. For the King's campaign in Scotland, the author of the play seems to have made use of several accounts found in Holinshed. (V, p. 376) 'After this the governor [of King David] came to the castle of Lochindoris and laid siege to it, wherewithin was the countesse of Atholl, the wife of the late slaine earle David. This woman hauing knowledge aforehand, that

---

<sup>1)</sup> We take the opportunity of expressing our thanks to the Administration of the University-Library at Göttingen for having favoured us with 'Holinshed's Chronicles of England, Scotland and Ireland. In six volumes. London 1807 seqq.', from which we give our quotations.

hir house should be besieged, had sent vnto the King of England and to Edward Balioll for succours. The king of England now doubting least all the strengths in Scotland, kept by such as were his friends, would be lost without recouerie, if the same were not the sooner rescued, he raised an armie of fortie thousand men, and entering therewith into Scotland, came to the castle of Lochindoris aforesaid. The Scots that lay there at siege, vpon knowledge had of his comming towards them, brake vp, and departed from thence. Heerevpon, when he had refreshed the hold with new men, munition, and vittels, he tooke the countesse foorth with him, and passed with bloudie sword thorough Murrey . . .'

I. 1. 134, 135. S. ad IV. 1. 1—18.

I. 1. 147—152 (V, p. 608). 'Thus we may perceiue that Flanders rested wholie at king Edward's commandement.' *ib.* 'The aliance of the earle of Heinault first procured the king of England all these freends.' *ib.* 'There was sent to the emperour to procure his freendship, from the king of England, the marques of Gulike . . . The duke of Gelderland . . . trauelled most earnestlie to procure him all the freends within the empire that he could make.'

I. 2. 1—73 (V, p. 378). 'About the same time sir William Montacute earle of Salisburie, togither with the earle of Arundell, came into Scotland with a great power of men, and besieged the castle of Dunbar, lieing at the same for the space of 22 weeks. Within the said castell was the countesse hir selfe, surnamed blacke Agnes of Dunbar, who shewed such manlie defense, that no gaine was to be got anie waies forth at hir hands, so that in the end they were constrained to raise their siege, and to depart without speed of their purpose. It is said; that this countesse vsed manie pleasant words in iesting and tawnting at the enimes dooings, thereby the more to incourage hir souldiers.

The Earl of Douglas is very often mentioned in Holinshed, f. i. II, p. 604: 'The Lord W<sup>m</sup> Douglas still coasted the Englishmen, doing to them what damage he might.' Likewise, the author of the play found in Holinshed that the Earl of Warwick was sent into Scotland (II, p. 606). Cp., besides, *ib.* p. 602 (A. D. 1334) 'then entering into Scotland, came to Roxborough where he repared the castell which had beene aforetime destroyed.'

*ib.* 94 seqq. The Countess of Salisbury is also mentioned in Holinshed (II, p. 629): 'It chanced that King Edward finding

either the garter of the queene or of some lady with whom he was in loue (marginal note: The countes of Salisbury), being fallen from hir leg, stooped downe and tooke it vp, whereat diuerse of the nobles found matter to iest, and to talke their fansies merilie, touching the king's affection towards the woman, vnto whome he said, that if he liued, it should come to passe that most high honor should be giuen vnto them for the garter's sake: and therevpon shortlie after, he deuised and ordeined this order of the garter, with such a posie, wherby he signified that his nobles iudged otherwise of him than the truth was.'

The materials for the scenes following (I. 2 — II. 1 and 2) have been taken from Painter's Novel. But as the poet was indebted to it merely for the leading idea, not for any particulars of the episode, we think it sufficient only to give a summary of the contents of Painter's diffuse and prosy narrative.

In a war made by King Edward on King David of Scotland, the Scots lay siege to the castle of Roxborough, which is valiantly defended by the Countess of Salisbury. Being pressed hard by the besiegers, the Countess sends for help to King Edward. On hearing of his approach, the Scots speedily decamp; King Edward arrives and stays for some days in the Castle. Struck with the beauty and graces of the Countess, whose name is Elips, he falls desperately in love with her, and endeavours to win her affections. All his proposals, however, are indignantly rejected by the Countess. Quite as little is she inveigled by a love-letter which the King, on his return to London, addresses to her. Meanwhile Earl Salisbury, the husband, and Earl Warwick, the father of the Countess, who have been kept prisoners in France, are released; the former, however, having long been ill, dies before coming home. When Warwick has arrived in London, the King induces him to intercede with the Countess in his favour. The old Earl who has sworn to help the king, without knowing for what purpose his assistance is required, keeps his word, and tries, not without many sighs and tears, to prevail upon his daughter to yield to the king. Highly gratified to see how firmly resolved she is not to deviate from the path of honour, he imparts her refusal to the king. Fallen into disfavour, he retires from the court and lives on his estates, leaving, however, his wife and daughter in London. Several times the King sends his secretary

to make the Countess change her mind; but seeing that her chastity is not to be shaken by words, he resolves to make sure of her by force. The mother, acquainted with the king's purpose, and fearing that her whole family should have to suffer from his disfavour, apparently succeeds in overpersuading her daughter. Accompanied by the secretary, the two ladies repair to the Palace. The King, delighted to see at length his wishes accomplished, leads the Countess into his apartment. Here, however, she throws herself at his feet, and presenting a knife to him, implores him rather to kill her than deprive her of honour and chastity. The King, overcome by the incorruptible sentiments and the steadfast character of the Countess, changes his mind, and raising the lady from the ground, kisses her and leads her out of the room. The whole court being just assembled, Edward declares to have chosen the Countess to be his queen, and the nuptial ceremony is instantly performed by the Archbishop of York.

III. 1. Battle at Sluise (Hol. II, p. 614; A. D. 1340): 'The French nauie laie betwixt Sluise and Blancbergh so that when the king of England approched, either part descried other, and therewith prepared them to battell. The king of England staid, till the sunne which at the first was in his face, came somewhat westward, and so had it vpon his backe, that it should not hinder the sight of his people, and so therewith did set vpon his enimies with great manhood, who likewise verie stoutlie incountered him, by reason whereof issued a sore and deadlie fight betwixt them . . . at length the Englishmen hauing the aduantage, not onelie of the sunne, but also of the wind and tide, so fortunatlie that the French fleet was driven into the streights in such wise that neither the souldiers nor mariners could helpe themselues, in somuch that both heauen, sea, and wind seemed all to haue conspired against the Frenchmen. . . .

III. 13. 1—10 (Hol. II, p. 636): . . . 'at length by one of the prisoners named Gobin de Grace; he (the king of England) was told where he might passe with his armie ouer the riuier of Some, at a foord in the same riuier, being hard in the bottome, and verie shallow at an eb water . . . . When the king of England had thus passed the riuier, he acquitted Gobin Agace and all his companie of their ransomes, and gaue to the same Gobin an hundred nobles, and a good horse, and so the king rode forth as he did before.

III. 3. 219—226. (Hol. II, p. 637; A. D. 1346): 'Then he ordained three battels, in the first was the prince of Wales, and with him the earle of Warwike . . . (*not Audley*) . . . In the second battle was the earle of Northampton . . . (*not Derby*) . . . The third battell the king led himself.'

III. 4. 1—13. (Hol. II, p. 638; A. D. 1346): 'There were of Genowaies crosbowes to the number of twelue or fifteen thousand, the which were commanded to go on before, and with their shot to begin the battell; but they were so werie with going on foot that morning six leagues armed with their crosbowes, that they said to their constables "We be not well vsed, in that we are commanded to fight this daie, for we be not in case to doo any great feat of armes, we haue more need of rest." These words came to the hearing of the earle of Alanson, who said "A man is well at ease to be charged with such a sort of rascals that faint and fail now at most need" . . . . When the Genowaies felt the arrowes persing their heads, armes and breasts, many of them cast downe their crosbowes, and cut the strings, and returned discomfited. When the French king saw them flee awaie, he said "Slea these rascals, for they will let and trouble us without reason."

III. 5. 10—56. (Hol. II, p. 639; A. D. 1346): 'They of that battell (the Prince's battle) had as then inough to doo, in somuch that some which were about him, as the earle of Northampton, and others sent to the king, where he stood aloft on a windmill hill, requiring him to aduance forward, and come to their aid, they being as thus sore laid to of their enimies. The king hereupon demanded if his sonne were slaine, hurt or felled to the earth. "No (said the knight that brought the message), but he is sore matched." "Well (said the king) returne to him and them that sent you, and saie to them I will that this iournie be his, with the honor therof." With this answer the knight returned, which greatlie encouraged them to doo their best to win the spurs, being half abashed in that they had so sent to the king for aid."

III. 5. 61—100 (Hol. II, p. 639; A. D. 1346): 'Among other which died that daie, these I find registred by name as cheefest, Iohn king of Boheme' . . . . 'When the Frenchmen were clearelie ouercome, and those that were left alieue fled and gone, so that the Englishmen heard no more noise of them, king Edward came down from the hill (on the which he stood all that day with his

helmet still on his head) and going to the prince, imbraced him in his armes, and kissed him, saing: "Fair sonne, God send you good perseuerance in this your prosperous beginning, you haue noblie acquitted your selfe, you are well worthie to haue the gouernance of a realme committed to your hands for your valiant doings." The prince inclined himselfe to the earth in honouring his father, as he best could. This done, they thanked God together with their souldiers for their good aduenture . . . . (ib. p. 640) . . . the king ordered to search what the number was of them that were slaine, and vpon the view taken, it was reported vnto him, that there were found dead eleuen princes, foure score baronets, twelue hundred knights, and more than thirtie thousand of the meaner sort.

IV. 1. 1—18 (Hol. II, p. 621; A. D. 1341): 'For whereas contention arose betwixt one Charles of Blois and John earle of Mountford, about the right to the duchie of Britaine; the earle of Mountford, thinking that he had wrong offered him at the French king's hands, who fauoured his aduersarie Charles de Blois, alied himselfe with the king of England . . . . (ib. p. 623) At length a truce was taken for a time during the which the countess of Richmond (? *Mountford*) came ouer into England, to commune with king Edward, touching the affaires of Britaine, who appointed sir Robert Dartois, earle of Richmond, the earles of Salisburie, Pembroke . . . to go with her ouer into Britain.'

IV. 2. 7—35 (Hol. II, p. 640; A. D. 1346): 'When the said sir John de Vienne (captain of Calis) saw the manner of the English host, and what the king's intention was, he constreined all the poore and meane people to depart out of the towne. The king of England perceiuing that this was doone of purpose to spare vittels, would not driue them backe againe to helpe to consume the same, but rather pitied them; and therefore did not onelie shew them so much grace to suffer them to passe through his host, but also gaue them meat and drinke to dinner, and moreouer two pence sterling to euerie person.'

IV. 2. 37—61 (Hol. II, p. 643 seqq.; A. D. 1346): 'All this while the siege continued still before Calis, and the French king amongst other deuises which he imagined to raise the king of England from it, procured the Scots to make warre into England, in somuch that Dauid king of Scotland, notwithstanding the truce which yet indured betwixt him and the king of England, vpon hope now

to doo some great exploit, by reason of the absence of king Edward, intangled then with the besieging of Calis, he assembled the whole puissance of his realme . . . and with them entered into England, burning, spoiling, and wasting the countrie till he came as far as Durham. The lords of England that were left at home with the queene for the sure keeping and defense of the realme . . . assembled an host of all such people as were able to beare armour, both preests and other. Their generall assemblie was appointed at Newcastle, and when they were all together, they were to the number of 1200 men of armes, 3000 archers, and 7000 other, with the Welshmen, and issuing out of the towne, they found the Scots readie to come forward to incounter them . . . . The queene was there in person, and went from ranke to ranke, and encouragd hir people in the best manner she could, and that done she departed, committing them and their cause to God, the giuer of all victorie . . . . The king was taken in the field sore wounded, for he fought valiantly. He was prisoner to an esquier of Northumberland, who as soone as he had taken him, rode out of the field with him accompanied onlie with eight of his seruants, and rested not till he came to his owne castell where he dwelled, being thirtie miles distant from the place of the battell. The queene of England being certeinlie informed that the king of Scots was taken, and that John Copland had conveyed him out of the field, no man vnderstood to what place, she incontinentlie wrote to him, commanding him forthwith to bring his prisoner king Dauid vnto hir presence: but John Copland wrote to hir againe for a determinate answer, that he would not deliuer his prisoner the said king Dauid vnto any person liuing, man or woman, except onelie to the king of England, his souereigne lord and master. Herevpon the queene wrote letters to the king, signifieng to him both of the happie victorie chanced to his people against the Scots, and also of the demeanour of John Copland, in deteining the Scottish king.'

IV. 2. 62—85 (Hol. II, p. 647 seq.; A. D. 1347): 'The French king perceiving he could not have his purpose, brake vp his host and returned to France, bidding Calis farewell. After that the French king with his host was once departed, without ministring anie succour to them within the towne, they began to sue for a parlee, which being granted, in the end they were contented to

yeeld, and the king granted to receiue them and the towne on these conditions; that six of the cheefe burgesses of the towne should come foorth bareheaded, barefooted, and barelegged, and in their shirts, with halters about their necks, with the keies of the towne and castell in their hands, to submit themselues simplie to the kings will, and the residue he was contented to make mercie.'

IV. 3. 63—85 and IV..6. 9—17. (Hol. II, p. 665): 'Here is to be remembered that when this cardinall of Piergort was sent from the pope to trauell betwixt the parties for a peace to be had, and that the pope exhorted him verie earnestlie to shew his vttermost diligence and indeuour therein: at his setting foorth to go on that message, the said cardinall (as was said) made this answer: Most blessed father (said he) either we will persuade them to peace and quietnesse, either else shall the verie flintstones crie out of it. But this he spake not of himselfe, as it was supposed, but being a prelate in that time, he prophesied what should follow; for when the English archers had bestowed all their arrowes vpon their enimies, they tooke vp pebles from the place where they stood, being full of those kind of stones, and approaching to their enimies, they drew the same with such violence on them, that lighting against their helmets, armor and targets, they made a great ringing noise, so that the cardinals prophesie was fulfilled, that he would either persuade a peace, or else the stones should crie out thereof.'

IV. 4. (Hol. II, p. 665; A. D. 1356): 'The prince offered to render into the kings hands all that he had woone in that voiage, as well townes as castels, and also to release all the prisoners, which he or any of his men had taken in that iournie: and further he was contented to haue been sworne not to beare armour against the French king within the terme of seuen yeares next following. But the French king would not agree therevnto: the vttermost that he would agree vnto, was this, that the prince and an hundred of his knights should yeeld themselues as prisoners vnto him, otherwise he would not haue the matter taken vp. . . . But the prince in no wise could be brought to any such vnreasonable condition.'

IV. 5. (Hol. II, p. 638, A. D. 1346: Cressy): 'Also at the same instant there fell a great raine and an eclipse with a terrible thunder, and before the raine, there came flieng ouer both armies a great number of crowes, for feare of the tempest comming: then

anon the aire began to wax cleare, and the sunne to shine faire and bright, which was right in the Frenchmen's eies, and on the Englishmen's backs . . .'

IV. 6. (Hol. II, p. 666; A. D. 1356): 'The vaward of the Frenchmen... began to disorder within a while, by reason of the shot of the archers, together with the helpe of the men of armes, amongst whome in the forefront was the lord Iames Audeley, to performe a vow which he had made, to be one of the first setters on . . . . The noble prowesse of the said lord Iames Audley breaking through the Frenchmens battell with the slaughter of many enimies was that day most apparant. The loiall constancie of the noble earles of Warwike and Suffolke, that fought so stontlie, so earnestlie, and so fiercelie, was right manifest. And the prince himselfe did not onelie fulfill the office of a noble cheefteine, but also of a right valiant and expert souldiour, attempting whatsoeuer any other warriour would in such case have done.'

IV. 7. (Hol. II, p. 667): 'The prince of Wales . . . manfullie assailed the maine battell of the Frenchmen, where the king himselfe was, who like a valiant prince would not flee, but fought right manfullie: so that if the fourth part of his men had doone halfe their parts as he did his, the victorie by likelihood had rested (as Froissard saith) on his side: but he was forsaken by his three sonnes, and of his brother the duke of Orleence, which fled out of the battle with cleare hands. Finallie, after huge slaughter made of those noblemen, and other which abode with him euen to the end, he was taken, and so likewise was his yongest son Philip.'

IV. 8 and 9. 18—59. (Hol. II, p. 668): 'The prince gaue to the lord Iames Audelie (who had receiued in the battell many sore wounds) fye hundred marks of yearelie reuenues assigned foorth of his lands in England. The which gift the knight granted as freele as he had receiued it vnto foure of his esquiers, which in the battell had beene euer attendant about his person, without whose aid and valiant support he knew well that he had beene slaine sundrie times in the same battell by his enimies, and therefore thought it a dutie of humanitie and gratitude to make them amends with some temporall recompense that had saued his life, than the which nothing is more deere . . . When the prince heard that he had so doone, he meruelled What his meaning was thereby, and caused him to be brought before his presence, and demanded

of him wherefore he had bestowed vpon him, and whether he thought that gift too meane for him or not. The lord Audelie so excused himselfe in extolling the good seruice doone to him by his esquiers, though he had so manie times escaped the dangers of death, that the prince did not onelie confirme the resignation of the five hundred marks, but gave him five hundred marks more of like yearelie reuenues, in maner and forme as he had receiued the other.'

IV. 9. 1—17. Holinshed relates (II, p. 668): 'The prince made a great supper in his lodging that night to the French king, and to the most part of his nobles that were taken prisoners, and did all the honour that he could deuise to the king. And where he perceiued by his cheere and countenance, that his heart was full of pensieue greefe, carefull thought, and heauinesses, he comforted him in the best manner that he might.'

V. 1—3 and 64—96. (Hol. II, 645): 'King Edward immediatly by letters commanded Iohn Copland to repaire vnto him where he laie at siege before Calis, which with all conuenient speed he did, and there so excused himselfe of that which the queene had found herselfe greeued with him, for deteining the king of Scots from hir, that the king did not onelie pardon him, but also gaue to him five hundred pounds sterling of yearelie rent, to him and to his heires bodie, commanding him yet vpon his returne into England to deliuer king Dauid unto the queene, which he did, and so excused himselfe also vnto hir, that she was therewith satisfied and contented. Then the queene, after she had taken order for the safe keeping of the king of Scots, and good gouernement of the realme, tooke the sea and sailed ouer to the king hir husband still lieng before Calis.'

V. 4—59. (Hol. II, 647): 'This determinate resolution of king Edward being intimated to the commons of the towne, assembled in the market-place by the sound of the common bell before the capteine, caused manie a weeping eie amongst them: but in the end, when it was perceiued that no other grace would be obtained, six of the most wealtheie burgesses of all the towne agreed to hazard their liues for the safeguard of the residue, and so according to the prescript order deuised by the king they went foorth to the gates, and were presented to the king, before whome they kneeled downe, offered to him the keies of the towne, and besought him to haue mercie vpon them. But the king regarded them with a fell coun-

tenance, commanded streight that their heads should be stricken off. And although many of the noble men did make great intreatance for them, yet would no grace be shewed, vntill the queene, being great with child, came and kneeled downe before the king hir husband, and with lamentable cheere and weeping eies intreated so much for them, that finallie the kings anger was assuaged and his rigor turned to mercie so that he gaue the prisoners vnto hir to doo hir pleasure with them. Then the queene commanded them to be brought into hir chamber, and caused the halters to be taken from their necks, clothed them anew, gaue them their dinner, and bestowing vpon ech of them six nobles, appointed them to be conueied out of the host in safeguard, and set at libertie.'

None other of the so-called Pseudo-shakespearian plays has so often been ascribed to England's greatest poet as King Edward III. For the first time we find it attributed to Shakespeare in T. Goff's Catalogue 1656. More than a hundred years later Capell took up T. Goff's suggestion and printed Edward III. as 'a Play thought to be writ by Shakespeare.' Far, however, from obtruding his hypothesis upon the reader, Capell unpretendingly says in the Introduction of the play: 'it must be confess'd that its being his work is conjecture only, and matter of opinion, and the reader must form one of his own, guided by what is now before him, and by what he shall meet with in perusal of the piece itself.' With much less reserve J. P. Collier stood up for Shakespeare's authorship in his essay: 'King Edward III.: a historical play by William Shakespeare. An essay in vindication of Shakespeare's authorship of the play.' (Privately printed; dated Maidenhead, March 14<sup>th</sup>, 1874.) He even goes as far as to say at the end of his essay: 'I take shame to myself that I could omit, in both my editions of Shakespeare, such a grand contribution to the series of our English dramas as King Edward III.'<sup>1</sup>)

In Germany Tieck seems to have been of opinion that the play was composed by Shakespeare. Attributing plays of much

---

<sup>1</sup>) In a letter addressed to the Athenæum (No. 2422, March 28, 1874, p. 426) J. P. Collier set forth the same theory, in a somewhat abridged form, but without adding any new arguments to it.

less intrinsic value to Shakespeare, he would certainly also have claimed Edward III. for his favorite poet, if he had got the opportunity of publishing the introduction which he had promised to add to Baudissin's translation. The subsequent translators, Ortlepp and Moltke, likewise think Shakespeare to have been the author of the play; neither of them, however, gives any reasons for his supposition. Moltke, it is true, promised in a postscript added to his translation to treat the question at large in his *Shakespeare-Museum*; but the latter ceased to exist, before any article in vindication of Shakespeare's authorship of our play had been published in it.

In the first edition of 'Shakespeare's *Dramatische Kunst*' Ulrici, judging only from Baudissin's translation of the play, was inclined to ascribe Edward III. to Shakespeare<sup>1)</sup>; in the third edition of his book, however, having meanwhile read the English original, he no longer believes Shakespeare to have been the author of the play, though still freely allowing the great merits of which the play is possessed.

What were the reasons, we ask, which engaged Capell and Collier, the German translators, and for a time so eminent a critic as Ulrici, to attribute the play to Shakespeare?

The period into which our play leads us is among the most brilliant in English history. The victories obtained by King Edward in France, and the triumphs gained by his son the Black Prince over the French king must have filled the heart of every Englishman with pride and delight, and might well have tempted the pen of a poet like Shakespeare. The same sources, Holinshed and Painter, which so richly yielded for the *Histories* and *Comedies*, also afforded ample materials for the reign of King Edward III.

But not only the subject itself, but also the manner in which it is treated, reminds the reader of Shakespeare. In the first scenes the King appears to be bent only on prosecuting his rights in France and on delivering his country from the inroads of the

---

<sup>1)</sup> Ulrici's opinion was acceded to by Ch. Knight in his *Pictorial Edition of Shakspeare's Works, Doubtful Plays*, p. 280 seqq.

treacherous Scot. The highest designs that ever king devised, are floating before his mind's eye: he will procure both the happiness and greatness of his country. But before destiny thinks him worthy of mastering his mighty foes, he must master himself and get the upperhand of his own unruly temper. The mighty King, whose very approach makes his enemies tremble, who appears to us as the bravest of the brave, plays quite an unworthy and unkingly part as soon as he leaves the path of honour and casts his eye on the wife of his vassal. He scolds at the drum which interrupts his love-sick musing; he prefers the company of his poet-secretary to that of his loyal generals; he lends no ear to the account of his ambassadors, and it is only for a moment that the aspect of his warlike son reminds him of his duty: no sooner does he hear the word Countess than he sinks back again into his shameful passion. True energy, however, and true greatness of mind will overcome all temptations. The virtue and chastity of the Countess form the bright star which leads the king back again to the way of honour and duty. Having conquered himself, Edward, truly great, may conquer others. The proud King of France and his overweening sons must feel the edge of Edward's sword: God gives the victory not to him who boasts of his own strength and confides in his own superior power, but to him whose cause is just and whose character has proved worthy of victory. And that indeed King Edward is worthy of victory, is well indicated at the end of the play by the mercy which he shows to the stubborn inhabitants of Calais. Thus, it will seem, the author has tried to show in his play that he only deserves to be crowned with success, and to become a master of others who strives to check his own passions, and to be a master of himself. There is no doubt that the same idea pervades a great number of the tragedies and historical plays of Shakespeare.<sup>1)</sup>

Besides the king some other characters of the play are delineated in a manner which sufficiently proves that the author of King Edward III. was superior to the greater number of contemporary

---

<sup>1)</sup> Mr. Furnivall (Leopold-Shakspeare, p. CII) points out the double repetition of the leading idea of the King-and-Countess scene — a man won from intended baseness by the appeal of a nobler nature: first, Prince Charles of France by Villiers's appeal to him; second, King John of France by his son Prince Charles's appeal to him.

playwrights. The King's Son, the famous Black Prince, appears to us possessed with all those qualities which made him the darling prince of the English nation. Though he has just left his study and books, he is equal in valour and fearlessness to any knight who has passed his life in battle and slaughter. The battalions of the French surround him 'like emmets on a bank', and none is near to succour him; but his dauntless sword carves him a way and wins him a well-deserved knighthood. With his own hand he slays the mighty ally of the French, the king of Boheme; with his own hand he takes King John prisoner, and thus ends the long war. Though encompassed by the greatest dangers, the Prince, full of noble pride, rejects the dishonourable conditions proposed to him by the French king; but his heart bleeds when seeing Old Audley, his faithful companion, wounded to death, and in every way possible he endeavours to show him his high esteem and gratitude. Not only towards his friends but also towards his enemies Edward proves kind-hearted and humane: all those towns which willingly yield to his arms are spared by him, and only those which stubbornly make head against him must taste of the bitter fruit of war. On the height of glory and success the Prince does not forget that Heaven has chosen him to be his instrument, and humbly he acknowledges that God alone has guided his hand and sword. Only one feature seems not to be in unison with the character of the Prince as represented by our poet. When King John and his son have been taken prisoners, Prince Edward addresses them in a discourteous and even rude manner. This behaviour is the more surprising to us as according to Holinshed he did all in his power to pay his respect to the captive monarch, and to make him forget his misfortune.

The contrast between Edward and his adversaries is well set forth by the poet. All the virtues with which the king of England and the Black Prince are adorned, fall short in King John and his sons. As the cause for which they have taken up arms, is defective in itself, so their own and their soldiers' courage is far from being equal to the task. King Edward confides in God and his right, King John only trusts in his superior powers; the minds of the English rest unshaken by all vicissitudes of fortune, the French stand horror-stricken on hearing a mere prophesy. The English king and the Prince of Wales are loyal and equitable both

to their friends and enemies, the king of France even refuses to ratify the word pawned by his own son. So indeed it seems but just that the French king and his sons should be subdued by the English.

Little is to be said of the generals and captains forming the train of the two kings; in sentiment and even in language they seem to be cast in the same mould; loyalty and courage are the principles on which all of them regulate their doings.

With much more skill the poet has drawn the portrait of two representatives of the English and French people. Copland, the squire who refuses to give up his prisoner King David of Scotland to any other person but to the king, is indeed a thoroughly English character. His upright though stubborn behaviour must deservedly have been applauded by the English public of the age of Queen Elizabeth.

The episode in which Villiers plays the principal part has not been taken from Holinshed. The poet doubtless added those scenes, not only to set forth the mean character of the French king, but also to represent the enemies of his nation as not wholly devoid of honour and righteousness.

The talent of the author of our play, however, may best be seen in the Countess-episode (I. 2 — II. 2). Out of the heroine of a dull Italian novel he has formed a character which would certainly have done honour to any playwright of the age. The Countess is indeed, as A. W. Ward (*Engl. Dram. Lit.*, I, p. 457) says, 'the true representative of high breeding united to moral purity. Bright and courteous in word and demeanour, she is as firm in her adherence to virtue as the prude who has no answer but a shudder to the first suggestion of harm. She is the type of what the king acknowledges her to be, when her constancy has overcome his passion:

*Arise, true English lady.'*

It is true that also this episode is not without its drawbacks. We shall hardly sympathize with the part the Earl of Warwick plays as go-between between the king and his daughter, the Countess of Salisbury. No right-minded person could ever have hit upon Warwick's expedient in order to settle the conflict between honour and duty. In Bandello's Novel first the Count and afterwards the Countess simply advise their daughter to yield to the king; the

author of our play was well aware that such a character would not become the English stage; but trying to modify it, he did not succeed in giving it such a turn as to excite our sympathy.

But be this as it may, certain it is that the poet did not want power to fix and develop a character which he beheld before his mind's eye.

As to the diction of the play, it must be allowed that in a number of passages it rises above the pitch generally attained by the playwrights of the age (Cp. I. 1. 67 seqq., II. 2. 174 seqq., IV. 4. 40 seqq., IV. 5. 92 seqq.). It is more surprising that sometimes thoughts and expressions occurring in Shakespearian plays are also to be met with in King Edward III.<sup>1)</sup> Cp., e. g.,

- I. 2. 131 *Now, in the Sunne alone it doth not lye,  
With light to take light from a mortall eye.*
- and L. L. L. I. 1. 77 *Light, seeking light, doth light of light beguile.*
- II. 1. 255 seqq. *He that doth clip or counterfeit your stamp,  
Shall die, my Lord: And will your sacred selfe  
Comit high treason against the King of heauen,  
To stamp his Image in forbidden mettel,  
Forgetting your alleageance and your othe.*
- and Meas. II. 4. 42 *It were as good  
To pardon him that hath from nature stolen  
A man already made, as to remit  
Their saucy sweetness, that do coin Heaven's image  
In stamps that are forbid.*
- II. 1. 438 *The freshest summers day doth soonest taint  
The lothed carrion that it seemes to kisse.*
- and Haml. II. 2. 181 *For if the sun breed maggots in a dead dog, being  
a good kissing carrion.*
- IV. 4. 140 *If, then, we hunt for death, why do we feare it?  
If we feare it, why do we follow it?  
If we do feare, how can we shun it?  
If we do feare, with feare we do but aide  
The thing we feare, to seize on vs the sooner:  
If wee feare not, then no resolved proffer  
Can ouerthrow the limit of our fate;*

---

<sup>1)</sup> Cp., particularly, H. von Friesen's essay: Edward III., angeblich ein Stück von Shakespeare (Shakespeare-Jahrbuch II, p. 64).

- For, whether ripe or rotten, drop we shall,  
As we do drawe the lotterie of our doome.*
- and Jul. Cæs. II. 2. 32 *Cowards die many times before their deaths;  
The valiant never taste of death but once.  
Of all the wonders that I yet have heard,  
It seems to me most strange that men should fear;  
Seeing that death, a necessary end,  
Will come, when it will come.*
- IV. 9. 29 *My armes shall be thy grave.*
- and 1H VI., IV. 7. 32 *Now my old arms are young John Talbot's grave.*
- V. 1. 39 *Ah, be more milde vnto these yeelding men!  
It is a glorious thing to stablsh peace,  
And kings approch the nearest vnto God  
By giuing life and safety vnto men.*
- and Merch. IV. 1. 192 *But mercy is above this sceptred sway,  
It is enthroned in the hearts of kings,  
It is an attribute of God himself,  
And earthly power doth then show likest God's,  
When mercy seasons justice.*
- The line II. 1. 451 *Lillies, that fester, smel far worse then weeds*  
even literally occurs again in Shakespeare's Sonnets (94, 14), and  
the passage II. 2. 195 seqq.
- Arise, true English Ladie; whom our Ile  
May better boast of, then ever Romaine might  
Of her, whose ransackt treasure hath taskt  
The vaine indeuor of so many pens*
- is considered by most critics as a direct allusion to Shakespeare's Lucrece.

Considering all these arguments we can hardly be astonished that Capell, the German translators, and Collier have felt inclined to ascribe the play to Shakespeare. And yet, though our play is certainly superior to many other contemporary pieces, and though some passages even directly remind the reader of Shakespeare, we are nevertheless of opinion that the whole of the play is such as to prevent us from adopting the hypothesis of Shakespeare's authorship.

The object which Shakespeare had in view in all his historical plays, was to represent the strife of human weakness and frailty against the unshaken decrees of fate. Thus he infused historical facts with new life, and interested his own age and all times in the destiny of his heroes; thus he succeeded in forming histories into tragedies. The author of *Edward III.*, however, far from conceiving the full meaning of history, was content skilfully to combine within the narrow limits of a play the most remarkable events of the reign of the great English king. His play is no more than a versified chronicle, and with the only exception of the king, not even an attempt is made to give the development of a character.

The sources from which Shakespeare invariably drew the subject of his historical plays were the chronicles of Holinshed and Hall; in none he made use of two sources so much opposed to each other as *Painter's Novel* is to *Holinshed's Chronicle*. The reign of King Edward is among the brightest chapters in English history; the names of the king and his warlike son are closely connected with the most splendid triumphs ever gained by the English people. It would indeed be surprising if Shakespeare, aware as he was of the dignity of history, should in drawing the picture of Edward III. have had recourse to an anecdote related by an Italian novelist. But even supposing he should have done so in the beginning of his dramatical career, he would certainly even then have more harmoniously interwoven the two plots with one another. Though there may indeed exist a sort of interior connexion between the episode and the principal plot, yet it appears more than doubtful whether the link joining the two parts was easily, if at all, discoverable by the play-going public of the age. The last three acts contain no more than two or three direct references to the main plot of the first two acts (*III.* 3. 156 seq. and *III.* 5. 102); not even the names of the Countess, the heroine of the episode, and of Ludowick, the king's secretary, are mentioned again in the rest of the play. In most of his plays Shakespeare has united several actions into one: but in none is there so wide a chasm between them as in *Edward III.*

As to the composition of the principal plot, it is not to be denied that the author has selected with some skill the most important and interesting passages of *Holinshed's chronicle*, and it matters little that in some details he has thought fit to deviate from

the strict course of history.<sup>1)</sup> But every attentive reader of the play must notice that the single scenes are not seldom as little internally connected as the two principal plots. Besides the progress of the play is sometimes impeded by a long narrative where we should have preferred to assist at the action itself. Add besides that most characters in the play suffer from a certain monotony, and that some of them, as Warwick and in some measure also the Prince of Wales, show real deficiencies such as never occur in Shakespeare.<sup>2)</sup>

Nor does the general character of the style in our play speak in favour of Shakespeare's authorship. Mr. Furnivall is not wrong in saying (Leopold-Shakspere, p. C) that nearly all the characters talk in the same high exaggerated style. Isolated passages which remind the reader of Shakespeare, cannot be taken into account. First of all, we must not forget that some weak and trivial passages occur beside lines not unworthy of Shakespeare. Some phrases which are to be met with both in our play and in the genuine Works of Shakespeare belong neither to Shakespeare nor the author of Edward III., but to the age in which the plays were written, and it would not be difficult to gather the same or similar expressions from the works of other contemporary authors. But how are we to account for those two passages which to all appearance directly refer to Shakespeare? First, it is not beyond all doubt that, uncertain as the date of the play is, the passage (II. 2. 195) must needs have been written with respect to Shakespeare's poem.<sup>3)</sup> But even supposing that the line refers to it, it is, as Prof. Elze has already pointed out (Shakespeare-Jahrb. XIII, p. 79), highly improbable that Shakespeare should have called his poem, which we know had been very well received by his contemporaries<sup>4)</sup>, a 'vain endeavour' of his pen. Much more

---

<sup>1)</sup> The war began in 1337 with King Philip of France. 1340 Naval Battle of Sluice. 1346 Battle of Crecy. 1346—1347 Siege of Calais. 1356 Battle of Poitiers against King John.

<sup>2)</sup> Also the lines II. 1. 194 seqq., 222 seqq. hardly agree with the character of the Countess, as intended by the poet. Cp. Friesen, l. c., p. 80.

<sup>3)</sup> The story of Lucrece was treated in a novel by Bandello-Painter which must have been known to the author of our play, in a ballad (Evans's Old Ballads, 1810, II, p. 301), and perhaps also in an early play.

<sup>4)</sup> *'The sweet witty soul of Ovid lives in mellifluous and honey-tongued Shakespeare. Witness his Venus and Adonis, his Lucrece, his sugared Sonnets among his private friends.'* Meres, Palladis Tamia, 1598.

likely it seems on the contrary that the author of King Edward III., envious of Shakespeare, should have somewhat depreciatingly have alluded to the poem of his great rival. Neither can the line which occurs again in the Sonnets, be considered as an absolutely cogent argument. In no other instance has Shakespeare taken a verse of one play to employ it in another one.<sup>1)</sup> From Meres, Palladis Tamia 1598, we learn that Shakespeare's Sonnets, before being published, were circulating among his private friends. So it may well be supposed that the author of Edward III. should either directly or indirectly have heard or read the verse in question and have applied it in his play. Besides, the line, as H. von Friesen rightly points out, agrees much better with the context of the Sonnets than of the Play.

After all this, we are convinced that Shakespeare is not to be regarded as the author of King Edward III. And indeed, had Shakespeare composed the play, it would be highly surprising that neither Meres should have mentioned it, nor that the editors of the first Folio-edition, though printing Love's Labour's Lost and Romeo and Juliet after the quartos published by Cuthbert Burby in 1598 and 1599 (through the reprint of 1609), should have excluded from their edition Edward III., published some years before by the same Cuthbert Burby.

The best passages of the play, those perhaps which have given rise to the hypothesis of Shakespeare's authorship, are to be met with in the Countess-episode. There we find the greater part of the locutions which remind the reader of Shakespeare; there the allusion to Lucrece and the line from the Sonnets; there lastly the character of the Countess, which is superior to all the rest. No wonder, therefore, that part of the critics have felt inclined to ascribe the episode at least to Shakespeare. This hypo-

---

*'And Shakespeare, thou whose honey-flowing vein  
Pleasing the world thy praises doth obtain,  
Whose Venus and whose Lucrece, sweet and chaste,  
Thy name in Fame's immortal book hath placed.'*

R. Barnefield, Poems in Divers Humorous Persons, 1598.

<sup>1)</sup> 2 H. VI., I. 1. 237 and III. 1. 86 cannot be taken into account.

thesis was started by Mr. Fleay, *Academy* 1874, April 25, p. 461 seqq., and *Shakespeare Manual* 1878, p. 303 seqq.

Mr. Fleay is of opinion that two hands have been at work in the composition of the play. 'The two parts', he says, 'are distinctly different in general style and poetic power; they are also clearly separated by metrical characteristics of the most pronounced kind. They are equally distinguished by the use or disuse of special words; and the personages common to the two portions of the play — for example the Black Prince — have different characters in those portions and are unequally developed.' All these arguments, however, are merely indicated; only one — the metrical test — is more at large developed by Mr. Fleay. As the latter in many cases is important, we subjoin a table in which the metrical peculiarities of our play have been set forth.

Act and Scene	Verse-lines	Rhyme-lines	Lines with double endings
I. 1	169	10	6
I. 2	166	50	11
II. 1	459	36	56
II. 2	212	8	21
III. 1	189	10	3
III. 2	75	6	3
III. 3	228	6	5
III. 4	13	1	—
III. 5	115	2	1
IV. 1	43	—	6
IV. 2	85	4	4
IV. 3	85	2	6
IV. 4	161	2	15
IV. 5	127	10	9
IV. 6	17	1	1
IV. 7	35	—	5
IV. 8	10	1	1
IV. 9	64	8	3
V.	243	4	4

On examining the list given above, we see, it is true, that the total sum of rhymes is greater in the episode than in the principal play. (Proportion of verse-lines to rhyme-lines in the

Independently of Mr. Fleay, Prof. A. W. Ward, *A History of English Dramatic Literature*, 1875, I, p. 455 has come to a similar conclusion. He even goes a step further than Mr. Fleay. In his opinion, not only the episode is, both in language and characterisation, not unworthy of Shakespeare, but also in the rest of the play the learned Professor supposes a hand resembling Shakespeare's, if not his own, to have been at work to relieve the mere facts borrowed from the Chronicles. Prof. Ward thinks it not impossible that Shakespeare 'made use of an earlier piece, introducing the entire episode of acts I and II, and modifying and altering the substance of the entire play into its remaining acts.' 'But', he adds (p. 457) 'it is only for the first two acts that I claim the honour of being recognised as wholly or at least substantially his. They are full of the conceits in which he indulged in his earlier period; but they are conceits of so happy and thoughtful a kind as not to contradict the theory suggested.' The same remarks as we have made on Mr. Fleay's theory apply to Prof. Ward's suggestion. Neither is it established that two authors have been at work in the composition of our play, nor is there any reason for supposing Shakespeare to have written part of the play.

In the third edition of 'Shakespeare's *Dramatische Kunst*' Ulrici finds that both in style and composition *Edward III.* bears a certain resemblance to Lodge's *The Wounds of Civil War*, and thinks it not unlikely that Th. Lodge was the author of the play. But as all external evidence is wanting, Ulrici himself gives his suggestion as a mere guess, and indeed it seems hardly possible ever to give a positive answer to the question as to the authorship of *The Reign of King Edward III.*

---

THE RAIGNE  
OF  
KING EDWARD THE THIRD.

# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.<sup>1)</sup>

EDWARD III., <i>King of England.</i>	VILLIERS, <i>a French Lord.</i>	
EDWARD, <i>Prince of Wales, his Son.</i>	King of BOHEMIA	} <i>Aids to King</i>
Earl of WARWICK.	A Polish Captain	
Earl of DERBY.	Six Citizens	} <i>of Calais.</i>
Earl of SALISBURY.	A Captain	
Lord AUDLEY.	A poor Inhabitant	
Lord PERCY.	Another Captain.	
LODOWICK, <i>EDWARD'S Confident.</i>	A Mariner.	
SIR WILLIAM MOUNTAGUE.	Three Heralds.	
SIR IOHN COPLAND.	Four Frenchmen.	
Two Esquires, and a Herald.	DAVID, <i>King of Scotland.</i>	
ROBERT, <i>styling himself Earl, of</i>	Earl DOUGLAS.	
(ARTOYS.       )	Two Scotch Messengers.	
Earl of MOUNTFORD.		
GOBIN DE GRAY.		
IOHN, <i>King of France.</i>	PHILIPPA, <i>EDWARD'S Queen.</i>	
CHARLES, and PHILIP, <i>his Sons.</i>	Countess of SALISBURY.	
Duke of LORRAIN.	A French Woman.	

*Lords, and divers other Attendants;*

*Heralds, Officers, Soldiers etc.*

*Scene, dispersed; in ENGLAND, FLANDERS, and FRANCE.*

---

<sup>1)</sup> First add. by Cap.

# ACT I.

## SCENE I.

*London. A Room of State in the Palace. Flourish.*

*Enter* KING EDWARD, DERBY, PRINCE EDWARD, AUDLEY, and ARTOYS.

*King.* Robert of Artoys, banisht though thou be  
From Fraunce, thy native Country, yet with vs  
Thou shalt retayne as great a Seignorie:  
For we create thee Earle of Richmond heere.  
And now goe forwards with our pedegree:  
Who next succeeded Phillip le Bew? 5

*Art.* Three sonnes of his, which all successively  
Did sit vpon their fathers regall Throne,  
Yet dyed, and left no issue of their loynes.

*King.* But was my mother sister vnto those? 10

*Art.* Shee was, my Lord; and onely Issabel  
Was all the daughters that this Phillip had,  
Whome afterward your father tooke to wife;  
And from the fragrant garden of her wombe  
Your gracious selfe, the flower of Europes hope, 15  
Deriued is inheritor to Fraunce.  
But note the rancor of rebellious mindes:  
When thus the lynage of le Bew was out,  
The French obscurd your mothers Priuiledge,  
And, though she were the next of blood, proclaymed 20

ACT I. SCENE I. Stage-dir. First in Cap. *Enter* KING EDWARD, attended;  
PRINCE OF WALES, WARWICK, DERBY, AUDLEY, ARTOIS, and Others. Cap.  
and Del. — 6. *succeeded to* Coll. conj.; *Phillip of Bew* AB, corr. by Cap. —  
7. *who* all Cap. prop.; *successfully* AB, corr. by Cap. — 17. *note*] not A. —  
18. *of Bew* AB, of *le Bedu* first Cap.

- Iohn, of the house of Valoys, now their king:  
 The reason was, they say, the Realme of Fraunce,  
 Repleat with Princes of great parentage,  
 Ought not admit a gouernor to rule,  
 25 Except he be discended of the male;  
 And thats the speciall ground of their contempt,  
 Wherewith they study to exclude your grace:  
 But they shall finde that forged ground of theirs  
 To be but dusty heapes of brittle sande.  
 30 Perhaps it will be thought a heynous thing,  
 That I, a French man, should discouer this;  
 But heauen I call to recorde of my vowes:  
 It is not hate nor any priuate wronge,  
 But loue vnto my country and the right,  
 35 Prouokes my tongue, thus lauish in report.  
 You are the lyneal watchman of our peace,  
 And Iohn of Valoys indirectly climbs:  
 What then should subiects but imbrace their king?  
 And wherein may our duety more be seene,  
 40 Then stryuing to rebate a tyrants pride  
 And place the true shepheard of our comonwealth?  
*King.* This counsayle, Artoyes, like to fruitfull shewers,  
 Hath added growth vnto my dignitee;  
 And, by the fiery vigor of thy words,  
 45 Hot courage is engendred in my brest,  
 Which heretofore was rakt in ignorance,  
 But nowe doth mount with golden winges of fame,  
 And will approue faire Issabells discent  
 Able to yoak their stubburne necks with steele,  
 50 That spurne against my souereignety in France. [*Sound a horne.*  
 A messenger? — Lord Awdley, know from whence.

*Exit AUDLEY, and returns.*

*Aud.* The Duke of Lorrayne, hauing crost the seas,  
 Intreates he may haue conference with your highnes.

30. ART. *Perhaps* . . . AB; ART. struck out by Cap. — 36. *watchmen* AB, *watchman* Del. and Col. — 39. *And* Ah AB, *And* proposed by Cap. and adopted by Del. — 41. *And* om. by Cap. and subs. Edd. — 50. [*Cornet within.*] mod. Edd. — 51. Stage-dir. add. by Tyr. and Del.

*King.* Admit him, Lords, that we may heare the newes.

*Enter LORRAYNE.*

Say, Duke of Lorraine, wherefore art thou come? 55

*Lor.* The most renowned prince, King Iohn of France,  
Doth greete thee, Edward, and by me commandes,  
That, for so much as by his liberall gift  
The Guyen Dukedome is entayld to thee,  
Thou do him lowly homage for the same. 60  
And, for that purpose, here I somon thee,  
Repaire to France within these forty daies,  
That there, according as the coustome is,  
Thou mayst be sworne true liegeman to our king;  
Or else thy title in that prouince dyes, 65  
And hee himself will repoesse the place.

*King.* See, how occasion laughes me in the face!  
No sooner minded to prepare for France,  
But straight I am inuited, — nay, with threats,  
Vpon a penaltie, inioynd to come: 70  
Twere but a childish part to say him nay. —  
Lorraine, returne this answer to thy Lord:  
I meane to visit him as he requests;  
But how? not seruilely disposd to bend,  
But like a conquerer to make him bowe. 75  
His lame vnpolisht shifts are come to light;  
And trueth hath puld the visard from his face,  
That sett a glosse vpon his arrogance.  
Dare he commaund a fealty in mee?  
Tell him, the Crowne that hee vsurpes, is myne, 80  
And where he sets his foote, he ought to knele.  
Tis not a petty Dukedome that I claime,  
But all the whole Dominions of the Realme;  
Which if with grudging he refuse to yeld,

54. Stage-dir. *Enter a Messenger Lorraine.* after l. 51 AB; *Exeunt Lords. King takes his State. Re-enter Lords; with LORRAIN, attended.* Tyr. and Del. — 64. *our]* the B and Edd. — 71. *foolish* B and Edd. — 76. *shifts* A. — 78. *glasse* A; cp. to set a gloss on 1 H. VI., IV. 1. 103; Tim. I. 2. 16.

85 He take away those borrowed plumes of his,  
And send him naked to the wildernes.

*Lor.* Then, Edward, here, in spite of all thy Lords,  
I doe pronounce defyaunce to thy face.

*Prince.* Defiance, French man? we rebound it backe,  
90 Euen to the bottom of thy masters throat.

And, be it spoke with reuerence of the king,  
My gracious father, and these other Lordes,  
I hold thy message but as scurrilous,  
And him that sent thee, like the lazy droane,

95 Crept vp by stealth vnto the Eagles nest;  
From whence weale shake him with so rough a storme,  
As others shalbe warned by his harme.

*War.* Byd him leaue off the Lyons case he weares,  
Least, meeting with the Lyon in the feeld,  
100 He chaunce to teare him peecemeale for his pride.

*Art.* The soundest counsell I can giue his grace,  
Is to surrender ere he be constraynd.  
A voluntarie mischiefe hath lesse scorne,  
Then when reproch with violence is borne.

105 *Lor.* Degenerate Traytor, viper to the place  
Where thou wast fostred in thine infancy,  
Bearest thou a part in this conspiracy? [*He drawes his Sword.*

*King.* Lorraine, behold the sharpnes of this steele:  
Feruent desire that sits against my heart, [*Drawing his.*  
110 Is farre more thornie-pricking than this blade;  
That, with the nightingale, I shall be scard,  
As oft as I dispose my selfe to rest,  
Vntill my collours be displaide in Fraunce:  
This is thy finall Answer; so be gone.

115 *Lor.* It is not that, nor any English braue,  
Afflicts me so, as doth his poysoned view,  
That is most false, should most of all be true. [*Exit LORRAYNE.*

87. *spight*] *sight* prop. by Cap. and ad. by Del. — 105. *Regenerate* AB and Cap., *Degenerate* Tyr. and Del. Col. says in a note: *Regenerate* may be right, but most likely a misprint for *Degenerate*. In Rich. II., I. 1. 144. Shakespeare has 'A recreant and most degenerate traitor'. — 106. *was* A, — 108. Stage-dir. [*Drawing his.*] add. by Del. — 117. Stage-dir. wanting in AB; mod. Edd. [*Exeunt Lorrain and Train.*].

*King.* Now, Lords, our fleeting Barke is vnder sayle;  
Our gage is throwne, and warre is soone begun,  
But not so quickly brought vnto an end.

120

*Enter MOUNTAGUE.*

But wherefore comes Sir William Mountague?  
How stands the league betweene the Scot and vs?

*Mount.* Crackt and disseuered, my renowned Lord.  
The treacherous King no sooner was informde  
Of your withdrawing of your army backe,  
But straight, forgetting of his former othe,  
He made inuasion on the bordering Townes:  
Barwicke is woon, Newcastle spoyld and lost,  
And now the tyrant hath beguirt with seege  
The Castle of Rocksborough, where inclosed  
The Countes Salisbury is like to perish.

125

130

*King.* That is thy daughter, Warwicke, is it not?  
Whose husband hath in Brittain serud so long  
About the planting of Lord Mountford there?

*War.* It is, my Lord.

135

*King.* Ignoble David! hast thou none to greeue  
But silly Ladies with thy threatning arnes?  
But I will make you shrinke your snailie hornes!  
First, therefore, Audley, this shalbe thy charge,  
Go leuie footemen for our warres in Fraunce;  
And, Ned, take muster of our men at armes:  
In euery shire elect a seuerall band.

140

Let them be Souldiers of a lustie spirite;  
Such as dread nothing but dishonors blot;  
Be warie therefore, since we do comence  
A famous Warre, and with so mighty a nation.  
Derby, be thou Embassador for vs  
Unto our Father in Law, the Earle of Henalt:  
Make him acquainted with our enterprise,

145

118. *Lord AB*, corr. by Cap. — 121, 122. Given to MOUN. in A. —  
125. *your army*] *our army* B and Del. — 134. *Mounefort* AB and Cap.,  
corr. by Tyr. — 139. *this shalbe*] *let this be* Col. — 146. *mighty nation*  
Cap. and Tyr.

- 150 And likewise will him, with our owne allies  
 That are in Flaunders, to sollicite too  
 The Emperour of Almaine in our name.  
 My selfe, whilst you are ioyntly thus employd,  
 Will, with these forces that I haue at hand,
- 155 March, and once more repulse the trayterous Scot.  
 But, Sirs, be resolute; we shal haue warres  
 On euery side; and, Ned, thou must begin  
 Now to forget thy study and thy bookes,  
 And vre thy shoulders to an Armors weight.
- 160 *Prince.* As cheereful sounding to my youthfull spleene  
 This tumult is of warres increasing broyles,  
 As, at the Coronation of a king,  
 The ioyfull clamours of the people are,  
 When *Aue, Caesar!* they pronounce alowd.
- 165 Within this schoole of honor I shal learne  
 Either to sacrifice my foes to death,  
 Or in a rightfull quarrel spend my breath.  
 Then cheerefully forward, ech a seuerall way;  
 In great affaires tis nought to use delay. [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.

ROXBOROUGH. *Before the Castle.**Enter the COUNTESSE.*

- Count.* Alas, how much in vaine my poore eyes gaze  
 For souccour that my soueraigne should send!  
 Ah, cosin Mountague, I feare, thou wantst  
 The liuely spirit, sharply to solicit
- 5 With vehement sute the king in my behalfe:  
 Thou dost not tell him, what a grieve it is  
 To be the scornfull captiue to a Scot,  
 Either to be wooed with broad vntuned othes,  
 Or forst by rough insulting barbarisme:

153. *while*<sup>a</sup> Col. — 155. *Scots* Cap. and subsequent Edd.

SCENE II. Stage-dir. ROXBOROUGH. *Before the Castle.* add. by Cap.;  
*Enter COUNTESS OF SALISBURY, and certain of her People, vpon the Walls.*  
 Cap. and subs. Edd. — 3. *A cosin A; wants A.* — 4. *spirirt A.*

Thou doest not tell him, if he heere preuaile, 10  
 How much they will deride vs in the North,  
 And, in their vild, vnseuill, skipping giggs,  
 Bray foorth their Conquest and our ouerthrow  
 Euen in the barraine, bleake, and fruitlesse aire.

*Enter DAVID, DOUGLAS, and LORRAINE.*

I must withdraw, the euerlasting foe 15  
 Comes to the wall; Ile closely step aside,  
 And list their babble, blunt and full of pride.

*K. Da.* My Lord of Lorrayne, to our brother of Fraunce  
 Commend vs, as the man in Christendome  
 That we most reuerence and intirely loue. 20  
 Touching your embassage, returne and say,  
 That we with England will not enter parlie,  
 Nor neuer make faire wether, or take truce;  
 But burne their neighbor townes, and so persist  
 With eager Roads beyond their Citie Yorke. 25  
 And neuer shall our bonny riders rest,  
 Nor rusting canker haue the time to eate  
 Their light-borne snaffles nor their nimble spurres,  
 Nor lay aside their Iacks of Gymould mayle,  
 Nor hang their stauies of grayned Scottish ash 30  
 In peacefull wise vpon their Citie wals,  
 Nor from their buttoned tawny leatherne belts  
 Dismiss their byting whinyards, till your King  
 Cry out 'Enough, spare England now for pittie!'  
 Farewell, and tell him that you leaue vs here 35  
 Before this Castle; say, you came from vs,  
 Euen when we had that yeilded to our hands.

*Lor.* I take my leaue, and fayrely will returne  
 Your acceptable greeting to my king. [*Exit Lor.*]

*King.* Now, Duglas, to our former taske again, 40  
 For the deuision of this certayne spoyle.

*Dou.* My liege, I craue the Ladie, and no more.

14. Stage-dir. *Enter KING DAVID, and Forces; with DOUGLAS, LORRAINE, and Others.* Del. — 17. *rabble* B; [*Retiring behind the works.*]. Del. — 20. *Whom* Cap. and Edd.; *must* A. — 25. *Rods* AB. — 27. *rust in canker* AB, corr. by Cap. — 28. *spurre* A. — 38. *I om.* A.

King. Nay, soft ye, sir, first I must make my choyse,  
And first I do bespeake her for my selfe.

45 Dou. Why then, my liege, let me enioy her iewels.

King. Those are her owne, still liable to her,  
And, who inherits her, hath those withall.

*Enter a Scot in hast,*

Mes. My liege, as we were pricking on the hills,  
To fetch in booty, marching hitherward,  
50 We might discry a mighty host of men;  
The sunne, reflecting on the armour, shewed  
A field of plate, a wood of pikes aduanced.  
Bethinke your highnes speedely herein:  
An easie march within foure howres will bring

55 The hindmost rancke vnto this place, my liege.

King. Dislodge, dislodge, it is the king of England.

Dou. Lemmy, my man, saddle my bonny blacke.

King. Meanst thou to fight, Duglas? we are to weake.

Dou. I know it well, my liege, and therefore fle.

60 Count. My Lords of Scotland, will ye stay and drinke?

King. She mocks at vs; Duglas, I cannot endure it.

Count. Say, good my Lord, which is he, must haue the Ladie,  
And which, her iewels? I am sure, my Lords,  
Ye will not hence, till you haue shard the spoyles,

65 King. Shee heard the messenger, and heard our talke;  
And now that comfort makes her scorne at vs.

*Another messenger.*

Mes. Arme, my good Lord! O, we are all surprisde!

Count. After the French ambassador, my liege,  
And tell him, that you dare not ride to Yorke;

70 Excuse it, that your bonnie horse is lame.

King. She heard that too; intollerable grieve!

Woman, farewell! Although I do not stay . . . [*Exeunt Scots.*]

43. ye om. B. — 47. Stage-dir. *Enter a Messenger hastily.* Del. —  
52. pickes A. — 59. flee B and Edd. — 60. [*Rising from her concealment.*]  
Del. — 61. can't Edd. — 62. good om. by Cap., Tyr., and Col. — 66. [*Enter  
another messenger.*] Del. — 68. COUN. om. AB. — 71. He AB. — 72. stay.]  
AB and Edd., stay . . .] Del.; [*Alarums. Exeunt Scots.*] Del.

*Coun.* Tis not for feare, and yet you run away. —  
 O happie comfort, welcome to our house!  
 The confident and boystrous boasting Scot, 75  
 That swore before my walls they would not backe  
 For all the armed power of this land,  
 With facelesse feare that euer turnes his backe,  
 Turnd hence against the blasting North-east winde,  
 Vpon the bare report and name of Armes, 80

*Enter MOUNTAGUE.*

O Sommers day! See where my Cosin comes!  
*Moun.* How fares my Aunt? Why, aunt, we are not Scots; 81  
 Why do you shut your gates against your friends?  
*Coun.* Well may I giue a welcome, Cosin, to thee,  
 For thou comst well to chase my foes from hence. 85  
*Moun.* The king himselfe is come in person hither;  
 Deare Aunt, discend, and gratulate his highnes.  
*Coun.* How may I entertayne his Maiestie,  
 To shew my duety and his dignitie? [*Exit, from above.*]

*Enter KING EDWARD, WARWICKE, ARTOYES, with Others.*

*King.* What, are the stealing Foxes fled and gone, 90  
 Before we could vncupple at their heeles?  
*War.* They are, my liege; but, with a cheereful cry,  
 Hot hounds, and hardie, chase them at the heeles.

*Enter COUNTESSE.*

*King.* This is the Countesse, Warwike, is it not?  
*War.* Euen shee, my liege; whose beauty tyrants feare, 95  
 As a May blossome with pernitiuous winds,  
 Hath sullied, withered, ouercast, and donne.  
*King.* Hath she been fairer, Warwike, then she is?

76. *they*] *he* prop. by Cap. and ad. by Del. — 79. *again* AB, *against* prop. by Cap. and ad. by Del. — 80. *names* B; [*Enter Montague and Others.*] Del. — 81. *Given to Moun.* in AB. — 82. *Why, aunt* first added by Cap. — 84. *coz* Col. — 89. [*Exit, from above.*] first add. by Cap.; [*Flourish. Enter . .*] Del. — 93. *hunds* A; [*Re-enter Countess, attended.*] Del. — 95. *my* om. A; *tyrant's* Cap., *tyrant* Del. — 96. *with*] *which* B and Col. — 97. *Have* Col.

*War.* My gracious King, faire is she not at all,  
 100 If that her selfe were by to staine her selfe,  
 As I haue seene her when she was her selfe.

*King.* What strange enchantment lurkt in those her eyes,  
 When they exceld this excellence they haue,  
 That now their dym declayne hath power to draw  
 105 My subiect eyes from persing maiestie,  
 To gaze on her with doting admiration?

*Coun.* In duetie lower then the ground I kneele,  
 And for my dul knees bow my feeling heart,  
 To witnes my obedience to your highnes,  
 110 With many millions of a subiects thanks  
 For this your Royall presence, whose approch  
 Hath driuen war and danger from my gate.

*King.* Lady, stand vp; I come to bring thee peace,  
 How euer thereby I haue purchast war.

115 *Coun.* No war to you, my liege; the Scots are gone,  
 And gallop home toward Scotland with their hate.

*King.* Least, yeelding heere, I pyne in shamefull loue,  
 Come, weelee persue the Scots; — Artoyes, away!

*Coun.* A little while, my gracious soueraigne, stay,  
 120 And let the power of a mighty king  
 Honor our roofe; my husband in the warres,  
 When he shall heare it, will triumph for ioy;  
 Then, deare my liege, now niggard not thy state:  
 Being at the wall, enter our homely gate.

125 *King.* Pardon me, countesse, I will come no neare;  
 I dreamde to night of treason, and I feare.

*Coun.* Far from this place let vgly treason ly!

*King.* No farther off, then her conspyring eye,  
 Which shoots infected poyson in my heart,  
 130 Beyond repulse of wit or cure of Art.  
 Now, in the Sunne alone it doth not lye,  
 With light to take light from a mortall eye;  
 For here two day-stars that myne eies would see

102. *lurke* A. — 104. *her dym* AB, *their dym* prop. by Cap. and ad.  
 by Del. — 116. *haste* Cap. and Edd. — 117, 118. Continued to *Coun.*  
 in A. — 123. *thy*] *your* Col. — 133. *two*] *to* A; *eye* Col.

More then the Sunne, steales myne owne light from mee.

Contemplatiue desire, desire to be 135

In contemplation, that may master thee!

Warwike, Artoys, to horse and lets away!

*Coun.* What might I speake, to make my soueraigne stay?

*King.* What needs a tongue to such a speaking eie,

That more perswads then winning Oratorie? 140

*Coun.* Let not thy presence, like the Aprill sunne,  
Flatter our earth, and sodenly be done.

More happie do not make our outward wall,

Then thou wilt grace our inner house withall.

Our house, my liege, is like a Country swaine, 145

Whose habit rude and manners blunt and playne

Presageth nought; yet inly beautified

With bounties riches and faire hidden pride.

For, where the golden Ore doth buried lie,

The ground, vndeckt with natures tapestrie, 150

Seemes barrayne, sere, vnfertill, fructles, dry;

And where the vpper turfe of earth doth boast

His pide perfumes and party-colloured cost.

Delue there, and find this issue and their pride

To spring from ordure and corruptions side. 155

But, to make vp my all too long compare,

These ragged walles no testimonie are,

What is within; but, like a cloake, doth hide

From weathers Waste the vnder garnisht pride.

More gracious then my tearmes can, let thee be; 160

Intreat thy selfe to stay a while with mee.

*King.* As wise, as faire; what fond fit can be heard,

When wisdomes keepe the gate as beauties gard? —

Countesse, albeit my busines vrgeth me,

Yt shall attend, while I attend on thee: 165

Come on, my Lords; heere will I host to night. [*Exeunt.*]

134. *steal* mod. Edd. — 144. *inward* B and Edd. — 153. *pide*] *pride* AB, *proud* Edd., *pied* prop. by Cap. and ad. by Del.; *perfumes*] *presumes* B. — 157. *testomie* A. — 159. *Waste*] *West* AB, *Waste* conj. by Del. and Col.

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.

*The Same. Gardens of the Castle.**Enter LODOWICK.*

*Lod.* I might perceiue his eye in her eye lost,  
 His eare to drinke her sweet tongues vtterance,  
 And changing passion — like inconstant clouds  
 That rackt vpon the carriage of the windes  
 5 Increase and die — in his disturbed cheekes.  
*Loe*, when shee blusht, euen then did he looke pale,  
 As if her cheekes by some inchaunted power  
 Attracted had the cherie blood from his:  
 Anone, with reuerent feare when she grew pale,  
 10 His cheekes put on their scarlet ornaments;  
 But no more like her oyentall red,  
 Then Bricke to Corrall or liue things to dead.  
 Why did he then thus counterfeit her lookes?  
 If she did blush, twas tender modest shame,  
 15 Being in the sacred presence of a King;  
 If he did blush, twas red immodest shame,  
 To vaile his eyes amisse, being a king:  
 If she lookt pale, twas silly womans feare;  
 To beare her selfe in presence of a king;  
 20 If he lookt pale, it was with guiltie feare,  
 To dote amisse, being a mighty king.  
 Then, Scottish warres, farewell; I feare twill prooue  
 A lingring English seege of peeuish loue.  
 Here comes his highnes, walking all alone.

*Enter KING EDWARD.*

25 *King.* Shee is growne more fairer far, since I came hither,  
 Her voice more siluer word then other,  
 Her wit more fluent. What a strange discourse

ACT II. SCENE I. Stage-dir. add. by Cap. — 1. LOD.] LOR. A. —  
 4. racke A. — 10. cheek AB. — 15. present A. — 17. vaile AB; cp. Shak.  
 Ven. 956: *she vailed her eyelids*; Meas. V. 20: *vail your regard upon a  
 wronged maid.* — 25. thither A.

Unfolded she of Daurid and his Scots!  
 'Euen thus', quoth she, 'he spake', and then spoke broad,  
 With epithites and accents of the Scot, 30  
 But somewhat better then the Scot could speake:  
 'And thus', quoth she, and answered then her selfe;  
 For who could speake like her? but she her selfe  
 Breathes from the wall an Angels note from Heauen  
 Of sweete defiance to her barbarous foes. 35  
 When she would talke of peace, me thinkes, her tong  
 Commanded war to prison; when of war,  
 It wakened Cæsar from his Romane graue,  
 To heare warre beautified by her discourse.  
 Wisdome is foolishnes but in her tongue; 40  
 Beauty a slander but in her faire face;  
 There is no summer but in her cheerefull lookes,  
 Nor frosty winter but in her disdayne.  
 I cannot blame the Scots that did besiege her,  
 For she is all the Treasure of our land; 45  
 But call them cowards, that they ran away,  
 Hauing so rich and faire a cause to stay. —  
 Art thou there, Lodwicke? Giue me inke and paper!

*Lod.* I will, my liege.

*King.* And bid the Lords hold on their play at Chess, 50  
 For wee will walke and meditate alone.

*Lod.* I will, my soueraigne. [*Exit LODOWICK.*]

*King.* This fellow is well read in poetrie,  
 And hath a lustie and perswasive spirite:  
 I will acquaint him with my passion, 55  
 Which he shall shadow with a vail of lawne,  
 Through which the Queene of beauties Queenes shall see  
 Her selfe the ground of my infirmitie.

*Enter LODOWIKE.*

*King.* Hast thou pen, inke, and paper ready, Lodowike?

*Lod.* Ready, my liege. 60

29. *spoke*] *spake* B and Edd., exc. Del. — 30. *Scots* Del. — 48. *Lodowicke* B and Edd. — 49. *liege*] *soueraigne* B and Edd. — 52. *soueraigne*] *liege* B and Edd. Stage-dir. first in Cap. — 53. *well* om. B. — 57. *Queenes*] *Queen* AB, corr. by Del. — 59. *Lodow.* B.

- King.* Then in the sommer-arber sit by me,  
 Make it our counsel-house or cabynet:  
 Since greene our thoughts, greene be the conuenticle,  
 Where we will ease vs by disburdning them.
- 65 Now, Lodwike, inuocate some golden Muse,  
 To bring thee hither an enchanted pen,  
 That may for sighes set downe true sighes indeed,  
 Talking of grieve, to make thee ready grone;  
 And when thou writest of teares, encouch the word
- 70 Before and after with such sweete laments,  
 That it may rayse drops in a Tarters eye,  
 And make a flynt-heart Sythian pytifull;  
 For so much moouing hath a Poets pen:  
 Then, if thou be a Poet, moue thou so,
- 75 And be enriched by thy soueraignes loue.  
 For, if the touch of sweet concordant strings  
 Could force attendance in the eares of hel,  
 How much more shall the straine of poets wit  
 Beguile and rauish soft and humane myndes?
- 80 *Lod.* To whome, my Lord, shal I direct my stile?  
*King.* To one that shames the faire and sots the wise;  
 Whose bodie, as an abstract or a breefe,  
 Containes ech generall vertue in the worlde.  
 Better then bewtifull thou must begin;
- 85 Deuise for faire a fairer word then faire;  
 And euery ornament that thou wouldest praise,  
 Fly it a pitch about the soare of praise.  
 For flattery feare thou not to be conuicted;  
 For, were thy admiration ten tymes more,
- 90 Ten tymes ten thousand more the worth exceeds  
 Of that thou art to praise, thy praises worth.  
 Beginne; I will to contemplat the while:  
 Forget not to set downe, how passionat,

65. *Lodowicke* B and Edd. — 68. *ready*] *really* conj. by Coll. —  
 71. *Torters* AB; *Tartar's* Cap. and subs. Edd. — 75. *soueraigne* A, —  
 77. *attention* conj. by Coll.; but cp. *Give attendance to reading* 1. Tim. IV.  
 13; *Diligent attendance to instruction*. BARROW. Quoted by Webster. —  
 78. *straines* A and Del. — 79. *beguile* A. — 80. *Lod.*] *LOR.* A. — 82. *bodie*  
 is an AB; corr. by Cap. — 90. *the*] *thy* A. — 91. *thy*] *their* AB; corr. by Cap.  
 — 92. *Beginne I will* AB.

How hart-sicke, and how full of languishment,  
Her beautie makes mee.

95

*Lod.*

Write I to a woman?

*King.* What bewtie els could triumph ouer me,  
Or who but women doe our loue-layes greet?  
What, thinkest thou I did bid thee praise a horse?

*Lod.* Of what condicion or estate she is,  
Twere requisite that I should know, my Lord.

100

*King.* Of such estate, that hers is as a throane,  
And my estate the footstool where shee treads:  
Then maist thou iudge what her condition is,  
By the proportion of her mightines.

Write on, while I peruse her in my thoughts. —

105

Her voice to musicke or the nightingale —:

To musicke euery sommer-leaping swaine  
Compares his sunburnt louer when shee speakes;

And why should I speake of the nightingale?

The nightingale singes of adulterate wrong,

110

And that, compared, is too satyricall;

For sinne, though synne, would not be so esteemd,

But, rather, vertue sin, synne vertue deemd.

Her hair, far softer then the silke-wormes twist,

Like to a flattering glas, doth make more faire

115

The yelow Amber: — like a flattering glas

Comes in too soone; for, writing of her eies,

Ile say that like a glas they catch the sunne,

And thence the hot reflection doth rebounde

Against my brest, and burnes my hart within.

120

Ah, what a world of descant makes my soule

Vpon this voluntarie ground of loue! —

Come, Lodwick, hast thou turnd thy inke to golde?

If not, write but in letters Capital

My mistres name, and it wil guild thy paper:

125

Reade, Lorde, reade;

95. *Writ A.* — 96. *triumph on A.* — 99. *Lod.] Lor. A.* — 115. *to] as B and Edd., except Del.* — 124—126. Two lines in AB, divided at *name* | and *reade* |; three lines in Cap. and Edd., ending at *capital*, | *name*, | *read.* |. — 124. *but write Col.* — 126. *'Read, Lord, read.* So the old copies; but young Lodowick was not a peer, and possibly it ought to run: *Read, lad, read*; or *lord* might possibly be taken as an exclamation of impatience, *Read, lord! Read.* Coll. We have perbaps to read: *Read, Lodwick, read.*

Fill thou the emptie hollowes of mine eares  
With the sweete hearing of thy poetrie.

*Lod.* I haue not to a period brought her praise.

- 130 *King.* Her praise is as my loue, both infinit,  
Which apprehend such violent extremes,  
That they disdaine an ending period.  
Her bewtie hath no match but my affection;  
Hers more then most, myne most and more then more:  
135 Hers more to praise, then tell the sea by drops,  
Nay, more then drop the massie earth by sands,  
And sand by sand print them in memorie:  
Then wherefore talkest thou of a period  
To that which craues vnended admiration?

- 140 Read, let vs heare.

*Lod.* 'More faire and chast then is the queen of shades,' —

- King.* That line hath two faults, grosse and palpable:  
Comparest thou her to the pale queene of night,  
Who, being set in darke, seemes therefore light?  
145 What is she, when the sunne lifts vp his head,  
But like a fading taper, dym and dead?  
My loue shall braue the eye of heauen at noon,  
And, being vnmaskt, outshine the golden sun.

*Lod.* What is the other faulte, my soueraigne Lord?

- 150 *King.* Reade ore the line againe.

*Lod.* 'More faire and chast' —

- King.* I did not bid thee talke of chastitie,  
To ransack so the treasure of her minde;  
For I had rather haue her chased then chast.  
Out with the moone-line, I wil none of it;  
155 And let me haue hir likened to the sun:  
Say shee hath thrice more splendour then the sun;  
That her perfections emulats the sunne,  
That shee breeds sweets as plenteous as the sunne,  
That shee doth thaw cold winter like the sunne,  
160 That she doth cheere fresh sommer like the sunne,  
That shee doth dazle gazers like the sunne;

137. *And said, by said*, AB; corr. by Cap. — 142. *line*] *loue* A. —  
152, *treason*, AB and Col., *treasure* Cap., Tyr., and Del. — 153. *I had*],  
*I would* Col. — 157. *perfection* Cap. and mod. Edd.

And, in this application to the sunne,  
 Bid her be free and generall as the sunne,  
 Who smiles vpon the basest weed that growes  
 As louinglie as on the fragrant rose. 165  
 Lets see what follows that same moonelight line.

*Lod.* 'More faire and chast then is the queen of shades,  
 More bould in constancie' —

*King.* In constancie! then who?

*Lod.* 'Then Iudith was.'

*King.* O monstrous line! Put in the next a sword, 170  
 And I shall woo her to cut off my head.

Blot, blot, good Lodwicke! Let vs heare the next.

*Lod.* Theres all that yet is donne.

*King.* I thancke thee then, thou hast don litle ill;  
 But what is don, is passing passing ill. 175

No, let the Captaine talke of boystrous warr;

The prisoner, of immured darke constraint;

The sick man best sets downe the pangs of death;

The man that starues, the sweetnes of a feast;

The frozen soule, the benefite of fire; 180

And euery grieve, his happie opposite:

Loue cannot sound well but in louers touns;

Giue me the pen and paper, I will write.

*Enter COUNTES.*

But soft, here comes the treasurer of my spirit. —

Lodwick, thou knowst not how to draw a battell; 185

These wings, these flankars, and these squadrons

Argue in thee defectiue discipline:

Thou shouldest haue placed this here, this other here.

*Count.* Pardon my boldnes, my thrice gracious Lord;  
 Let my intrusion here be cald my duetie, 190

That comes to see my soueraigne how he fares.

*King.* Go, draw the same, I tell thee in what forme.

162. *to*] of Col. — 167. *queen*] *louer* AB; corr. by Cap. — 177. *emured* AB. — 184. *treasure* B and Edd., except Del. — 186. *squadrons here* Cap. and Tyr.; but *squadrons* must be read as a trisyllable. — 189. *Lords* AB; corr. by Cap.

*Lod.* I go.

[*Exit* LODOWICK.]

*Count.* Sorry I am to see my liege so sad:

195 What may thy subiect do to driue from thee

Thy gloomy consort, sullome melancholie?

*King.* Ah, Lady, I am blunt and cannot strawe

The flowers of solace in a ground of shame: —

Since I came hither, Countes, I am wronged.

200 *Count.* Now God forbid that anie in my howse

Should thinck my soueraigne wrong! Thrice gentle King,

Acquaint me with your cause of discontent.

*King.* How neere then shall I be to remedie?

*Count.* As nere, my Liege, as all my womans power

205 Can pawne it selfe to buy thy remedy.

*King.* If thou speakst true, then haue I my redresse:

Ingage thy power to redeeme my loyes,

And I am ioyfull, Countes; els I die.

*Count.* I will, my Liege.

*King.* Sweare, Countes, that thou wilt.

210 *Count.* By heauen, I will.

*King.* Then take thy selfe a litel waie aside,

And tell thy self, a king doth dote on thee:

Say that within thy power it doth lie

To make him happy, and that thou hast sworne

215 To giue him all the Ioy within thy power:

Do this, and tell me when I shall be happie.

*Count.* All this is done, my thrice dread souereigne:

That power of loue, that I haue power to giue,

Thou hast with all deuout obedience;

220 Inploy me how thou wilt in profe thereof.

*King.* Thou hearst me saye that I do dote on thee.

*Count.* Yf on my beauty, take yt if thou canst;

Though litle, I do prise it ten tymes lesse:

If on my vertue, take it if thou canst;

225 For vertues store by giuing doth augment:

193. LOD.] LOR. A; Stage-dir. added by Cap. — 196. *Thy*] *This* B and Edd., except Del. — 202. Given to *K. Edw.* in A; *your*] *theyr* A. — 209. *Counties* A. — 213. *it* first add. by Cap. — 214. *that* om. B. — 215. *him*] *me* Cap. and subs. Edd. — 217. Two lines in B, divided at *done*.

Be it on what it will, that I can giue  
And thou canst take awaie, inherit it.

*King.* It is thy beaultie that I woulde enioy.

*Count.* O, were it painted, I would wipe it off  
And dispossesse my selfe, to giue it thee. 230  
But, souereigne, it is souldered to my life:  
Take one, and both; for, like an humble shaddow,  
Yt hauntes the sunshine of my summers life.

*King.* But thou maist lend it me, to sport withall.

*Count.* As easie may my intellectual soule 235  
Be lent awaie, and yet my bodie liue,  
As lend my bodie, pallace to my soule,  
Awaie from her, and yet retaine my soule.  
My bodie is her bower, her Court, her abey,  
And shee an Angell, pure, deuine, vnspotted: 240  
If I should lend her house, my Lord, to thee,  
I kill my poore soule, and my poore soule me.

*King.* Didst thou not swere to giue me what I would?

*Count.* I did, my liege, so, what you would, I could.

*King.* I wish no more of thee then thou maist giue: 245  
Nor beg I do not, but I rather buie;  
That is, thy loue; and for that loue of thine  
In rich exchaunge I tender to thee myne.

*Count.* But that your lippes were sacred, my Lord,  
You would prophane the holie name of loue. 250  
That loue you offer me, you cannot giue;  
For Cæsar owes that tribut to his Queene:  
That loue you beg of me, I cannot giue;  
For Sara owes that duetie to her Lord.  
He that doth clip or counterfeit your stamp, 255  
Shall die, my Lord: And will your sacred selfe  
Comit high treason against the King of heauen,  
To stamp his Image in forbidden mettel,  
Forgetting your alleageance and your othe?

230. *disposse* A. — 234. Continued to COUN. in A; *lend*] *leue* A. —  
241. *lend*] *leue* A. — 244. *liege*] *lord* Col. — 249. *o my lord* Cap., Tyr.,  
and Del.; but *sacred* is used as a trisyllable. — 257. *'gainst* Cap. and subs.  
Edd., except Del.

- 260 In violating mariage sacred law,  
 You breake a greater honor then your selfe:  
 To be a king is of a younger house  
 Then to be married; your progenitour,  
 Sole-raigning Adam on the vniverse,  
 265 By God was honored for a married man,  
 But not by him annointed for a king.  
 It is a pennalty to breake your statutes,  
 Though not enacted with your highnes hand:  
 How much more, to infringe the holy act,  
 270 Made by the mouth of God, seald with his hand?  
 I know, my souereigne, in my husbands loue,  
 Who now doth loyall seruice in his warres,  
 Doth but to try the wife of Salisbury,  
 Whither shee will heare a wantons tale, or no;  
 275 Lest being therein guilty by my stay,  
 From that, not from my liege, I tourne awaie. [Exit.  
*King.* Whether is her bewtie by her words dyuine,  
 Or are her words sweet chaplaines to her bewtie?  
 Like as the wind doth beautifie a saile,  
 280 And as a saile becomes the vnseene winde,  
 So doe her words her bewties, bewties wordes.  
 O, that I were a honie-gathering bee,  
 To beare the combe of vertue from this flower,  
 And not a poison-sucking enuious spider,  
 285 To turne the iuce I take to deadlie venom!  
 Religion is austere and bewty gentle;  
 Too strict a gardion for so faire a ward!  
 O, that shee were, as is the aire, to mee!  
 Why, so she is; for, when I would embrace her,  
 290 This do I, and catch nothing but my selfe.  
 I must enioy her; for I cannot beate  
 With reason and reproofe fond loue awaie.

260. *secured A.* — 268. *with*] by Cap. and subs. Edd. — 269. *But how*  
 Col. — 281. *her bewties*] *her beauty* Cap., Tyr., and Del.; *bewties words*]  
*bewtie (y) words* AB and subs. Edd., except Col. — 283. *this*] *his* AB and Del.  
 — 285. *iuce*] *vice* AB and Edd.; happily corr. by Col. — 287. *To stricke*  
 A, *Too strict* B and Edd.; *ward*] *weed* AB; corr. by Cap.

*Enter WARWICKE.*

Here comes her father: I will worke with him,  
To beare my collours in this field of loue.

*War.* How is it that my souereigne is so sad? 295  
May I with pardon know your highnes grieffe,  
And that my old endeuer will remoue it,  
It shall not comber long your maiestie.

*King.* A kind and voluntary gift thou proferest,  
That I was forwarde to haue begd of thee. 300  
But, O thou world, great nurse of flatterie,  
Whie dost thou tip mens tongues with golden words,  
And peise their deedes with weight of heauie leade,  
That faire performance cannot follow promise?  
O, that a man might hold the hartes close booke 305  
And choke the lauish tongue, when it doth vtter  
The breath of falshood not carectred there!

*War.* Far be it from the honor of my age,  
That I should owe bright gould and render lead;  
Age is a cynike, not a flatterer. 310  
I saye againe, that, if I knew your grieffe,  
And that by me it may be lesned,  
My proper harme should buy your highnes good.

*King.* These are the vulger tenders of false men,  
That neuer pay the duetie of their words. 315  
Thou wilt not sticke to sweare what thou hast said;  
But, when thou knowest my griefes condition,  
This rash disgorged vomit of thy word  
Thou wilt eate vp againe, and leaue me helpeles.

*War.* By heauen, I will not, though your maiestie 320  
Did byd me run vpon your sworde and die.

*King.* Say that my greefe is no way medicinable  
But by the losse and bruising of thine honour.

*War.* Yf nothing but that losse may vantage you,  
I would account that losse my vauntage too. 325

*King.* Thinkst that thou canst unswere thy oth againe?

*War.* I cannot; nor I would not, if I could.

299. *offerest* B and subs. Edd. — 310. *cyncke* A. — 311. *I if* A. —  
314, 315. Continued to WAR. in A. — 325. *account*] *accomplish* A. —  
326. *unswere*] *answere* AB; corr. by Cap.

*King.* But, if thou dost, what shal I say to thee?

*War.* What may be said to anie periurd villaine,

330 That breaks the sacred warrant of an oath.

*King.* What wilt thou say to one that breaks an othe?

*War.* That hee hath broke his faith with God and man,  
And from them both standes excommunicat.

*King.* What office were it, to suggest a man

335 To breake a lawfull and religious vowe?

*War.* An office for the deuill, not for man.

*King.* That deuilles office must thou do for me,

Or breake thy oth and cancell all the bondes

Of loue and duetie twixt thy self and mee;

340 And therefore, Warwike, if thou art thy selfe,

The Lord and master of thy word and othe,

Go to thy daughter; and in my behalfe

Comaund her, woo her, win her anie waies,

To be my mistres and my secret loue.

345 I will not stand to heare thee make reply:

Thy oth breake hers, or let thy souereigne dye.

[*Exit.*

*War.* O doting king! O detestable office!

Well may I tempt my self to wrong my self,

When he hath sworne me by the name of God

350 To breake a vowe, made by the name of God.

What, if I sweare by this right hand of mine

To cut this right hande off? The better waie

Were to prophaine the Idoll, then confound it:

But neither will I do; Ile keepe myne oath,

355 And to my daughter make a recantation

Of all the vertue I haue præcht to her:

Ile say, she must forget her husband Salisbury,

If she remember to embrace the king;

Ile say, an othe may easily be broken,

360 But not so easily pardoned, being broken;

Ile say, it is true charity to loue,

But not true loue to be so charitable;

329. *to*] of Col. — 330. *breake* A. — 338. *and*] or AB and Edd. —  
341. *thy*] *the*. Col. — 346. *breakes* B. — 347 ss. Given to KING in A; *O det.*  
or *det.* AB; corr. by Cap. — 350. *by*] in Col. — 354. *my othe* B and Edd.

Ile say, his greatnes may beare out the shame;  
 But not his kingdome can buy out the sinne;  
 Ile say, it is my duety to perswade,  
 But not her honestie to giue consent.

365

*Enter COUNTESS.*

See where she comes: Was neuer father had  
 Against his child an embassage so bad!

*Count.* My Lord and father, I haue sought for you:  
 My mother and the Peeres importune you  
 To keepe in presence of his maiestie,  
 And do your best to make his highnes merrie.

370

*War.* (*Aside.*) How shall I enter in this gracelesse errand?  
 I must not call her child; for wheres the father  
 That will in such a sute seduce his child?

375

Then, 'wife of Salisbury', shall I so begin?  
 No, hees my friend; and where is found the friend  
 That will doe friendship such indammagement?

(*To the Count.*) Neither my daughter nor my deare friends wife,  
 I am not Warwike, as thou thinkst I am,

380

But an atturnie from the Court of hell,  
 That thus haue housd my spirite in his forme,  
 To do a message to thee from the King.

The mighty king of England dotes on thee:  
 He that hath power to take away thy life,

385

Hath power to take thy honor; then consent  
 To pawne thine honor rather then thy life:

Honor is often lost and got againe,  
 But life, once gone, hath no recouerie.

The Sunne, that withers heye, doth nourish grasse;  
 The king, that would distaine thee, will aduance thee.

390

The Poets write that great Achilles speare  
 Could heale the wound it made: the morrall is,  
 What mighty men misdoo, they can amend.

The Lyon doth become his bloody iawes,

395

371. *presence*] *promise* A. — 373 (*Aside.*) and 379, (*To the Count.*) not  
 in Edd. — 373. *arrant* AB. — 386. *thine* B and Edd. — 389. *doth*] *goth* A.

- And grace his forragement by being milde,  
 When vassell feare lies trembling at his feete.  
 The king will in his glory hide thy shame;  
 And those that gaze on him to finde out thee,  
 400 Will loose their eie-sight, looking in the Sunne.  
 What can one drop of poyson harme the Sea,  
 Whose hugie vastures can digest the ill  
 And make it loose his operation?  
 The kings great name will temper thy misdeeds,  
 405 And giue the bitter potion of reproch  
 A sugred sweet and most delitious tast.  
 Besides, it is no harme to do the thing  
 Which without shame could not be left vndone.  
 Thus haue I in his maiesties behalfe  
 410 Apparaled sin in vertuous sentences,  
 And dwel vpon thy answeere in his sute.  
*Count.* Vnnaturall beseege! woe me vnhappie,  
 To haue escapt the danger of my foes,  
 And to be ten times worse iniured by friends!  
 415 Hath he no meanes to stayne my honest blood,  
 But to corrupt the author of my blood  
 To be his scandalous and vile soliciter?  
 No maruell though the braunches be then infected,  
 When poyson hath encompassed the roote:  
 420 No maruell though the leprous infant dye,  
 When the sterne dame inuennometh the Dug.  
 Why then, giue sinne a pasport to offend,  
 And youth the dangerous reine of liberty:  
 Blot out the strict forbidding of the law,  
 425 And cancell euery cannon that prescribes  
 A shame for shame or pennance for offence.  
 No, let me die, if his too boystrous will

402. *vastnes* conj. by Col. — 404. *thy*] *their* AB and Col.; corr. by Cap.  
 — 405. *portion* A. — 409. *Then* Col. — 414. *inuierd* AB, *inwir'd* Del.;  
 Elze, Notes on Elizabethan Dramatists, II. p. 2, thinks *inuierd* to be pos-  
 sibly abbreviated from *envioured*, as Max Moltke prints. — 418. *No marvel*  
*then, though the branches be infected* Cap., Tyr., and Del.; *though the*  
*branch be then inf.* Col.; *branches* may be read as a monosyllable, cp.  
 Abbott s. 471. — 423. *reigne* A.

Will haue it so, before I will consent  
To be an actor in his gracelesse lust.

*War.* Why, now thou speakst as I would haue thee speake: 430  
And marke how I vnsaie my words againe.

An honorable graue is more esteemd  
Then the polluted closet of a king:  
The greater man, the greater is the thing,  
Be it good or bad, that he shall vndertake: 435  
An vnreputed mote, flying in the Sunne,  
Presents a greater substance then it is:

The freshest summers day doth soonest taint  
The lothed carrion that it seemes to kisse:  
Deepe are the blowes made with a mightie Axe: 440  
That sinne doth ten times agreuate it selfe,  
That is committed in a holie place:

An euill deed, done by authoritie,  
Is sin and subboration: Decke an Ape  
In tissue, and the beautie of the robe 445  
Adds but the greater scorne vnto the beast.

A spacious field of reasons could I vrge  
Betweene his glory, daughter, and thy shame:  
That poyson steweth worst in a golden cup;  
Darke night seemes darker by the lightning flash; 450  
Lillies, that fester, smel far worse then weeds;

And euery glory that inclynes to sin,  
The shame is treble by the opposite.  
So leaue I with my blessing in thy bosome;  
Which then conuert to a most heauie curse, 455  
When thou conuertest from honors golden name  
To the blacke faction of bed-blotting shame!

*Count.* Ile follow thee; and when my minde turnes so,  
My body sinke my soule in endles woo! [*Exeunt.*]

448. *glory*] *gloomie* AB; corr. by Cap. — 453. *shame*] *same* Del. —  
457, 459. *Exit.* Cap. and Del.

## SCENE II.

*The Same. A Room in the Castle.*

*Enter at one doore DERBY from Fraunce, at an other doore AUDLEY with a Drum.*

*Der.* Thrice noble Audley, well incountred heere!  
How is it with our soueraigne and his peeres?

*Aud.* Tis full a fortnight, sincé I saw his highnes,  
What time he sent me forth to muster men;

5 Which I accordingly haue done, and bring them hither  
In faire aray before his maiestie.

What newes, my Lord of Derby, from the Emperor?

*Der.* As good as we desire: the Emperor  
Hath yeelded to his highnes friendly ayd,  
10 And makes our King leiuetenant-generall

In all his lands and large dominions:  
Then *via* for the spacious bounds of Fraunce!

*Aud.* What, doth his highnes leap to heare these newes?

*Der.* I haue not yet found time to open them;

15 The king is in his closet, malcontent,  
For what, I know not; but he gaue in charge,  
Till after dinner none should interrupt him:  
The Countesse Salisbury and her father Warwike,  
Artoyes and all looke vnderneath the browes.

20 *Aud.* Vndoubtedly, then some thing is amisse. [*Trumpet within.*

*Der.* The Trumpets sound, the king is now abroad.

*Enter the KING.*

*Aud.* Here comes his highnes.

*Der.* Befall my soueraigne all my soueraignes wish!

*King.* Ah, that thou wert a Witch to make it so!

25 *Der.* The Emperour greeteth you. [*Presenting letters,*

*King.* (*Aside.*) Would it were the Countesse!

*Der.* And hath accorded to your highnes suite.

SCENE II. Stage-dir. add. by Cap.; *Enter Derby and Audley, meeting.*

Del. — 5. *hither* om. Cap. and Tyr. — 7. Given to KING EDW. in A. —  
13. *this news* B and Edd., except Del. — 20. Stage-dir. added by Del. —  
21. *Enter the KING* after l. 20 in AB and Edd., set aright by Del. —  
22. AR. *Hthere* A. — 25. Stage-dir. added by Del. — 26 and 28. *Aside*  
not in Edd.

*King.* (*Aside.*) Thou lyest, she hath not; but I would she had.

*Aud.* All loue and duety to my Lord the king!

*King.* Well, all but one is none: — What newes with you? 30

*Aud.* I haue, my liege, leuied those horse and foote  
According to your charge, and brought them hither.

*King.* Then let those foote trudge hence vpon those horse  
According to our discharge, and be gone. —

Darby, 35

He looke vpon the Countesse minde anone.

*Dar.* The Countesse minde, my liege?

*King.* I meane the Emperour: — leaue me alone.

*Aud.* What is in his mind?

*Dar.* Lets leaue him to his humor. [*Exeunt.*

*King.* Thus from the harts aboundance speakes the tongue; 40  
Countesse for Emperour: and indeed, why not?

She is as imperator ouer me

And I to her

Am as a kneeling vassaille, that obserues

The pleasure or displeasure of her eye. 45

*Enter LODWIKE.*

What saies the more then Cleopatras match  
To Cæsar now?

*Lod.* That yet, my liege, ere night  
She will resolute your maiestie. [*Drum within.*

*King.* What drum is this that thunders forth this march,  
To start the tender Cupid in my bosome? 50

Poore shipskin, how it braules with him that beateth it!

Go, breake the thundring parchment bottome out,

And I will teach it to conduct sweet lynes.

Vnto the bosome of a heauenly Nymph;

For I will vse it as my writing paper, 55

32. *According as your A.* — 35, 36. One line in AB; Cap. and Edd. put anon in a line by itself. — 38. *Emperor's Col.* — 39. *What is his mind A; Exeunt.* AB, *Exeunt Derby and Audley.* Del. — 40. *aboundance*] abundant AB, Cap. and Tyr., *abundance* Del. and Col. — 43, 44. One line in AB and Col. — 47. Col. ends the line at *liege.* — 48. Stage-dir. added by Del.

And so reduce him from a scoulding drum;  
 To be the herald and deare counsaile-bearer  
 Betwixt a goddessse and a mighty king.  
 Go, bid the drummer learne to touch the Lute,  
 60 Or hang him in the braces of his drum;  
 For now we thinke it an vnciuill thing,  
 To trouble heauen with such harsh resounds:  
 Away!

[Exit.]

The quarrell that I haue requires no armes  
 65 But these of myne; and these shall meete my foe  
 In a deepe march of penytrable grones;  
 My eyes shall be my arrowes, and my sighes.  
 Shall serue me as the vantage of the winde,  
 To wherle away my sweetest artillerye.  
 70 Ah but, alas, she winnes the sunne of me,  
 For that is she her selfe; and thence it comes  
 That Poets tearme the wanton warriour blinde;  
 But loue hath eyes as iudgement to his steps,  
 Till too much loued glory dazles them. —

*Enter LODWICK.*

75 How now?  
*Lod.* My liege, the drum that stroke the lusty march,  
 Stands with Prince Edward, your thrice valiant sonne.

*Enter PRINCE EDWARD.*

*King.* I see the boy; oh, how his mothers face,  
 Modeld in his, corrects my straid desire,  
 80 And rates my heart, and chides my theeuish eie,  
 Who, being rich ennough in seeing her,  
 Yet seekes elsewhere: and basest theft is that  
 Which cannot cloke it selfe on pouertie. —  
 Now, boy, what newes?

62, 63. One line in AB; div. by Cap. — 63. (Stage-dir.) *Exit Lod.* B.  
 — 68. *vantage* Del. — 74. *two much* A. — Stage-dir. after l. 75 in AB;  
 set aright by Del. (*Re-enter LODOWICK*). — 77. *Enter PRINCE. LODOWICK*  
*retires to the door.* Del. — 79. *Molded* B and Edd. — 83. *cloke*] *check*  
 Cap. and Edd., except Del.

*Pr. Edw.* I haue assembled, my deare Lord and father, 85  
The choysest buds of all our English blood  
For our affaires in Fraunce; and heere we come  
To take direction from your maiestie.

*King.* Still do I see in him deliniatē  
His mothers visage; those his eies are hers, 90  
Who, looking wistely on me, make me blush:  
For faults against them selues giue euidence;  
Lust is a fire, and men like lanthornes show  
Light lust within them selues euen through them selues.  
Away, loose silkes of wauering vanitie! 95  
Shall the large limmit of faire Brittainye  
By me be ouerthrowne? and shall I not  
Master this little mansion of my selfe?  
Giue me an Armor of eternall steele!  
I go to conquer kings; and shall I then 100  
Subdue my selfe, and be my enimies friend?  
It must not be. — Come, boy, forward, aduaunce!  
Lets with our coullours sweete the Aire of Fraunce.

*Enter LODWIKE.*

*Lod.* My liege, the Countesse with a smiling cheere  
Desires accesse vnto your Maiestie. 105

*King.* Why, there it goes! That verie smile of hers  
Hath ransomed captiue Fraunce, and set the King,  
The Dolphin, and the Peeres at liberty. —  
Goe, leaue me, Ned, and reuell with thy friends. [*Exit PRINCE,*  
Thy mother is but blacke, and thou, like her, 110  
Dost put it in my minde how foule she is. —  
Goe, fetch the Countesse hether in thy hand,  
And let her chase away those winter clouds;  
For shee giues beautie both to heauen and earth. [*Exit LODWIKE.*

87. *in*] to A and Del. — 91. *make*] *made* B and Edd., except Del. —  
93. *Lust as a fire; and me like lanthorne show* AB; corrected by Cap. —  
95. *of*] or A. — 96. *limits* Col.; *Brittainye* A. — 100. *shall I not then* AB;  
not first om. by Cap. — 103. *sweete*] *sweep* Cap; and Tyt., *beat* Del., *sweet*  
Col.; *sweet* seems to be = to *sweeten*. — *Enter Lodw.*] *Advancing from the*  
*door and whispering him* Del. — 111. *it in*] *into* Cap. and Edd. —  
113. *these* A.

- 115 The sin is more to hacke and hew poore men,  
 Then to embrace in an vnlawfull bed  
 The register of all varieties  
 Since Letherne Adam till this youngest howre.

*Re-enter LODWIKE with the COUNTESSE.*

- King.* Goé, Lodwike, put thy hand into my purse,  
 120 Play, spend, giue, ryot, wast, do what thou wilt,  
 So thou wilt hence awhile and leaue me heere. [*Exit LODOWICK.*  
 Now, my soules plaiefellow, art thou come  
 To speake the more then heauenly word of yea  
 To my objection in thy beautilous loue?  
 125 *Count.* My father on his blessing hath commanded —  
*King.* That thou shalt yeeld to me?  
*Count.* I, deare my liege, your due.  
*King.* And that, my dearest loue, can be no lesse  
 Then right for right and tender loue for loue.  
 130 *Count.* Then wrong for wrong and endles hate for hate. —  
 But, — sith I see your maiestie so bent,  
 That my vnwillingnes, my husbands loue,  
 Your high estate, nor no respect respected  
 Can be my helpe, but that your mightines  
 135 Will ouerbeare and awe these deare regards,  
 I bynd my discontent to my content,  
 And, what I would not, Ile compell I will,  
 Prouided that your selfe remoue those lets  
 That stand betweene your highnes loue and mine.  
 140 *King.* Name them, faire Countesse, and, by heauen, I will.  
*Count.* It is their liues that stand betweene our loue,  
 That I would haue chokt vp, my soueraigne.  
*King.* Whose liues, my Lady?  
*Count.* My thrice louing liege,

117. *varieties* AB, *varieties* Del. and Col.; *fair rarities* Moltke. —  
 118. *till*] to Col. — 119. Stage-dir. as given by Del.; *Enter Countesse.* AB.  
 — 119. *thy purse* AB and Col. — 121. Stage-dir. add. by Cap. — 122. *and*  
*art* Cap., Tyr., and Del. — 124. *subjection* Del., *abjection* Col. — 129. *tender*]  
*tender* AB and Col.; *tender* first in Cap. — 136. *I bend my discontent to thy*  
*content* Col. — 140. *them*] *then* AB; corr. by Cap.

Your Queene and Salisbury, my wedded husband,  
 Who liuing haue that tyle in our loue,  
 That we cannot bestow but by their death. 145

*King.* Thy opposition is beyond our Law.

*Count.* So is your desire; If the law  
 Can hinder you to execute the one,  
 Let it forbid you to attempt the other. 150  
 I cannot thinke you loue me as you say,  
 Vnlesse you do make good what you haue sworne.

*King.* No more; thy husband and the Queene shall dye.  
 Fairer thou art by farre then Hero was,  
 Beardles Leander not so strong as I: 155  
 He swome an easie curraunt for his loue,  
 But I will through a Hellespont of bloud,  
 To arryue at Cestus where my Hero lyes.

*Count.* Nay, youle do more; youle make the Ryuer too  
 With their hart-bloods that keepe our loue asunder, 160  
 Of which my husband and your wife are twayne.

*King.* Thy beauty makes them guilty of their death  
 And giues in euidence that they shall dye;  
 Vpon which verdict I, their Iudge, condemne them.

*Count.* (*Aside.*) O periurde beautie, more corrupted Iudge! 165  
 When to the great Starre-chamber ore our heads  
 The vniuersall Sessions cals to count  
 This packing euill, we both shall tremble for it.

*King.* What saies my faire loue? is she resolute?

*Count.* Resolute to be dissolude; and, therefore, this: 170  
 Keepe but thy word, great king, and I am thine.  
 Stand where thou dost, Ile part a little from thee,  
 And see how I will yeeld me to thy hands.

148. *And so* Cap. and Edd. — 153 seqq. Continued to COUN. in A; *my queen* Col. — 156. *for*] *to* Col. — 157. *through*] *throng* A; *a hellie (helly) spout of bloud* AB, Cap. and Del.; *a Hellespont* was first proposed by Tyr. and corroborated by Col. (*Athenæum* No. 2422, p. 426, March 28, 1874). — 158. *Arrive that Sestos* Cap., Tyr. and Col. — 160. *heart's blood* Col. — 165. (*Aside.*) not in Edd. — 167. *session* Cap. conj. — 168. *packing ill* Cap. conj. — 169. *resolute* AB and Edd. — 170. *Resolute* AB; *Resolv'd* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del.

(Turning suddenly upon him, and showing two daggers.)

- Here by my side doth hang my wedding-knives:  
 175 Take thou the one, and with it kill thy Queene,  
 And learne by me to finde her where she lies;  
 And with this other Ile dispatch my loue,  
 Which now lies fast asleepe within my hart:  
 When they are gone, then Ile consent to loue.  
 180 Stir not, lasciuious king, to hinder me;  
 My resolution is more nimbler far,  
 Then thy preuention can be in my rescue,  
 And if thou stir, I strike; therefore stand still,  
 And heare the choyce that I will put thee to:  
 185 Either sweare to leaue thy most vnholie sute  
 And neuer henceforth to solicit me;  
 Or else, by heauen, this sharpe-pointed knyfe  
 Shall staine thy earth with that which thou wouldst staine,  
 My poore chast blood. (*Kneeling.*) Sweare, Edward, sweare,  
 190 Or I will strike and die before thee heere.

- King.* Euen by that power I sweare, that giues me now  
 The power to be ashamed of my selfe,  
 I neuer meane to part my lips againe  
 In any words that tends to such a sute.  
 195 Arise, true English Ladie; whom our Ile  
 May better boast of, then euer Romaine might  
 Of her, whose ransackt treasure hath taskt  
 The vaine indeuor of so many pens:  
 Arise; and be my fault thy honors fame,  
 200 Which after-ages shall enrich thee with.  
 I am awaked from this idle dreame; —  
 Warwike, my Sonne, Darby, Artoys, and Audley,  
 Braue warriours all, where are you all this while?

*Enter all.*

- Warwike, I make thee Warden of the North:  
 205 Thou, Prince of Wales, and Audley, straight to Sea;

173. Stage-dir. add. by Cap. — 174. *doth*] *do* Cap. and Edd. — 177. *this*] *the* B and Edd., except Del. — 184. *I will*] *I'll* Col. — 187. Cap. and Edd. add the Stage-dir. *kneeling* after *heauen*; it seems better to put it after *blood* (l. 189). — 188. *wouldst*] *would* A. — 194. *word* Cap. and Edd. — 197. *taske* B. — 205. *Thou*] *You* Cap. and Edd.

Scoure to New-hauen; some there staie for me;  
 My selfe, Artoys, and Darby will through Flaunders,  
 To greete our friends there and to craue their aide.  
 This night will scarce suffice me to discouer  
 My follies seege against a faithfull loue; 210  
 For, ere the Sunne shal guildé the easterne skie,  
 Weele wake him with our marshall harmonie. [Exeunt.

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.

*Enter KING IOHN OF FRAUNCE, his two sonnes, CHARLES OF NORMANDIE, and PHILLIP, and the DUKE OF LORRAINE.*

*K. Iohn.* Heere, till our Nauie of a thousand saile  
 Hauē made a breakfast to our foe by Sea,  
 Let vs incampe, to wait their happie speede. —  
 Lorraine, what readines is Edward in?  
 How hast thou heard that he provided is 5  
 Of marshall furniture for this exployt?

*Lor.* To lay aside vnecessary soothing,  
 And not to spend the time in circumstance,  
 Tis bruted for a certenty, my Lord,  
 That hees exceeding strongly fortified; 10  
 His subiects flocke as willingly to warre,  
 As if vnto a triumph they were led.

*Char.* England was wont to harbour malcontents,  
 Blood-thirsty and seditious Catelynes,  
 Spend-thrifts, and such as gape for nothing else 15  
 But changing and alteration of the state;  
 And is it possible  
 That they are now so loyall in them selues?

211. *gilde*] *guide* AB; corr. by Cap. — 212. *martiall* B.

ACT III. SCENE I. — 2. *at sea* Col. — 6. *martiall* B. — 16. Read *all'ration*; *change and* Cap. and Edd. — 17, 18. One line in B; two lines in Cap. and Edd., divided at *now*.

- Lor.* All but the Scot, who solemnly protests,  
 20 As heeretofore I haue enformed his grace,  
 Neuer to sheath his Sword or take a truce.  
*K. Iohn.* Ah, thats the anchredge of some better hope!  
 But, on the other side, to thinke what friends  
 King Edward hath retaynd in Netherland,  
 25 Among those euer-bibbing Epicures,  
 Those frothy Dutch men, puffed with double-beer,  
 That drinke and swill in euery place they come,  
 Doth not a little aggrauate mine ire;  
 Besides, we heare, the Emperour conioynes,  
 30 And stalls him in his owne authoritie:  
 But, all the mightier that their number is,  
 The greater glory reapes the victory.  
 Some friends haue we beside domesticke power;  
 The sterne Polonian, and the warlike Dane,  
 35 The King of Bohemia, and of Cycelie,  
 Are all become confederates with vs,  
 And, as I thinke, are marching hither apace. [*Drum within.*  
 But soft, I heare the musicke of their drums,  
 By which I gesse that their approach is neare.

*Enter the KING OF BOHEMIA, with DANES, and a Polonian Capitaine,  
 with other soldiers, another way.*

- 40 *King of Boh.* King Iohn of Fraunce, as league and neigh-  
 Requires, when friends are any way distrest, [borhood  
 I come to aide thee with my countries force.  
*Pol. Cap.* And from great Musko, fearefull to the Turke,  
 And lofty Poland, nurse of hardie men,  
 45 I bring these seruitors to fight for thee,  
 Who willingly will venture in thy cause.  
*K. Iohn.* Welcome, Bohemian King, and welcome all:  
 This your great kindnesse I will not forget.

20. *his*] *your* Col. — 33. *drum stricke* A, *drumsticke* B, *domesticke* Cap. and Edd. — 35. *kings* Col.; *Boheme* Cap., Tyr., and Col., but read *Th' king*. — 37. *hither apace*] *hitherward* Cap. and Tyr., but *hither* is used as a monosyllable; Stage-dir. *Drum within* added by Del. — 40—43. Divided at *league*, | *any*, | *force*. | in B.

Besides your plentiful rewards in Crownes,  
 That from our Treasury ye shall receiue;  
 There comes a hare-braind Nation, deckt in pride;  
 The spoyle of whome will be a trebble gaine.  
 And now my hope is full, my ioy complete:  
 At Sea, we are as puissant as the force  
 Of Agamemnon in the Hauē of Troy;  
 By land, with Zerxes we compare of strength,  
 Whose souldiers drancke vp riuers in their thirst:  
 Then, Bayardlike, blinde, ouerweaning Ned,  
 To reach at our imperiall dyadem  
 Is either to be swallowed of the waues,  
 Or hackt a peeces when thou comest ashore.

*Enter Marriner.*

*Mar.* Neere to the cost I haue discride, my Lord,  
 As I was busie in my watchfull charge;  
 The proud Armado of king Edwards ships:  
 Which, at the first; far off when I did ken;  
 Seemd as it were a groue of withered pinēs;  
 But, drawing neere, their glorious bright aspect,  
 Their streaming Ensignes, wrought of coulloured silke,  
 Like to a meddow full of sundry flowers,  
 Adornes the naked bosome of the earth;  
 Maiesticall the order of their course;

Figuring the horned Circle of the Moone:  
 And on the top-gallant of the Admirall  
 And likewise all the handmaidēs of his trayne  
 The Armes of England and of Fraunce vnited  
 Are quartred equally by Heralds art:  
 Thus, titely carried with a merrie gale,  
 They plough the Ocean hitherward amayne;

*K. Iohn.* Dare he already crop the Flewer de Luce?  
 I hope, the hony being gathered thence,  
 He, with the spider, afterward approcht,

49. *Beside* Cap. and Edd. — 52. *game* A and Del. — 62. *MAR.* om. A; *discribde* A. — 73. *And* om. Cap. and Edd.; read *th' top*. — 75. *united* Del. — 79. Continued to *MAR.* A.

- Shall sucke forth deadly venom from the leaues. —  
 But wheres our Nauy? how are they prepared  
 To wing themselves against this flight of Rauens?
- 85 *Mar.* They, hauing knowledge, brought them by the scouts,  
 Did breake from Anchor straight; and, puffed with rage  
 No otherwise then were their sailes with winde,  
 Made forth, as when the empty Eagle flies,  
 To satisfie his hungrie griping mawe.
- 90 *K. Iohn.* Theres for thy newes. Returne vnto thy barke;  
 And if thou scape the bloody strooke of warre  
 And do suruiue the conflict, come againe,  
 And let vs heare the manner of the fight. [*Exit MARRINER.*  
 Meane space, my Lords, tis best we be disperst.
- 95 To seuerall places, least they chauce to land:  
 First you, my Lord, with your Bohemian Troupes,  
 Shall pitch your battailes on the lower hand;  
 My eldest sonne, the Duke of Normandie,  
 Together with this aide of Muscouites,
- 100 Shall clyme the higher ground another waye;  
 Heere in the middle cost, betwixt you both,  
 Phillip, my yongest boy, and I will lodge.  
 So, Lords, be gon, and looke vnto your charge:  
 You stand for Fraunce, an Empire faire and large. [*Exeunt.*
- 105 Now tell me, Phillip, what is thy concept,  
 Touching the challenge that the English make?  
*Phil.* I say, my Lord, clayme Edward what he can,  
 And bring he nere so playne a pedegree,  
 Tis you are in possession of the Crowne,
- 110 And thats the surest poynt of all the Law:  
 But, were it not, yet ere he should preuaile,  
 Ile make a Conduit of my dearest blood,  
 Or chase those stragling vpstarts home againe.
- K. Iohn.* Well said, young Phillip! Call for bread and Wine,  
 115 That we may cheere our stomacks with repast,

83. *our*] *out* A. — 84. *flight*] *fleet* B. — 89. *satisfie* A. — 90. *Thees* A, *There's* B. — 93. [*Exit.*] A. — 104. [*Exeunt.*] after l. 103 in Qq. — 105. *thy concept*] *their concept* A, *thy conceite* B and Edd. — 111. *yet* om. B. — 114. Divided at *bread* in B.

To looke our foes more sternely in the face.

*A Table and Provisions brought in; King and his Son sit down to it.  
Ordinance afar off.*

Now is begun the heaue day at Sea:  
Fight, Frenchmen, fight; be like the felde of Beares,  
When they defend their younglings in their Caues!  
Steer, angry Nemesis, the happie helme, 120  
That, with the sulphur battels of your rage,  
The English Fleete may be disperst and sunke. [Shot.

*Phil.* O Father, how this eckoing Cannon-shot,  
Like sweetest harmonie, disgests my cates!

*K. Iohn.* Now, boy, thou hearest what thundring terror tis, 125  
To buckle for a kingdomes souerentie:  
The earth, with giddie trembling when it shakes,  
Or when the exalations of the aire  
Breakcs in extremitie of lightning flash,  
Affrights not more then kings, when they dispose 130  
To shew the rancor of their high-swolne harts. [Retreate.  
Retreate is sounded; one side hath the worse:  
O, if it be the French! Sweete fortune, turne;  
And, in thy turning, change the forward winds,  
That, with aduantage of a fauoring skie, 135  
Our men may vanquish, and the other flie!

*Enter Marriner.*

My heart misgiues: — say, mirror of pale death,  
To whome belongs the honor of this day?  
Relate, I pray thee, if thy breath will serue,  
The sad discourse of this discomfiture. 140

*Mar.* I will, my Lord.

My gracious soueraigne, Fraunce hath tane the foyle.

116. Stage-dir. add. by Cap.; *The battel heard, afarre off* AB (after l. 115).  
— 120. *Stir* AB; corr. by Cap. — 121. *sulphur'd* Cap. and Edd., except Del.  
— 124. *sweete* AB, *sweetest* first Cap. — 125. Div. at *thundring* in B. —  
126. *To battle* Col. conj. — 129. *Break* Cap. and Edd. — 131. [*Retreate.*]  
after l. 132 in Qq., corr. by Del. — 133. *it be* om. B. — 134. *froward*  
B and Edd. — 135. *sauoring* A. — 136. *the other*] *thither* A, *th'other* B.  
— 138. *the day* Col.

- And boasting Edward triumphs with successe.  
 These Iron-harted Nauias,  
 145 When last I was reporter to your grace,  
 Both full of angry spleene, of hope, and feare,  
 Hasting to meete each other in the face,  
 At last conioynd; and by their Admirall  
 Our Admirall encountred manie shot:  
 150 By this, the other, that beheld these twaine  
 Giue earnest peny of a further wracke,  
 Like fiery Dragons tooke their haughty flight;  
 And, likewise meeting, from their smoky wombes  
 Sent many grym Embassadors of death.  
 155 Then gan the day to turne to gloomy night,  
 And darkenes did as wel inclose the quicke  
 As those that were but newly reft of life.  
 No leasure serud for friends to bid farewell;  
 And, if it had, the hideous noise was such,  
 160 As ech to other seemed deafe and dombe.  
 Purple the Sea, whose channel fild as fast  
 With streaming gore, that from the maymed fell,  
 As did her gushing moysture breake into  
 The crannied clestures of the through-shot planks.  
 165 Heere flew a head, disseuered from the tronke,  
 There mangled armes and legs were tost aloft,  
 As when a wherle-winde takes the Summer-dust  
 And scatters it in middle of the aire.  
 Then might ye see the reeling vessels split,  
 170 And tottering sink into the ruthlesse fload,  
 Vntill their lofty tops were seene no more.  
 All shifts were tried, both for defence and hurt:  
 And now the effect of vallor and of fear,  
 Of resolution and of cowardize,  
 175 We liuely pictured; how the one for fame,  
 The other by compulsion laid about:  
 Much did the *Nonpareille*, that braue ship;

164. *cranny* AB. — 165. *disseuered* A. — 169. *you* Col. — 173. *effects* Cap. and Edd., except Del.; *fear*] *force* AB, corr. by Cap. — 174. *of a cowardize* A. — 175. *We*] *Were* Cap. and Edd., except Del. — 177. *Nom fer illa* AB, *Nonpareille* Cap., Tyr., and Del., *Nonperillo* Col.

So did the blacke-snake of Bullen, then which  
 A bonnier vessel neuer yet spred sayle.  
 But all in vaine; both Sunne, the Winde and tyde, 180  
 Reuolted all vnto our foemens side,  
 That we perforce were fayne to giue them way,  
 And they are landed: — Thus my tale is donne:  
 We haue vntimly lost, and they haue woone.

*K. John.* Then rests there nothing, but with present speede 185  
 To ioyne our seuerall forces al in one,  
 And bid them battaile, ere they rainge too farre.  
 Come, gentle Phillip, let vs hence depart;  
 This souldiers words haue perst thy fathers hart. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*PICARDY. Fields near CRESSI.*

*Enter two Frenchmen, a woman and two little Children meet them,  
 and other Citizens.*

*One.* Wel met, my masters: How now? whats the newes?  
 And wherefore are ye laden thus with stuffe?  
 What, is it quarter-daie that you remoue,  
 And carrie bag and baggage too?

*Two.* Quarter-day? I, and quartering day, I feare: 5  
 Haue ye not heard the newes that flies abroad?

*One.* What newes?

*Three.* How the French Nauy is destroyd at Sea,  
 And that the English Armie is arriued.

*One.* What then? 10

*Two.* What then, quoth you? why, ist not time to fle,  
 When enuie and destruction is so nigh?

*One.* Content thee, man; they are farre enough from hence,  
 And will be met, I warrant ye, to their cost,  
 Before they breake so far into the Realme. 15

178. *Boulogne* Cap. and Edd. — 180. *Wine* A. — 181. *foeman's* Col.  
 SCENE II. Stage-dir. *PICARDY. Fields near CRESSI.* add. by Cap.  
 — 2. *you* B and Edd. — 5. *quartering pay* A. — 11. *why, is not* Col.  
 — 12. *enemy* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del.; *are* Col. — 14. *you* B  
 and Edd.

- Two.* I, so the Grashopper doth spend the time  
 In mirthfull iollitie, till Winter come;  
 And then too late he would redeeme his time,  
 When frozen cold hath nipt his carelesse head.  
 20 He, that no sooner will provide a Cloake,  
 Then when he sees it doth begin to raigne,  
 May, peraduenture, for his negligence,  
 Be thoroughly washed, when he suspects it not.  
 We that haue charge and such a trayne as this;  
 25 Must looke in time, to looke for them and vs,  
 Least, when we would, we cannot be reliened.

*One.* Belike, you then dispaire of all successe,  
 And thinke your Country will be subiugate.

*Three.* We cannot tell; tis good to feare the worst.

- 30 *One.* Yet rather fight, then, like vnnaturall sonnes,  
 Forsake your louing parents in distresse.

- Two.* Tush, they that haue already taken armes,  
 Are manie fearefull millions in respect  
 Of that small handfull of our enimies:  
 35 But tis a rightfull quarrell must preuaile;  
 Edward is sonne vnto our late kings sister,  
 Where Iohn Valoys is three degrees remoued.

- Woman.* Besides, there goes a Prophanesie abroad,  
 Published by one that was a Fryer once,  
 40 Whose Oracles haue many times prooued true;  
 And now he sayes, 'The tyme will shortly come,  
 Whenas a Lyon, rowsed in the west,  
 Shall carrie hence the fluer-de-luce of France':  
 These, I can tell yee, and such like surmises  
 45 Strike many french men cold vnto the heart.

*Enter a Frenchman.*

*Four.* Flie, countrymen and citizens of France!  
 Sweete-flowring peace, the roote of happie life,  
 Is quite abandoned and expulst the lande;

16. *his time* Col. — 23. *thoroughly* Tyr. and Col. — 27. *then you* Col.;  
 all] ill AB. — 37. *When* Col.; *where* = *whereas*, as often in Shak.

Insted of whome ransack-constraining warre  
 Syts like to Rauens vppon your houses topps; 50  
 Slaughter aud mischiefe walke within your streets,  
 And, vnrestrained, make hauock as they passe;  
 The forme whereof euen now my selfe beheld  
 Vpon this faire mountaine whence I came.  
 For so far off as I directed mine eies, 55  
 I might perceauē five Cities all on fire,  
 Come-feldes and vineyards, burning like an ouen;  
 And, as the reaking vapour in the wind  
 Tourned but aside, I likewise might disseerne  
 The poore inhabitants, escapt the flame, 60  
 Fall numberles vpon the souldiers pikes.  
 Three waies these dredfull ministers of wrath  
 Do tread the measures of their tragicke march;  
 Vpon the right hand comes the conquering king,  
 Vpon the lefte his hot vnbridled sonne, 65  
 And in the midst our nations glittering hoast;  
 All which, though distant, yet conspire in one,  
 To leaue a desolation where they come.  
 Flie therefore, Citizens, if you be wise,  
 Seeke out som habitation further off: 70  
 Here if you staie, your wives will be abused,  
 Your treasure sharde before your weeping eies;  
 Shelter your selues, for now the storme doth rise.  
 Away, away; me thinks, I heare their drums: —  
 Ah, wretched France, I greatly feare thy fall; 75  
 Thy glory shaketh like a tottering wall. [Exeunt.

49. *which* Cap. conj.; *ransackt* AB, corr. by Cap. — 50. *raven-like*  
*upon* prop. by Cap. and ad. by Del.; *on* Cap. and Edd.; *Rauens* is used as  
 a monosyllabe. — 54. *Now, upon* Cap., Tyr., and Del.; *fair* is used as a disyl-  
 lable. — 55. *far as I did direct* Cap. and Edd.; *direct* Del.; *directed* to be  
 pron. *direct'd*. — 58. *leaking* AB, Cap., and Tyr.; *reeking* prop. by Cap.  
 and adopted by Del. and Col. — 59. *I tourned but aside* AB, *Turned aside*  
 Cap. and Tyr., *Ay turned but aside, I might* Cap. conj., *Turned but aside*  
 Del. and Col. — 65. *his* is A. — 73. *Shelter you your selues* AB; *you*  
 first struck out by Cap. — 76. [Exeunt.] om. A.

## SCENE III.

*The Same. Drums.**Enter KING EDWARD, and the ERLE OF DARBY, with Souldiors,  
and GOBIN DE GRAIE.*

*King.* Wheres the French man by whose cunning guidance  
We found the shalow of this Riuer Some,  
And had direction how to passe the sea?

*Gobin.* Here, my good Lord.

5 *King.* How art thou calde? tell me thy name.

*Gobin.* Gobin de Graie, if please your excellence.

*King.* Then, Gobin, for the seruice thou hast done,  
We here inlarge and giue thee liberty;  
And, for a recompence, beside this good;  
10 Thou shalt receiue five hundred markes in golde. —  
I know not how, we should haue met our sonne,  
Whom now in heart I wish I might behold.

*Enter ARTOYES.*

*Art.* Good newes, my Lord; the prince is hard at hand,  
And with him comes Lord Awdley and the rest,  
15 Whome since our landing we could neuer meet.

*Enter PRINCE EDWARD, LORD AWDLEY, and Souldiers.*

*K. Edw.* Welcome, faire Prince! How hast thou sped, my  
Since thy arriual on the coaste of Fraunce? [sonne,

*Pr. Edw.* Succesfullie, I thanke the gratiuous heauens:  
Some of their strongest Cities we haue wonne,  
20 As Harflew, Lo, Crotaiie, and Carentine,  
And others wasted; leauing at our heeles  
A wide apparent feild and beaten path,  
For sollitarines to progresse in:

SCENE III. Stage-dir. *The same. Drums. add. by Cap. — 1. Where*  
*E. St. / mten* *is Cap. and Edd.; (guide AB and Edd.) guidance prop. by Cap. and adopted*  
*guide* *by Del. — 2. riuer Sone AB, Somme mod. Edd. — 5. tell me om. Cap.*  
*and Edd. — 6. if it please Col. — 9. for recomp. AB. — 13. Continued to*  
*KING in A. — 16. Two lines in B, divided at Prince. — 20. As Harslen,*  
*Lie, Cratag, and Carentigne AB. As Harfleur, Lo, Crotage, and Carentan*  
*Cap. and Edd. (Loo .. Charenton Col.).*

*we were not wiser submit, we kindly pardned)*  
III, 3.] KING EDWARD THE THIRD. *I scarcely think this an improvement!*

Yet those that would submit, we kindly pardned;  
But who in scorne refused our proffered peace, 25  
Indurde the penaltie of sharpe reuenge.

*K. Edw.* Ah, Fraunce, why shouldest thou be thus obstinate  
Agaynst the kind imbracement of thy friends?  
How gently had we thought to touch thy brest  
And set our foot vpon thy tender mould, 30  
But that, in froward and disdainfull pride,  
Thou, like a skittish and vntamed coult,  
Dost start aside and strike vs with thy heeles?  
But tel me, Ned, in all thy warlike course,  
Hast thou not seene the vsurping king of Fraunce? 35

*Pr. Edw.* Yes, my good Lord, and not two howers ago,  
With full a hundred thousand fighting men  
Vppon the one side of the riuers banke;  
I on the other; with his multitudes  
I feard he would haue cropt our smaller power: 40  
But happily, perceiuing your approch,  
He hath withdrawen himselfe to Cressey plaines;  
Where, as it seemeth by his good araie,  
He meanes to byd vs battaile presently.

*K. Edw.* He shall be welcome; thats the thing we craue. 45

*Enter KING IOHN, DUKES OF NORMANDY, and LORRAINE,  
KING OF BOHEME, yong PHILLIP, and Souldiers.*

*K. Iohn.* Edward, know, that Iohn, the true king of Fraunce,  
Musing thou shouldst incroach vppon his land,  
And, in thy tyranous proceeding, slay  
His faithfull subiects, and subuert his Townes,  
Spits in thy face; and in this manner folowing 50  
Obraids thee with thine arrogant intrusion:

25. *But*] For Edd.; *But* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del.; *poffered*  
A. — 27. *this* A. — 29. *gentle* B, Cap., and Tyr. — 31. *forward* Tyr. —  
37. *an* B and Edd. — 38. *of*] with AB, *of* (o') Edd. — 39. *And on the*  
*other*; both his AB, corr. by Cap.; *And I on the other* Col. — 40. *coped*  
Col. conj. — 42. *Cressi'* Cap., *Crecy'* Tyr., *Cressi* Del. — 46. *Now,*  
*Edward . . . Iohn, true* Cap. and Tyr. Read *th' true* and cp. l. 137. —  
51. *thy* Col.

- First, I condemne thee for a fugitiue;  
 A theeuish pyrate, and a needie mate,  
 One that hath either no abyding place,  
 55 Or else, inhabiting some barraine soile,  
 Where neither hearb or fruitfull graine is had,  
 Doest altogether lue by pilfering:  
 Next, insomuch thou hast infringed thy faith,  
 Broke leage and solemne couenant made with mee,  
 60 I hould thee for a false pernicious wretch:  
 And, last of all, although I scorne to cope  
 With one so much inferior to my selfe,  
 Yet, in respect thy thirst is all for golde,  
 Thy labour rather to be feared then loued,  
 65 To satisfie thy lust in either parte,  
 Heere am I come, and with me haue I brought  
 Exceding store of treasure, perle, and coyne.  
 Leaue therefore now to persecute the weake,  
 And, armed entring conflict with the armd,  
 70 Let it be seene, mongst other pettie thefts,  
 How thou canst win this pillage manfully.
- K. Edw.* If gall or wormwood haue a pleasant tast,  
 Then is thy sallutation hony-sweete;  
 But as the one hath no such propertie,  
 75 So is the other most satiricall.  
 Yet wot how I regarde thy worthles tants:  
 If thou haue vttered them, to foile my fame  
 Or dym the reputation of my birth,  
 Know, that thy woluish barking cannot hurt;  
 80 If slylie to insinuate with the worlde,  
 And with a strumpets artiftiall line  
 To painte thy vitious and deformed cause,  
 Bee well assured, the counterfeit will fade,  
 And in the end thy fowle defects be seene;  
 85 But if thou didst it to prouoke me on,

60. *false*] *most* B and Edd., except Del.; Elze (I, p. 4) prop. *perfidious* for *pernicious*. — 62. *such inf.* AB, *such an inf.* Del., *so much inf.* Cap. and Tyr., *with one such*, [*so*] *inf.* Col. — 64. *They* A. — 66. *I haue* B and Edd. — 77. *thou hast* Cap. conj.; *soil* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del. and Col. — 81. *line*] *hue* Col. conj., *lime* Elze (I, p. 5) conj.

As who should saie, I were but timerous  
 Or coldly negligent did need a spurre,  
 Bethinke thy selfe, how slacke I was at sea,  
 How since my landing I haue wonn no townes,  
 Entered no further but vpon the coast, 90  
 And there haue euër since securelie slept.  
 But if I haue bin otherwise imployd;  
 Imagin, Valoys, whether I intende  
 To skirmish, not for pillage, but for the Crowne  
 Which thou dost weare; and that I vowe to haue, 95  
 Or one of vs shall fall into his graue.

*Pr. Edw.* Looke not for crosse inuectiues at our hands,  
 Or rayling execrations of despight;  
 Let creeping serpents, hid in hollow banckes;  
 Sting with theyr tongues; we haue remorseles swordes, 100  
 And they shall pleade for vs and our affaires.  
 Yet thus much, breefly, by my fathers leaue:  
 As all the immodest poyson of thy throat  
 Is scandalous and most notorious lyes,  
 And our pretended quarell is truly iust, 105  
 So end the battaile when we meet to daie:  
 May eyther of vs prosper and preuaile,  
 Or, luckles curst, receiue eternall shame!

*K. Edw.* That needs no further question; and, I knowe,  
 His conscience witnesseth, it is my right. — 110  
 Therefore, Valoys, say, wilt thou yet resigne,  
 Before the sickle's thrust into the Corne,  
 Or that inkindled fury turne to flame?

*K. Iohn.* Edward, I know what right thou hast in France;  
 And ere I basely will resigne my Crowne, 115  
 This Champion-field shall be a poole of bloode,  
 And all our prospect as a slaughter-house.

*Pr. Edw.* I, that approues thee, tyrant, what thou art:  
 No father, king, or shepherd of thy realme,

89. *Now* AB. — 90. *the*] *thy* B and Edd., except Del. — 92. *other-*  
*ways* B and Edd. — 94. *but the* Cap. and Tyr., read *th' Crown.* — 96. *his*]  
*this* A. — 99. *hide* A. — 105. *is* om. Cap., Tyr., and Del. — 108. *crost*  
 Col. conj. — 113. *turned* B and Edd., except Del. — 116. *champain* Col.

*Cham.* Yes, sir; but M. Blague dwells ouer the way.

125 *Sir Ar.* Is not this the George? Before God, theres some  
[villany in this.

*Cham.* S'foote, our signe's remooou'd; this is strange!

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.

*Enter* *BLAGUE*, *trussing his points.*

*Host.* Chamberlen, speake vp to the new lodgings, bid Nell looke well to the bakt meats!

*Enter* *SIR ARTHUR* and *SIR RAPH.*

How now, my old *Ienerts* *banke* my house, my castle, lie in Waltham all night, and not vnder the Canopie of your host  
5 *Blagues* house?

*Sir Ar.* Mine host, mine host, we lay all night at the George in Waltham; but whether the George be your fee-simple or no, tis a doubtfull question. Looke vpon your signe!

*Host.* Body of Saint George, this is mine ouerthwart neigh-  
10 bour hath done this to seduce my blind customers. Ile tickle his catastrophe for this; if I do not indite him at next assises for Burglary, let me die of the *yellowes*; for I see tis no boote in these dayes to serue the good Duke of Norfolke. The villanous world is turnd manger; one Iade deceiues another,  
15 and your Ostler playes his part commonly for the fourth share. Haue wee Commedies in hand, you whorson, villanous male London letcher?

*Sir Ar.* Mine host, we haue had the moylingst night of it that euer we had in our liues.

20 *Host.* Ist certaine?

124. *dwells* om. B. — 125, *before Ioue theres* D and the rest. — 126. *Foote* D and the rest. — *Exeunt* om. Edd.

SCENE II. The scene is continued in Tieck. — 1—5. Divided at *lodgings* | *meats* | *horse* | *not* | *house* in Edd. — 1. *speake*] *speed* L. — 2. *meat* F and the rest; the stage-dir. *Enter* . . . added by the pres. Edd. — 3. *my old Iennerts banke, my horse, my castle* most Edd., *old jennet's back, my house* [Is] *my castle* L. *house* for *horse* first conj. by Steevens. — 8. *doubtfull* om. BD and the rest. — 10, 11. *to seduce* . . . *for this* om. EFG. — 11. *at the next* D and the rest. — 12. *see it is* L. — 14. *mangy* L. — 17. *London-lecther* D, *London leether* E, *London-leather* FG. — 20. *Is it* F and the rest.

*Sir Raph.* We haue bin in the Forrest all night almost.

*Host.* S'foot, how did I misse you? Hart, I was a-stealing a Bucke there.

*Sir Ar.* A plague on you; we were stayed for you.

*Host.* Were you, my noble Romanes? Why, you shall share; 25  
the venison is a footing. *Sine Cerere & Baccho friget Venus*;  
that is, theres a good breakfast prouided for a marriage thats  
in my house this morning.

*Sir Ar.* A marriage, mine host?

*Host.* A coniunction copulatiue; a gallant match betweene 30  
your daughter and M. Raymond Mountchensey, yong Iuuentus.

*Sir Ar.* How?

*Host.* Tis firme, tis done. Weele shew you a president i'th

*Sir Raph.* How? married? [ciuill law for't.

*Host.* Leaue trickes and admiration. Theres a cleanly paire 35  
of sheetes in the bed in the Orchard chamber, and they shall lie  
therè. What? Ile doe it; Ile serue the good Duke of Norfolke.

*Sir Ar.* Thou shalt repent this, Blague.

*Sir Raph.* If any law in England will make thee smart for 40  
this, expect it with all seucity.

*Host.* I renounce your defiance, if you parle so roughly.  
Ile barracado my gates against you. Stand, faire bully; Priest,  
come off from the rereward! What can you say now? Twas  
done in my house; I haue shelter i'th Court for't. D'ye see yon  
bay window? I serue the good Duke of Norfolk, and tis his lodg- 45  
ing. Storm, I care not, seruing the good Duke of Norfolk. Thou  
art an Actor in this, and thou shalt carry fire in thy face eternally.

*Enter SMUG, MOUNTCHENSEY, HARRY CLARE, and MILLISCENT.*

*Smug.* Fire, s'blood, theres no fire in England like your  
Trinidado sack. Is any man heere humorous? We stole the  
venison, and weele iustifie it: say you now! 50

21. Assigned to *Sir Ar.* in L. — 22. *Foot* D and the rest; *was stealing* of a D and the rest. — 26. *Venere* BDEF. — 27. *there is* CFG and the rest; *that is* CFG and the rest. — 31. *M.* (i. e. *Master*) om. L; *iuuents* FG. — 33. *in the* F and the rest. — 36. *sheets on the bed* D and the rest; *bed on the Orchard* B, *in Orchard Chamber* A. — 37. *I serue* D and the rest. — 43. *reward* EF. — 44. *in the* F and the rest. — 44, 45. *Dee see your bay* A, *Doe see your bay* B, *Doe you see yon bay* D and the rest. — 48. *Fire, nouns, ther's* D and the rest.

That neuer base affections enter there :

Fight and be valiant, conquer where thou comst!

185 Now follow, Lords, and do him honor too.

*Dar.* Edward Plantagenet, prince of Wales,

As I do set this helmet on thy head,

Wherewith the chamber of thy braine is fenst,

So may thy temples, with Bellonas hand,

190 Be still adorn'd with lawrell victorie :

Fight and be valiant, conquer where thou comst!

*Aud.* Edward Plantagenet, prince of Wales,

Receiue this lance into thy manly hand;

Vse it in fashion of a brasen pen,

195 To drawe forth bloudie stratagemes in France,

And print thy valiant deeds in honors booke:

Fight and be valiant, conquer where thou comst!

*Art.* Edward Plantagenet, prince of Wales,

Hold, take this target, weare it on thy arme;

200 And may the view thereof, like Perseus shield,

Astonish and transforme thy gazing foes

To senselesse images of meger death :

Fight and be valiant, conquer where thou comst!

*K. Edw.* Now wants there nought but knighthood, which

205 Wee leaue, till thou hast won it in the field. [defer'd

*Pr. Edw.* My gracious father and yee forward peeres,

This honor you haue donè me, animates

And chears my greene yet scarce appearing strength

With comfortable good-presaging signes,

210 No otherwise then did ould Iacobes wordes,

Whenas he breathed his blessings on his sonnes.

These hallowed giftes of yours when I prophane,

Or vse them not to glory of my God,

To patronage the fatherles and poore,

215 Or for the benefite of Englands peace,

Be numbe my ioynts, waxe feeble both mine armes,

188. *thy*] *this* AB; corr. by Cap. — 189. *with*] *by* Cap. prop. — 193. *manlike* B and Edd. — 197. *conquer*] *vanquish* A. — 204. Two lines in B, divided at *nought*. — 206. Prefix PR. EDW. om. in A. — 216. *Be-numb* Tyr.

Wither my hart, that, like a saples tree,  
I may remayne the map of infamy.

*K. Edw.* Then thus our steelde Battailes shall be rainged:  
The leading of the vawarde, Ned, is thyne; 220  
To dignifie whose lusty spirit the more,  
We temper it with Audleys grauitie,  
That, courage and experience ioynd in one,  
Your manage may be second vnto none:  
For the mayne battells, I will guide my selfe; 225  
And, Darby, in the rereward march behind.  
That orderly disposd and set in ray,  
Let vs to horse; and God graunt vs the daye! [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE IV.

*The Same.*

*Alarum. Enter a many French men flying.*

*After them PRINCE EDWARD, running. Then enter*

*KING JOHN and DUKE OF LORRAINE.*

*K. John.* Oh, Lorraine, say, what meane our men to fly?  
Our number is far greater then our foes.

*Lor.* The garrison of Genoaes, my Lorde,  
That came from Paris, weary with their march,  
Grudging to be so soddenly imployd, 5  
No sooner in the forefront tooke their place,  
But, straite retyring, so dismaide the rest,  
As likewise they betook themselues to flight,  
In which, for hast to make a safe escape,  
More in the clustering throng are prest to death, 10  
Then by the ennemie, a thousandfold.

*K. John.* O haplesse fortune! Let vs yet assay,  
If we can counsell some of them to stay. [*Exeunt.*]

219. *thus*] *this* A; *battle* Col.

SCENE IV. Stage-dir. *The same.* add. by Cap. — 5. *so* add. by Cap. — 10. *throng*] *through* B. — 13. *Exeunt.* om. A.

## SCENE V.

*The Same.**Enter KING EDWARD and AUDLEY.*

*K. Edw.* Lord Audley, whiles our sonne is in the chase,  
Withdraw your powers vnto this little hill,  
And heere a season let vs breath our selues.

*Aud.* I will, my Lord. [*Exit. Sound Retreat.*]

5 *K. Edw.* Iust dooming heauen, whose secret prouidence  
To our grosse iudgement is inscrutable,  
How are we bound to praise thy wondrous works,  
That hast this day giuen way vnto the right,  
And made the wicked stumble at them selues!

*Enter ARTOYS.*

10 *Art.* Rescue, King Edward! Rescue for thy sonne!

*K. Edw.* Rescue, Artoys? what, is he prisoner,  
Or by violence fell beside his horse?

*Art.* Neither, my Lord; but narrowly beset  
With turning Frenchmen, whom he did persue,  
15 As tis impossible that he should scape,  
Except yor highnes presently descend.

*K. Edw.* Tut, let him fight; we gaue him armes to day,  
And he is laboring for a knighthood, man.

*Enter DERBY.*

*Dar.* The Prince, my Lord, the Prince! oh, succour him!  
20 Hees close incompast with a world of odds!

*K. Edw.* Then will he win a world of honor too,  
If he by vallour can redeeme him thence;  
If not, what remedy? we haue more sonnes  
Then one, to comfort our declyning age.

*Re-enter AUDLEY.*

25 *Aud.* Renowned Edward, giue me leaue, I pray,  
To lead my souldiers where I may releue  
Your Graces sonne, in danger to be slayne.

SCENE V. Stage-dir. *The same.* add. by Cap. — 2. *our* A; cp. l. 26.  
— 10. ART. om. in A. — 12. *Or else* Cap. and Edd., but *Or* may be read  
as a disyllable; *fell'd* Anonymus conj. in Col. — 15. *it is* B. — 24. *declyning* B.

The snares of French, like Emmets on a banke,  
 Muster about him; whilst he, Lion-like,  
 Intangled in the net of their assaults, 30  
 Frantiquely wrends, and bytes the wouen toyle:  
 But all in vaine, he cannot free him selfe.

*K. Edw.* Audley, content; I will not haue a man,  
 On paine of death, sent forth to succour him:  
 This is the day, ordaynd by desteny, 35  
 To season his courage with those greeuous thoughts,  
 That, if he breaketh out, Nestors yeares on earth  
 Will make him sauer still of this exployt.

*Dar.* Ah, but he shall not liue to see those dayes.

*K. Edw.* Why, then his Epitaph is lasting prayse. 40

*Aud.* Yet, good my Lord, tis too much wilfulnes,  
 To let his blood be spilt, that may be saude.

*K. Edw.* Exclayme no more; for none of you can tell  
 Whether a borrowed aid will serue, or no;  
 Perhaps, he is already slayne or tane. 45  
 And dare a Falcon when shees in her flight,  
 And cuer after sheele be haggard-like:  
 Let Edward be deliuered by our hands,  
 And still, in danger, heele expect the like;  
 But if himselfe himselfe redeeme from thence, 50  
 He wil haue vanquisht cheerefull death and feare,  
 And euer after dread their force no more,  
 Then if they were but babes or Captiue slaues.

*Aud.* O cruell Father! Farewell, Edward, then!

*Dar.* Farewell, sweete Prince, the hope of chiuallry! 55

*Art.* O, would my life might ransom him from death!

*K. Edw.* But soft, me thinkes I heare [Sound Retreat.  
 The dismall charge of Trumpets loud retreat.  
 All are not slayne, I hope, that went with him;  
 Some will returne with tidings, good or bad. 60

36. *his green courage with those thoughts* Cap. and Edd., except Del.  
 — 37. *if he breathe out Nestors yeares on earth*, prop. by Cap. and  
 adopted by Del. and Col. — 41. *my good* Col. — 47. *haggard* A. —  
 56. Omitted by Col. — 57. *Forbear, my lords*; — *but soft* Cap. and Tyr.;  
 Stage-dir. added by Del.

*Enter PRINCE EDWARD in triumph, bearing in his hande his shiuered Launce, and the KING OF BOHEME, borne before, wrapt in the Collours.*

*They runne and imbrace him.*

*Aud.* O ioyfull sight! victorious Edward liues!

*Dar.* Welcome, braue Prince!

*K. Edw.* Welcome, Plantagenet!

*Pr. Edw.* [*kneele and kisse his fathers hand.*]

First hauing donne my duety as beseemed,

65 Lords, I regret you all with harty thanks.

And now, behold, after my winters toyle,  
My paynefull voyage on the boystrous sea  
Of warres deuouring gulphes and steely rocks,  
I bring my fraught vnto the wished port,

70 My Summers hope, my trauels sweet reward:

And heere, with humble duety, I present  
This sacrifice, this first fruit of my sword,  
Cropt and cut downe euén at the gate of death,  
The king of Boheme, father, whome I slue;

75 Whose thousands had intrencht me round about,

And laye as thicke vpon my battered crest,  
As on an Anuell, with their ponderous glaues:  
Yet marble courage still did vnderprop;  
And when my weary armes, with often blowes,

80 Like the continuall laboring Wood-mans Axe

That is enioynd to fell a load of Oakes,  
Began to faulter, straight I would remember  
My gifts you gaue me, and my zealous vow,  
And then new courage made me fresh againe,

85 That, in despight, I carud my passage forth,

And put the multitude to speedy flight.  
Lo, thus hath Edwards hand fild your request,  
And done, I hope, the duety of a knight.

72. *the first Col.* — 74. *Bohemia B and Del.* — 75. *Whom you said AB, Whose thousands Cap. and Edd., Who you said Col., Who you saw Anonymus in Col.* — 76. *laid Anon. in Col.* — 82. *remember] recouer AB, corr. by Cap.; Col. prints the line: Would recover, straight I would remember.* — 85. *craud A.* — 87. *this A; has Col.*

*K. Edw.* I, well thou hast deserud a knight-hood, Ned!  
 And, therefore, with thy sword, yet reaking warme 90  
 [*His Sword borne by a Soldier.*]

With blood of those that sought to be thy bane,  
 Arise, Prince Edward, trusty knight at armes:  
 This day thou hast confounded me with ioy,  
 And proude thy selfe fit heire vnto a king.

*Pr. Edw.* Here is a note, my gracious Lord, of those 95  
 That in this conflict of our foes were slaine:  
 Eleuen Princes of esteeme, Foure score  
 Barons, a hundred and twenty knights,  
 And thirty thousand common souldiers;  
 And, of our men, a thousand. 100

*K. Edw.* Our God be praised! Now, Iohn of Fraunce, I hope,  
 Thou knowest King Edward for no wantonesse,  
 No loue-sicke cockney, nor his souldiers iades.  
 But which way is the fearefull king escapt?

*Pr. Edw.* Towards Poyctiers, noble father, and his sonnes. 105

*K. Edw.* Ned, thou and Audley shall pursue them still;  
 Myselfe and Derby will to Calice streight,  
 And there begyrt that Hauen-towne with seege.  
 Now lies it on an vpshot; therefore strike,  
 And wistlie follow, whiles the game's on foote. 110  
 What Picture's this?

*Pr. Edw.* A Pellican, my Lord,  
 Wounding her bosome with her crooked beak,  
 That so her nest of young ones may be fed  
 With drops of blood that issue from her hart;  
 The motto *Sic et vos*, 'and so should you'. [*Exeunt.* 115]

90. *wreaking* B; Stage-dir. after l. 86 in A. — 91. *that* who Col.; *fought* AB and Edd., *sought* Tyr. and Col. — 92: *in arms* Col. — 97—100. Three lines in AB, div. at *Barons* |, *thousand* |, *thousand* |. — 98. *Barons, and Earls; a hundred twenty knights* Cap., Tyr., and Col.; *and hundred* Tyr.; *hundred* used as a trisyllable. — 99. *private souldiers* B, Cap. and Col. — 101. Prefix *K. Edw.* om. in A. — 101, 102. Div. at *France* in B. — 111. *is this* B. — 113. *might* A. — 115. *Exeunt* om. B.

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.

*Bretagne. Camp of the English.*

*Enter* LORD MOUNTFORD *with a Coronet in his hande; with him the*  
EARLE OF SALISBURY.

- Moun.* My Lord of Salisbury, since by your aide  
Mine ennemie Sir Charles of Bloys is slaine,  
And I againe am quietly possest  
In Brittaines Dukedome, knowe that I resolute,  
5 For this kind furtherance of your king and you,  
To sweare allegiance to his maiesty:  
In signe whereof receiue this Coronet,  
Beare it vnto him, and, withall, mine othe,  
Neuer to be but Edwards faithful friend.
- 10 *Sal.* I take it, Mountfort: Thus, I hope, ere long  
The whole Dominions of the Realme of Fraunce  
Wilbe surrendered to his conquering hand. [*Exit* MOUNTFORD.  
Now, if I knew but safely how to passe,  
I would at Calice gladly meete his Grace,
- 15 Whether, I am by letters certified,  
Yet he intends to haue his host remooude.  
It shal be so, this pollicy will serue: —  
Ho, whose within? Bring Villiers to me.

*Enter* VILLIERS.

- Villiers, thou knowest, thou art my prisoner,  
20 And that I might for ransome, if I would,  
Require of thee a hundred thousand Francks,  
Or else retayne and keepe thee captiue still:  
But so it is, that for a smaller charge  
Thou maist be quit, and if thou wilt thy selfe.

ACT IV. SCENE I. Stage-dir. *Bretagne. Camp of the English.*  
add. by Cap. — 1. *our* A. — 8. *my* B and Edd. — 12. *Exit* A, om. in  
B, *Exit Mountford* Cap. — 14. *at]* to AB; corr. by Cap. — 16. *Yet]* *That*  
Cap. and Edd. — 21. *a]* *an* B and Edd. — 24. *an if* Cap. and Edd.

And this it is: Procure me but a pasport  
 Of Charles, the Duke of Normandy, that I  
 Without restraint may haue recourse to Callis  
 Through all the Countries where he hath to do;  
 Which thou maist easely obtayne, I thinke,  
 By reason I haue often heard thee say,  
 He and thyself were students once together:  
 And then thou shalt be set at libertie.  
 How saiest thou? wilt thou vndertake to do it?

*Vil.* I will, my Lord; but I must speake with him.

*Sal.* Why, so thou shalt; take Horse, and post from hence:  
 Onely before thou goest, sweare by thy faith,  
 That, if thou canst not compasse my desire,  
 Thou wilt returne my prisoner backe againe;  
 And that shalbe sufficient warrant for thee.

*Vil.* To that condition I agree, my Lord,  
 And will vnfaynedly performe the same. [*Exit.*

*Sal.* Farewell, Villiers. —  
 This once I meane to trie a French mans faith. [*Exit.*

## SCENE II.

*Picardy. The English Camp before Calais.*

*Enter KING EDWARD and DERBY, with Souldiers.*

*K. Edw.* Since they refuse our profered league, my Lord,  
 And will not ope their gates, and let vs in,  
 We will intrench our selues on euery side,  
 That neither vituals nor supply of men  
 May come to succour this accursed towne:  
 Famine shall combate where our swords are stopt.

*Enter sixe poore Frenchmen.*

*Der.* The promised aid, that made them stand aloofe,  
 Is now retirde and gone an other way:

31. *thyself*] *thou* AB, corr. by Cap.; *That he and thou* prop. by Cap.;  
*wert* B. — 32. *thou*] *thyself* Col. — 39. *thee*] *mee* AB; corr. by Cap. —  
 43. *Thus* AB and Edd., *This* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del.

SCENE II. Stage-dir. add. by Cap. — 2. *their*] *the* B and Edd. —  
 6. Stage-dir. behind l. 9 in Cap. and Edd.; *six*] *some* Cap. and Edd.

It will repent them of their stubborne will.

- 10 But what are these poore ragged slaues, my Lord?

*K. Edw.* Aske what they are; it seemes, they come from Callis.

*Der.* You wretched patterns of dispayre and woe,  
What are you, liuing men or glyding ghosts,  
Crept from your graues to walke vpon the earth?

- 15 *Poore.* No ghosts, my Lord, but men that breath a life  
Farre worse then is the quiet sleepe of death:

Wee are distressed poore inhabitants,  
That long haue been diseased, sicke, and lame;  
And now, because we are not fit to serue,

- 20 The Captayne of the towne hath thrust vs forth,  
That so expence of victuals may be saued.

*K. Edw.* A charitable deed, no doubt, and worthy praise!  
But how do you imagine then to speed?

We are your enemies; in such a case

- 25 We can no lesse but put ye to the sword,  
Since, when we proffered truce, it was refusde.

*Poore.* And if your grace no otherwise vouchsafe,  
As welcome death is vnto vs as life.

*K. Edw.* Poore silly men, much wrongd and more distrest!

- 30 Go, Derby, go, and see they be relieud;  
Command that victuals be appoynted them,  
And giue to euery one fīue Crownes a peece:

[*Exeunt* DERBY and FRENCHMEN.]

The Lion scornes to touch the yeelding pray,  
And Edwards sword must flesh it selfe in such

- 35 As wilfull stubbornnes hath made peruerse.

*Enter* LORD PEARSIE.

Lord Persie! welcome: whats the newes in England?

*Per.* The Queene, my Lord, commends her to your Grace,  
And from hir highnesse and the Lord viceregent

11. Two ll. in B, div. at *seemes*. — 12. *partners* B. — 13. *ye* B and Edd. — 22. *no doubt* om. Cap., Tyr., Del. — 25. *you* B and Edd. — 27. *An if* Cap. and Edd. — 30. *Good Derby* Cap. prop. — 32. Stage-dir. add. by Cap. — 34. *fresh* AB, *flesh* conj. by Del. and Col. — 37. *comes heere* AB; corr. by Cap. — 38. *vice-gerent* Del.

I bring this happie tidings of successe:

Dauid of Scotland, lately vp in armes, 40

Thinking, belike, he soonest should preuaile,

Your highnes being absent from the Realme,

Is, by the fruitfull seruice of your peeres

And painefull trauell of the Queene her selfe,

That, big with child, was euery day in armes, 45

Vanquisht, subdude, and taken prisoner.

*K. Edw.* Thanks, Persie, for thy newes, with all my hart!

What was he, tooke him prisoner in the field?

*Per.* A Squire, my Lord; Iohn Copland is his name:

Who since, intreated by her Maiestie, 50

Denies to make surrender of his prize

To anie but vnto your grace alone;

Whereat the Queene is greouously displeasd.

*K. Edw.* Well, then wee le haue a Pursuaunt dispatht,

To summon Copland hither out of hand, 55

And with him he shall bring his prisoner king.

*Per.* The Queene's, my Lord, her selfe by this at Sea,

And purposeth, as soone as winde will serue,

To land at Callis, and to visit you.

*K. Edw.* She shall be welcome; and, to wait her comming, 60

Ile pitch my tent neere to the sandy shore.

*Enter a French Captayne.*

*Capt.* The Burgesses of Callis, mighty king,

Haue by a counsell willingly decreed

To yeeld the towne and Castle to your hands,

Vpon condition, it will please your grace 65

To graunt them benefite of life and goods.

*K. Edw.* They wil so! Then, belike, they may command,

Dispose, elect, and gouerne as they list.

No, sirra, tell them, since they did refuse

Our princely clemencie at first proclaymed, 70

43. *faithfull* B and Edd. — 49. *A Esquire* A. — 54. *dispatch* A. —  
57. *Queene my Lord* A; *The queen, my lord, herself's* by Cap. prop. —  
61. Stage-dir. *French* add. by Del. — 62. Prefix *CAPT.* om. in A.

- They shall not haue it now, although they would;  
 I will accept of nought but fire and sword,  
 Except, within these two daies, sixe of them,  
 That are the welthiest marchaunts in the towne,  
 75 Come naked, all but for their linnen shirts,  
 With each a halter hangd about his necke,  
 And prostrate yeeld themselues, vpon their knees,  
 To be afflicted, hanged, or what I please;  
 And so you may informe their masterships.

[*Exeunt* K. EDWARD and PERCY.]

- 80 *Cap.* Why, this it is to trust a broken staffe:  
 Had we not been perswaded, Iohn our king  
 Would with his armie haue releued the towne,  
 We had not stood vpon defiance so:  
 But now tis past that no man can recall,  
 85 And better some do go to wrack then all. [Exit.]

### SCENE III.

*Poitou. Fields near Poitiers. The French camp; Tent of the Duke  
 of Normandy.*

*Enter* CHARLES OF NORMANDY and VILLIERS.

*Charles.* I wounder, Villiers, thou shouldest importune me  
 For one that is our deadly ennemie.

*Vil.* Not for his sake, my gracious Lord, so much  
 Am I become an earnest aduocate,

- 5 As that thereby my ransome will be quit.

*Charles.* Thy ransome, man? why, needest thou talke of that?  
 Art thou not free? and are not all occasions,  
 That happen for aduantage of our foes,  
 To be accepted of, and stood vpon?

- 10 *Vil.* No, good my Lord, except the same be iust;  
 For profit must with honor be comixt,  
 Or else our actions are but scandalous.

73. *this* B. — 79. (Stage-dir.) K. EDWARD and PERCY add. by Del.

SCENE III. Stage-dir. as given by Cap. — 8. *of*] *on* prop. by Cap.  
 and adopted by Del.; *of our*] *over* Col. conj. — 9. *unstood upon* Cap. prop.

But, letting passe these intricate obiections,  
Wilt please your highnes to subscribe, or no?

*Charles.* Villiers, I will not, nor I cannot do it; 15  
Salisbury shall not haue his will so much,  
To clayme a pasport how it please:h himselfe.

*Vil.* Why, then I know the extremitie, my Lord;  
I must returne to prison whence I came.

*Charles.* Returne? I hope thou wilt not; 20  
What bird that hath escapt the fowlers gin,  
Will not beware how shees insnard againe?  
Or, what is he, so senceles and secure,  
That, hauing hardely past a dangerous gulfe,  
Will put him selfe in perill there againe? 25

*Vil.* Ah, but it is mine othe, my gracious Lord,  
Which I in conscience may not violate,  
Or else a kingdome should not draw me hence.

*Charles.* Thine othe? why, that doth bind thee to abide:  
Hast thou not sworne obedience to thy Prince? 30

*Vil.* In all things that vprightly he commands:  
But either to perswade or threaten me,  
Not to performe the couenant of my word,  
Is lawlesse, and I need not to obey.

*Charles.* Why, is it lawfull for a man to kill, 35  
And not, to breake a promise with his foe?

*Vil.* To kill, my Lord, when warre is once proclaymd,  
So that our quarrel be for wrongs receaude,  
No doubt, is lawfully permitted vs:  
But, in an othe, we must be well aduisd, 40  
How we do sweare; and, when we once haue sworne,  
Not to infringe it, though we die therefore:  
Therefore, my Lord, as willing I returne,  
As if I were to flie to paradise.

*Charles.* Stay, my Villiers; thine honorable minde 45  
Deserues to be eternally admirde.  
Thy sute shalbe no longer thus deferd;

17. *please* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del. — 20. *Villiers* add. at the end of the line by Cap. and Edd. — 22. *be ware* Cap. and Del. — 26. *my othe* B and Edd. — 45. *thy* B and Edd.

- Give me the paper, Ile subscribe to it:  
 And, where tofore I loued thee as Villiers,  
 50 Heereafter Ile embrace thee as my selfe;  
 Stay, and be still in fauour with thy Lord.  
*Vil.* I humbly thanke your grace; I must dispatch,  
 And send this pasport first vnto the Earle,  
 And then I will attend your highnes pleasure.  
 55 *Charles.* Do so, Villiers; — and Charles, when he hath neede,  
 Be such his souldiers, howsoever he speed! [*Exit VILLIERS.*]

*Enter KING IOHN.*

- K. Iohn.* Come, Charles, and arme thee; Edward is intrapt,  
 The Prince of Wales is faîne into our hands,  
 And we haue compast him, he cannot scape.  
 60 *Charles.* But will your highnes fight to-day?  
*K. Iohn.* What else, my son? hees scarce eight thousand  
 And we are three score thousand at the least. [*strong,*  
*Charles.* I haue a prophecy, my gracious Lord,  
 Wherein is written, what successe is like  
 65 To happen vs in this outrageous warre;  
 It was delinered me at Cresses field  
 By one that is an aged Hermyt there.  
 [*Reads*] ‘When fethered fowl shal make thine army tremble,  
 And flint-stones rise and breake the battell-ray,  
 70 Then thinke on him that doth not now dissemble;  
 For that shalbe the haples dreadfull day:  
 Yet, in the end, thy foot thou shalt aduance  
 As farre in England as thy foe in Fraunce.’  
*K. Iohn.* By this it seemes we shalbe fortunate:  
 75 For as it is impossible that stones  
 Should euer rise and breake the battaile-ray,  
 Or airie foule make men in armes to quake,  
 So is it like, we shall not be subdude:  
 Or say this might be true, yet in the end,  
 80 Since he doth promise we shall driue him hence

58. *has* Col. — 61. Two ll. in B, div. at *sonne*; Cap. prop. *To day!*  
*What else, my son.* — 66. *Crecy* Tyr., *Cressi* Del. — 68. [*Reads*] add.  
 by Cap.

And forrage their Countrie as they haue don ours,  
 By this reuenge that losse will seeme the lesse.  
 But all are fryuolous fancies, toyes, and dreames:  
 Once we are sure we haue insnard the sonne,  
 Catch we the father after how we can.

[*Exeunt.* 85]

## SCENE IV.

*The same. The English Camp.**Enter* PRINCE EDWARD, AUDLEY, *and others.*

*Pr. Edw.* Audley, the armes of death embrace vs round,  
 And comfort haue we none, saue that to die;  
 We pay sower earnest for a sweeter life.  
 At Cressey field our Clouds of Warlike smoke  
 Chokt vp those French mouths and disseuered them:  
 But now their multitudes of millions hide,  
 Masking as twere, the beautious burning Sunne,  
 Leauing no hope to vs, but sullen darke  
 And eielesse terror of all-ending night.

5 ?

*Aud.* This suddaine, mightie, and expedient head  
 That they haue made, faire Prince, is wonderfull.  
 Before vs in the vallie lies the king,  
 Vantagd with all that heauen and earth can yeeld;  
 His partie stronger battaild then our whole:  
 His sonne, the brauing Duke of Normandie,  
 Hath trimd the Mountaine on our right hand vp  
 In shining plate, that now the aspiring hill  
 Shewes like a siluer quarrie or an orbe,  
 Aloft the which the Banners, bannarets,  
 And new-replenisht pendants cuff the aire  
 And beat the windes, that for their gaudinesse  
 Struggles to kisse them: on our left hand lies  
 Phillip, the younger issue of the king,  
 Coting the other hill in such arraie,

10

15

20

81. Cap. prop. to strike out *And.*

SCENE IV. Stage-dir. added by Cap. — 3. *To pay* Cap. and Tyr.  
 — 22. *Struggle* Col.

- 25 That all his gilded vpright pikes do seeme  
 Streight trees of gold, the pendants leaues;  
 And their deuce of Antique heraldry,  
 Quartred in collours, seeming sundry fruits,  
 Makes it the Orchard of the Hesperides:
- 30 Behinde vs too the hill doth beare his height,  
 For like a halfe Moone, opening but one way,  
 It rounds vs in; there at our backs are lodgd  
 The fatal Crosbowes, and the battaile there  
 Is governd by the rough Chattillion.
- 35 Then thus it stands: the valleie for our flight  
 The king binds in; the hils on either hand  
 Are proudly royalized by his sonnes;  
 And on the Hill behind stands certaine death  
 In pay and seruice with Chattillion.
- 40 *Pr. Edw.* Deathes name is much more mightie then his deeds;  
 Thy parcelling this power hath made it more.  
 As many sands as these my hands can hold,  
 Are but my handful of so many sands;  
 Then, all the world, and call it but a power,
- 45 Easely tane vp, and quickly throwne away:  
 But if I stand to count them sand by sand,  
 The number would confound my memorie,  
 And make a thousand millions of a taske,  
 Which briefelie is no more, indeed, then one.
- 50 These quarters, squadrons, and these regiments,  
 Before, behinde vs, and on either hand,  
 Are but a power: When we name a man,  
 His hand, his foote, his head hath seuerall strengthes;  
 And being al but one selfe instant strength,
- 55 Why, all this many, Audely, is but one,  
 And we can call it all but one mans strength.  
 He that hath farre to goe, tels it by miles;  
 If he should tell the steps, it kills his hart:

26. *pendant* AB; *pendant streamers, leaves* Cap., Tyr., and Del.; *with pendant leaves* Col. — 28. *sundy* A. — 30. *too*] *two* AB; *beare*] *rear* Col. conj. — 35. *fight* Col. — 35—37. Two lines in B, divided at *binds in*. — 44. *but one* Col. — 45. *Is easily ta'en* Cap. and Tyr. — 50. *These quarter'd squadrons* Cap. and Tyr. — 53. *have* Cap. and Edd. — 56. *all om.* Tyr.

The drops are infinite, that make a floud,  
 And yet, thou knowest, we call it but a Raine. 60  
 There is but one Fraunce and one King of Fraunce,  
 That Fraunce hath no more kings; and that same king  
 Hath but the puissant legion of one king,  
 And we haue one: Then apprehend no ods,  
 For one to one is faire equalitie. 65

*Enter an Herald from KING IOHN.*

What tidings, messenger? be playne and brieve.

*Her.* The king of Fraunce, my soueraigne Lord and master,  
 Greeteth by me his so, the Prince of Wales:  
 If thou call forth a hundred men of name,  
 Of Lords, Knights, Squires, and English gentlemen, 70  
 And with thyselfe and those kneele at his feete,  
 He straight will fold his bloody collours vp,  
 And ransome shall redeeme liues forfeited;  
 If not, this day shall drinke more English blood,  
 Then ere was buried in our Bryttish earth. 75  
 What is the answer to his profered mercy?

*Pr. Edw.* This heauen, that couers Fraunce, contains the  
 That drawes from me submissiue orizons; [mercy  
 That such base breath should vanish from my lips,  
 To vrge the plea of mercie to a man, 80  
 The Lord forbid! Returne, and tell thy king,  
 My tongue is made of steele, and it shall beg  
 My mercie on his coward burgonet;  
 Tell him, my colours are as red as his,  
 My men as bold, our English armes as strong; 85  
 Returne him my defiance in his face.

*Her.* I go.

[*Exit.*

*Enter another Herald.*

*Pr. Edw.* What newes with thee?

*Her.* The Duke of Normandie, my Lord and master,  
 Pittying thy youth is so ingirt with perill,

61. and first add. by Cap. — 68. *Greeteth thus by me* Cap., Tyr., and Del., *Greeteth by me* Col. — 69. *cull forth* Col. conj.; *an B* and Edd.; *hundreth B.* — 70. *Esquires A.* — 75. *your* conj. in Col. — 81 *thy* the A. — 87. [*Exit.*] om. A; *Herald* (Stage-dir.) add. by Del.

90 By me hath sent a nimble-joynted iennet,  
 As swift as euer yet thou didst bestride,  
 And therewithall he counsels thee to flie;  
 Else death himself hath sworne that thou shalt die.

*Pr. Edw.* Back with the beast vnto the beast that sent him!

95 Tell him, I cannot sit a cowards horse;  
 Bid him to-daie bestride the iade himselfe;  
 For I will staine my horse quite ore with bloud,  
 And double guild my spurs, but I will catch him;  
 So tell the carping boy, and get thee gone. [*Exit Herald.*]

*Enter another Herald.*

100 *Her.* Edward of Wales, Phillip, the second sonne  
 To the most mightie christian king of France,  
 Seeing thy bodies liuing-date expird,  
 All full of charitie and christian loue,  
 Commends this booke, full fraught with holy prayers,  
 105 To thy faire hand, and, for thy houre of lyfe,  
 Intreats thee that thou meditate therein,  
 And arme thy soule for hir long iourney towards.  
 Thus haue I done his bidding, and returne.

*Pr. Edw.* Herald of Phillip, greet thy Lord from me:

110 All good that he can send, I can receiue;  
 But thinkst thou not, the vnadvised boy  
 Hath wrongd himselfe in thus far tendering me?  
 Haply he cannot praie without the booke,  
 — I thinke him no diuine extemporall —,  
 115 Then render backe this common place of prayer,  
 To do himselfe good in aduersitie;  
 Besides he knows not my sinnes qualitie,  
 And therefore knowes no praiers for my auaille;  
 Ere night his praier may be to praie to God,  
 120 To put it in my heart to heare his praier.  
 So tell the courtly wanton, and be gone.

*Her.* I go.

[*Exit Herald.*]

99. *capring* A; [*Exit Herald.*] and *Herald* after *another* add. by Del.  
 — 104. *holy* add. by Cap. and Tyr. — 112. *thus*] *this* A; *farre* B! —  
 113. *Happily* A. — 122. [*Exit Herald.*] om. A.

*Pr. Edw.* How confident their strength and number makes  
 Now, Audley, sound those siluer wings of thine, [them! —  
 And let those milke-white messengers of time 125  
 Shew thy times learning in this dangerous time.  
 Thyselve art bruis'd and bit with many broiles,  
 And stratagems forepast with yron pens  
 Are texted in thine honorable face;  
 Thou art a married man in this distresse, 130  
 But danger woos me as a blushing maide:  
 Teach me an answer to this perillous time.

*Aud.* To die is all as common as to liue:  
 The one in choice, the other holds in chase;  
 For, from the instant we begin to liue, 135  
 We do pursue and hunt the time to die:  
 First bud we, then we blow, and after seed,  
 Then, presently, we fall; and, as a shade  
 Followes the bodie, so we follow death.  
 If, then, we hunt for death, why do we feare it? 140  
 If we feare it, why do we follow it?  
 If we do feare, how can we shun it?  
 If we do feare, with feare we do but aide  
 The thing we feare, to seize on vs the sooner:  
 If wee feare not, then no resolued proffer 145  
 Can ouerthrow the limit of our fate;  
 For, whether ripe or rotten, drop we shall,  
 As we do drawe the lotterie of our doome.

*Pr. Edw.* Ah, good olde man, a thousand thousand armors  
 These words of thine haue buckled on my backe: 150  
 Ah, what an idiot hast thou made of lyfe,  
 To seeke the thing it feares! and how disgrast  
 The imperiall victorie of murdring death,  
 Since all the liues, his conquering arrowes strike,  
 Seeke him, and he not them, to shame his glorie! 155  
 I will not giue a pennie for a lyfe,  
 Nor halfe a halfeenie to shun grim death,

124. *strings* Del. — 127. *bruis'd*] *busic* AB, corr. by Cap.; *bit*] *dent*  
 Cap. and Tyr. — 129. *texted* B, Cap., and Tyr. — 141. *Or, if we* Cap. and  
 Tyr. — 142. Om. in Cap. and Edd. — 151. *thou hast made* Col.

Since for to liue is but to seeke to die,  
 And dying but beginning of new lyfe.  
 160 Let come the houre when he that rules it will!  
 To liue or die I hold indifferent.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE V.

*The same. The French Camp.**Enter KING IOHN and CHARLES.*

*K. Iohn.* A sodaine darknes hath defast the skie,  
 The windes are crept into their caues for feare,  
 The leaues moue not, the world is husht and still,  
 The birds cease singing, and the wandring brookes  
 5 Murmure no wonted greeting to their shores;  
 Silence attends some wonder and expecteth  
 That heauen should pronounce some prophecie:  
 Where or from whome proceeds this silence, Charles?

*Charles.* Our men, with open monthes and staring eyes,  
 10 Looke on each other, as they did attend  
 Each others wordes, and yet no creature speakes;  
 A tongue-tied feare hath made a midnight houre,  
 And speeches sleepe through all the waking regions.

*K. Iohn.* But now the pompeous Sunne, in all his pride,  
 15 Lookt through his golden coach vpon the worlde,  
 And, on a sodaine, hath he hid himselfe,  
 That now the vnder-earth is as a graue,  
 Darke, deadly, silent, and vncomfortable. [*A clamor of rauens.*  
 Harke, what a deadly outcrie do I heare?

20 *Charles.* Here comes my brother Phillip.

*K. Iohn.*

All dismayd:

*Enter PHILLIP.*

What fearefull words are those thy looks presage?

*Phil.* A flight, a flight!

SCENE V. Stage-dir. added by Cap. — 3. *wood* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del. — 8. *Whence* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del. — 19. *a* om. B. — 20. [*Enter PHILLIP.*] add. by Del. — 20, 21. *All dismayd . . . presage* one line in A, two lines in B, divided at *words*; *All dismayd* put in a line by itself in mod. Edd.

*K. Iohn.* Coward, what flight? thou liest, there needs no

*Phil.* A flight. [flight.

*K. Iohn.* Awake thy crauen powers, and tell on 25  
The substance of that verie feare indeed,  
Which is so gastly printed in thy face:  
What is the matter?

*Phil.* A flight of vgly rauens  
Do croke and houer ore our souldiers heads,  
And keepe in triangles and cornerd squares, 30  
Right as our forces are imbattered;  
With their approach there came this sodain fog,  
Which now hath hid the airie floor of heauen  
And made at noone a night vnnaturall  
Vpon the quaking and dismaied world: 35  
In briefe, our souldiers haue let fall their armes,  
And stand like metamorphosd images,  
Bloudlesse and pale, one gazing on another.

*K. Iohn.* I, now I call to mind the prophesie,  
But I must giue no enterance to a feare. — 40  
Returne, and harden vp those yeelding soules:  
Tell them, the rauens, seeing them in armes,  
So many faire against a famisht few,  
Come but to dine vpon their handieworke  
And praie vpon the carrion that they kill: 45  
For when we see a horse laid downe to die,  
Although he be not dead, the rauenous birds  
Sit watching the departure of his life;  
Euen so these rauens for the carcasses  
Of those poore English, that are markt to die, 50  
Houer about, and, if they crie to vs,  
Tis but for meate that we must kill for them.  
Awake, and comfort vp my souldiers,  
And sound the trumpets, and at once dispatch  
This litle busines of a silly fraude. [Exit PHILIP. 55

26. *The very substance of that feare* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del. — 33. *floor*] *flower* AB. — 41. *these* AB. — 47. *he be* add. by Cap., Tyr., and Del. — 50. *these* B. — 55. [*Exit Prince.*] A.

*Another noise. SALISBURY brought in by a French Captaine.*

- Cap.* Behold, my liege, this knight and fortie mo,  
Of whom the better part are slaine and fled,  
With all indeuor sought to breake our rankes,  
And make their waie to the incompast prince:
- 60 *Dispose of him as please your maiestie.*  
*K. Iohn.* Go, and the next bough, souldier, that thou seest,  
Disgrace it with his bodie presently;  
For I do hold a tree in France too good  
To be the gallowes of an English theefe.
- 65 *Sal.* My Lord of Normandie, I haue your passe  
And warrant for my safetie through this land.  
*Charles.* Villiers procurd it for thee, did he not?  
*Sal.* He did.  
*Charles.* And it is currant, thou shalt freely passe.
- 70 *K. Iohn.* I, freely to the gallows to be hangd,  
Without deniall or impediment: —  
Awaie with him!
- Charles.* I hope your highnes will not so disgrace me,  
And dash the vertue of my seale at armes:
- 75 He hath my neuer-broken name to shew,  
Carectred with this princely hand of mine;  
And rather let me leaue to be a prince  
Than break the stable verdict of a prince:  
I doo beseech you, let him passe in quiet.
- 80 *K. Iohn.* Thou and thy word lie both in my command;  
What canst thou promise that I cannot breake?  
Which of these twaine is greater infamie,  
To disobey thy father or thyselfe?  
Thy word, nor no mans, may exceed his power;
- 85 Nor that same man doth neuer breake his worde,  
That keeps it to the vtmost of his power.  
The breach of faith dwels in the soules consent:  
Which if thyselfe without consent doo breake,  
Thou art not charged with the breach of faith.
- 90 Go, hang him: for thy lisence lies in mee,  
And my constraint stands the excuse for thee.

*Charles.* What, am I not a soldier in my word?  
 Then, armes, adieu, and let them fight that list!  
 Shall I not giue my girdle from my wast,  
 But with a gardion I shall be controld, 95  
 To saie, I may not giue my things awaie?  
 Vpon my soule, had Edward, prince of Wales,  
 Ingagde his word, writ downe his noble hand  
 For all your knights to passe his fathers land,  
 The roiall king, to grace his warlike sonne, 100  
 Would not alone safe conduct giue to them,  
 But with all bountie feasted them and theirs.

*K. John.* Dwelst thou on presidents? Then be it so!  
 Say, Englishman, of what degree thou art.

*Sal.* An Earle in England, though a prisoner here, 105  
 And those that knowe me, call me Salisburie.

*K. John.* Then, Salisburie, say whether thou art bound.

*Sal.* To Callice, where my liege, King Edward, is.

*K. John.* To Callice, Salisburie? Then to Callice packe,  
 And bid the king prepare a noble graue, 110  
 To put his princely sonne, blacke Edward, in.  
 And as thou trauelst westward from this place,  
 Some two leagues hence there is a loftie hill,  
 Whose top seemes toplesse, for the imbracing skie  
 Doth hide his high head in her azure bosome; 115  
 Vpon whose tall top when thy foot attaines,  
 Looke backe vpon the humble vale beneath,  
 Humble of late, but now made proud with armes,  
 And thence behold the wretched prince of Wales,  
 Hoopt with a band of yron round about. 120  
 After which sight, to Callice spurre amaine,  
 And saie, the prince was smothered, and not slaine:  
 And tell the king, this is not all his ill;

102. Elze (Notes I, 10) suggests to read *bounty'd* = *bounty had*. But see Shak. Cor. IV. 6. 35: *We should by this, to all our lamentation, If he had gone forth consul, found it so*, and Dekker, Shoemakers' Holiday III. 3. 61: *The puling girle Would willingly accepted Hammons loue*. — 107. *whither* B. — 112. *westwards* Tyr. — 116. *Unto* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del. — 117. *below* Cap. and Edd. — 120. *bond* A.

For I will greet him, ere he thinkes I will.

- 125 Awaie, be gone; the smoake but of our shot  
Will choake our foes, though bullets hit them not. [Exit.

#### SCENE VI.

*The same. A Part of the Field of Battle.*

*Alarum. Enter PRINCE EDWARD and ARTOYS.*

*Art.* How fares your grace? are you not shot, my Lord?

*Pr. Edw.* No, deare Artoys; but choakt with dust and  
And stept aside for breath and fresher aire. [smoake,

- Art.* Breath then, and too it againe! The amazed French  
5 Are quite distract with gazing on the crows;  
And, were our quiuers full of shafts againe,  
Your grace should see a glorious day of this: —  
O, for more arrowes! Lord, that's our want.

- Pr. Edw.* Courage, Artoys! a fig for feathered shafts,  
10 When feathered fowles doo bandie on our side!  
What need we fight, and sweate, and keepe a coile,  
When railing crows outscolde our aduersaries?  
Vp, vp, Artoys! The ground itselfe is armd  
With fire-containing flint; command our bowes  
15 To hurle awaie their pretie-colored Ew,  
And to it with stones: Awaie, Artoys, awaie!  
My soule doth prophesie we win the daie. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE VII.

*The same. Another Part of the Field of Battle.*

*Alarum. Enter KING IOHN.*

*K. Iohn.* Our multitudes are in themselues confounded,  
Dismayed, and distraught; swift-starting feare

126. [Exit.] om. B.

SCENE VI. Stage-dir. add. by Cap. — 4. *to't* Cap. and Edd. —  
8. *that is* Cap. and Edd. — 14. *With* om. AB and Del. — 16. *to't* Cap.  
and Edd.

SCENE VII. No scene marked in Edd. — 1. K. IOHN om. A.

Hath buzd a cold diſmaie through all our armie,  
 And euerie pettie diſaduantage promptes  
 The feare-possessed abiect soul to flie. 5  
 Myselfe, whose spirit is steele to their dull lead,  
 What with recalling of the prophesie,  
 And that our natiue stones from English armes  
 Rebell against vs, finde myselfe attainted  
 With strong surprise of weake and yeelding feare. 10

*Enter CHARLES.*

*Charles.* Fly, father, flie! the French do kill the French,  
 Some, that would stand, let driue at some that flie;  
 Our drums strike nothing but discouragement,  
 Our trumpets sound dishonor and retire;  
 The spirit of feare, that feareth nought but death, 15  
 Cowardly workes confusion on itselfe.

*Enter PHILLIP.*

*Phil.* Plucke out your eies, and see not this daies shame!  
 An arme hath beate an armie; one poore Dauid  
 Hath with a stone foild twentie stout Goliahs;  
 Some twentie naked staruelings, with small flints, 20  
 Hath driuen backe a puisant host of men,  
 Araid and fenst in all accoutrements.

*K. Iohn.* Mordieu, they quoit at vs, and kill vs up;  
 No lesse than fortie thousand wicked elders  
 Haue fortie leane slaues this daie stoned to death. 25

*Charles.* O, that I were some other countryman!  
 This daie hath set derision on the French,  
 And all the world will blurt and scorne at vs.

*K. Iohn.* What, is there no hope left?

*Phil.* No hope, but death, to burie vp our shame. 30

*K. Iohn.* Make vp once more with me; the twentieth part  
 Of those that liue, are men inow to quaille  
 The feeble handfull on the aduerse part.

11. CHARLES om. A. — 17. PHIL. om. A. — 21. *Haue* B and Edd. —  
 22. (*accomplishments*) AB and Edd. — 23. *quait* AB. — 28. *wilt* A.

*Inferred by E. H.*

- Charles.* Then charge againe: if heauen be not opposd,  
 35 We cannot loose the daie.  
*K. Iohn.* On, awaie! [Exeunt.]

## SCENE VIII.

*The same. Another Part of the Field of Battle.*

*Enter AUDLEY, wounded, and rescued by two squires.*

*Esq.* How fares my Lord?

*Aud.* Euen as a man may do,  
 That dines at such a bloudie feast as this.

*Esq.* I hope, my Lord, that is no mortall scarre.

- Aud.* No matter, if it be; the count is cast,  
 5 And, in the worst, ends but a mortall man.  
 Good friends, conuey me to the princely Edward,  
 That in the crimson brauerie of my bloud  
 I may become him with saluting him.  
 Ile smile, and tell him, that this open scarre  
 10 Doth end the haruest of his Audleys warre. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE IX.

*The same. The English Camp.*

*Enter PRINCE EDWARD, KING IOHN, CHARLES, and all,  
 with Ensignes spread.*

*Retreat sounded.*

*Pr. Edw.* Now, Iohn in France, and lately Iohn of France,  
 Thy bloudie Ensignes are my captiue colours;  
 And you, high-vanting Charles of Normandie,

35. *On, on, away* Cap., Tyr., and Del.

SCENE VIII. No new scene in Edd. (Stage-dir.) *The same* — Battle not in Edd.; *Esquires* B.

SCENE IX. Stage-dir. add. by Cap.

That once to-daie sent me a horse to flie,  
 Are now the subiects of my clemencie. 5  
 Fie, Lords, is it not a shame that English boies,  
 Whose early daies are yet not worth a beard,  
 Should in the bosome of your kingdome thus,  
 One against twentie, beate you vp together?  
*K. Iohn.* Thy fortune, not thy force, hath conquerd vs. 10  
*Pr. Edw.* An argument that heauen aides the right.

*Enter ARTOYS with PHILLIP.*

See, see, Artoys doth bring with him along  
 The late good counsell-giuer to my soule!  
 Welcome, Artoys; and welcome, Phillip, too:  
 Who now of you or I haue need to praie? 15  
 Now is the prouerbe verified in you,  
 'Too bright a morning breeds a louring daie.'

*Sound Trumpets. Enter AUDLEY.*

But say, what grym discouragement comes heere!  
 Alas, what thousand armed men of Fraunce  
 Haue writ that note of death in Audleys face? 20  
 Speake, thou that woorest death with thy careles smile,  
 And lookst so merrily vpon thy graue,  
 As if thou wert enamored on thyne end,  
 What hungry sword hath so bereaud thy face,  
 And lopt a true friend from my louing soule? 25

*Aud.* O Prince, thy sweet bemoaning speech to me  
 Is as a morneful knell to one dead-sicke.

*Pr. Edw.* Deare Audley, if my tongue ring out thy end,  
 My armes shalbe thy graue: What may I do  
 To win thy life, or to reuenge thy death? 30  
 If thou wilt drinke the blood of captyue kings,  
 Or that it were restorative, command  
 A Health of kings blood, and Ile drinke to thee;

6. *is't not* B and Edd. — 12. *bring along with him* Cap., Tyr., and Col. — 23. *thy* B and Edd., except Del. — 24. *bewreath'd* Col. — 26. *becoming* A. — 29. *thy] the* A. — 33. *Heath* AB.

- If honor may dispence for thee with death,  
 35 The neuer-dying honor of this daie  
 Share wholie, Audley, to thyselfe, and liue.  
*Aud.* Victorious Prince, — that thou art so, behold  
 A Cæsars fame in kings captiuitie —,  
 If I could hold dym death but at a bay,  
 40 Till I did see my liege thy royall father,  
 My soule should yeeld this Castle of my flesh,  
 This mangled tribute, with all willingnes,  
 To darkenes, consummation, dust, and Wormes.  
*Pr. Edw.* Cheerely, bold man! thy soule is all too proud  
 45 To yeeld her Citie for one little breach;  
 Should be diuorced from her earthly spouse  
 By the soft temper of a French man's sword?  
 Lo, to repaire thy life, I giue to thee  
 Three thousand Marks a yeere in English land.  
 50 *Aud.* I take thy gift, to pay the debts I owe:  
 These two poore Squires redeemd me from the French  
 With lusty and deer hazzard of their liues:  
 What thou hast giuen me, I giue to them;  
 And, as thou louest me, Prince, lay thy consent  
 55 To this bequeath in my last testament.  
*Pr. Edw.* Renowned Audley, liue, and haue from mee  
 This gift wise doubled to these Squires and thee:  
 But liue or die, what thou hast giuen away  
 To these and theirs shall lasting freedome stay.  
 60 Come, gentlemen, I will see my friend bestowed  
 Within an easie Litter; then weelee march  
 Proudly toward Callis, with tryumphant pace,  
 Vnto my royall father, and there bring  
 The tribut of my wars, faire Fraunce his king. [Exeunt.]

40. *loyall* AB. — 46. *She'ld* Del. — 51. *Esquires* AB. — 53. *given to me* Cap. and Edd. — 57. *Esquires* AB. — 60. *Ile see* B and Edd. — 64. *France's king* Cap. and Edd.

## ACT V.

*Picardy. The English Camp before Calais.*

*Enter* KING EDWARD, QUEEN PHILLIP, DERBY, *soldiers.*

*K. Edw.* No more, Queene Phillip, pacifie yourselfe;  
 Copland, except he can excuse his fault,  
 Shall finde displeasure written in our lookes.  
 And now vnto this proud resisting towne!  
 Souldiers, assault; I will no longer stay, 5  
 To be deluded by their false delaies;  
 Put all to sword, and make the spoyle your owne.

*Enter sixe Citizens in their shirts, bare-foote, with halters about  
 their necks.*

*All.* Mercy, King Edward! mercie, gracious Lord!

*K. Edw.* Contemptuous villaines, call ye now for truce?  
 Mine eares are stopt against your bootelesse cryes: — 10  
 Sound drums; [*allarum*] draw threatning swords!

1. *Cit.* Ah, noble Prince, take pittie on this towne,  
 And heare vs, mightie king!  
 We claime the promise that your highnes made;  
 The two daies respite is not yet expirde, 15  
 And we are come with willingnes to beare  
 What tortering death or punishment you please,  
 So that the trembling multitude be saued.

*K. Edw.* My promise? Well, I do confesse as much:  
 But I require the cheefest Citizens 20  
 And men of most account that should submit;  
 You, peradventure, are but seruite groomes,  
 Or some fellonious robbers on the Sea,  
 Whome, apprehended, law would execute,  
 Albeit seuerity lay dead in vs: 25  
 No, no, ye cannot ouerreach vs thus.

ACT V. Stage-dir. add. by Cap. — *Enter sixe Citizens &c.* before l. 1  
 in B and Edd. — 11. *drums, allarum, draw AB*, corr. by Cap. — 12 seqq. Given  
 to ALL in Edd. — 12, 13. Two ll. in modern Edd., divided at *Prince*. —  
 20. *requir'd* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del.

2. *Cit.* The Sun, dread Lord, that in the western fall  
Beholds vs now low-brought through miserie,  
Did in the Orient purple of the morne  
30 Salute our comming forth, when we were knowne;  
Or may our portion be with damned fiends.

- K. Edw.* If it be so, then let our couenant stand  
We take possession of the towne in peace:  
But, for yourselues, looke you for no remorse;  
35 But, as imperiall iustice hath decreed,  
Your bodies shalbe dragd about these wals,  
And after feele the stroake of quartering steele:  
This is your dome; — go, souldiers, see it done.

- Queen.* Ah, be more milde vnto these yeelding men!  
40 It is a glorious thing to stablish peace,  
And kings approch the nearest vnto God  
By giuing life and safety vnto men:  
As thou intendest to be king of France,  
So let her people liue to call thee king;  
45 For what the sword cuts down or fire hath spoyld,  
Is held in reputation none of ours.

- K. Edw.* Although experience teach vs this is true,  
That peacefull quietnes brings most delight,  
When most of all abuses are controld,  
50 Yet, insomuch it shalbe knowne that we  
As well can master our affections  
As conquer other by the dynt of sword,  
Phillip, preuaile; we yeeld to thy request:  
These men shall liue to boast of clemencie,  
55 And, tyrannie, strike terror to thyselfe.

2. *Cit.* Long liue your highnes! happy be your reigne!

- K. Edw.* Go, get you hence, returne vnto the towne,  
And if this kindnes hath deserud your loue,  
Learne then to reuerence Edward as your king. — [*Exeunt Citizens.*  
60 Now, might we heare of our affaires abroad,

30. Elze (Notes &c. I, 11) supposes two verses to the following effect to have dropped out: *To be the chiefest men of all our town; Of this, my sovereign lord, be well assured.* — 31. *friends* Cap. — 33. *of this town* Col. — 38. *doom* B. — 44. *her*] *thy* B. — 52. *others* Col.

We would, till glomy Winter were ore-spent,  
 Dispose our men in garrison a while.  
 But who comes heere?

*Enter COPLAND and KING DAVID.*

*Der.* Copland, my Lord, and David, King of Scots.

*K. Edw.* Is this the proud presumtious Squire of the North, 65  
 That would not yeeld his prisoner to my Queen?

*Cop.* I am, my liege, a Northern Squire indeed,  
 But neither proud nor insolent, I trust.

*K. Edw.* What moude thee then, to be so obstinate  
 To contradict our royall Queenes desire? 70

*Cop.* No wilfull disobedience, mightie Lord,  
 But my desert and publike law of armes:  
 I tooke the king myselfe in single fight,  
 And, like a souldier, would be loath to loose  
 The least preheminence that I had won. 75

And Copland straight vpon your highnes charge  
 Is come to Fraunce, and, with a lowly minde,  
 Doth vale the bonnet of his victory:  
 Receiue, dread Lord, the custome of my fraught,  
 The wealthie tribute of my laboring hands, 80  
 Which should long since haue been surrendred vp,  
 Had but your gracious selfe bin there in place.

*Queen.* But, Copland, thou didst scorne the kings command,  
 Neglecting our commission in his name.

*Cop.* His name I reuerence, but his person more; 85  
 His name shall keepe me in allegiance still,  
 But to his person I will bend my knee.

*K. Edw.* I praie thee, Phillip, let displeasure passe;  
 This man doth please mee, and I like his words:  
 For what is he that will attempt great deeds, 90  
 And loose the glory that ensues the same?  
 All riuers haue recourse vnto the Sea,  
 And Coplands faith relation to his king.

62, 63. One line in B. — 64. *Sots* B. — 65. *Esquire* AB. — 67. *Northen* A, *Northren* B; *Esquire* AB. — 69. K. EDW. om. B. — 72. *of*] at A. — 78. *vaille* B. — 90. *attmpt* A; *high* Cap. and Edd.

Kneele therefore downe: now rise, King Edwards knight;  
 95 And, to maintayne thy state, I freely giue  
 Fieue hundred marks a yeere to thee and thine.

*Enter SALISBURY.*

Welcome, Lord Salisbury: what news from Brittain?

*Sal.* This, mightie king: the Country we haue won,  
 And Iohn de Mountfort, regent of that place,  
 100 Presents your highnes with this Coronet,  
 Protesting true alleageaunce to your Grace.

*K. Edw.* We thanke thee for thy seruice, valiant Earle;  
 Challenge our fauour, for we owe it thee.

*Sal.* But now, my Lord, as this is ioyful newes,  
 105 So must my voice be tragicall againe,  
 And I must sing of dolefull accidents.

*K. Edw.* What, haue our men the ouerthrow at Poitiers?  
 Or is our sonne beset with too much odds?

*Sal.* He was, my Lord: and as my worthlesse selfe  
 110 With fortie other seruiceable knights,  
 Vnder safe conduct of the Dolphins seale,  
 Did trauaile that way, finding him distrest,  
 A troupe of Launces met vs on the way,  
 Surprisd, and brought vs prisoners to the king,  
 115 Who, proud of this, and eager of reuenge,  
 Commanded straight to cut off all our heads:  
 And surely we had died, but that the Duke,  
 More full of honor then his angry syre,  
 Procurd our quicke deliuerance from thence;  
 120 But, ere we went, 'Salute your king', quoth hee,  
 'Bid him prouide a funerall for his sonne,  
 To day our sword shall cut his thred of life;  
 And, sooner then he thinkes, wee be with him,  
 To quittance those displeasures he hath done.'  
 125 This said, we past, not daring to reply;  
 Our harts were dead, our lookes diffusd and wan.  
 Wandring at last we clymd vnto a hill,

99. *Charles* AB, corr. by Cap. — 108. *our*] *my* Cap. and Edd. —

114. *prisoner* Col. — 117. *had we* Col.

From whence, although our grieffe were much before,  
 Yet now to see the occasion with our eies  
 Did thrice so much increase our heauines. 130  
 For there, my Lord, oh, there we did descry  
 Downe in a vallie how both armies laie:  
 The French had cast their trenches like a ring;  
 And euery Barricados open front  
 Was thicke imboast with brasen ordynaunce; 135  
 Heere stood a battaile of ten thousand horse,  
 There twice as many pikes in quadrant wise,  
 Here Crosbowes, arm'd with deadly - wounding darts:  
 And in the midst, like to a slender poynt  
 Within the compasse of the horison, 140  
 As twere a rising bubble in the sea,  
 A Hasle-wand amidst a wood of Pynes,  
 Or as a beare fast chaine vnto a stake,  
 Stood famous Edward, still expecting when  
 Those doggs of Fraunce would fasten on his flesh. 145  
 Anon the death-procuring knell begins:  
 Off goe the Cannons, that, with trembling noyse,  
 Did shake the very Mountayne where they stood;  
 Then sound the Trumpets clangor in the aire,  
 The battailes ioyne: and, when we could no more 150  
 Discerne the difference twixt the friend and fo,  
 So intricate the darke confusion was,  
 Away we turnd our watrie eies with sighs,  
 As blacke as pouder fuming into smoke.  
 And thus, I feare, vnhappy haue I told 155  
 The most vntimely tale of Edwards fall.

*Queen.* Ah me! is this my welcome into Fraunce?  
 Is this the comfort that I lookt to haue,  
 When I should meete with my belooued sonne?  
 Sweete Ned, I would, thy mother in the sea 160  
 Had been preuented of this mortall grieffe!

*K. Edw.* Content thee, Phillip; tis not teares will serue,  
 To call him backe, if he be taken hence:

138. *Crosbowes and deadly* AB, corr. by Cap.; *armed, deadly* Col. —

148. *we stood* prop. by Cap. — 149. *clangors* Cap. and Edd.

- Comfort thy selfe, as I do, gentle Queene,  
 165 With hope of sharpe, vnheard-of, dyre reuenge. —  
 He bids me to prouide his funerall,  
 And so I will; but all the Peeres in Fraunce  
 Shall mourners be, and weepe out bloody teares,  
 Vntill their emptie vaines be drie and sere:  
 170 The pillars of his hearse shall be their bones;  
 The mould that couers him, their Cities ashes;  
 His knell, the groning cryes of dying men;  
 And, in the stead of tapers on his tombe,  
 An hundred fiftie towers shall burning blaze,  
 175 While we bewaile our valiant sonnes decease.

*After a flourish, sounded within, enter an Herald.*

- Her.* Reioyce, my Lord; ascend the imperial throne!  
 The mightie and redoubted prince of Wales,  
 Great seruitor to bloudie Mars in armes,  
 The Frenchmans terror, and his countries fame,  
 180 Triumphant rideth like a Romane peere,  
 And, lowly at his stirop, comes afoot  
 King Iohn of France, together with his sonne,  
 In captiue bonds; whose diadem he brings  
 To crowne thee with, and to proclaime thee king.  
 185 *K. Edw.* Away with mourning, Phillip, wipe thine eies; —  
 Sound, Trumpets, welcome in Plantaginet!

*Enter PRINCE EDWARD, KING IOHN, PHILLIP, AUDLEY, ARTOYS.*

- K. Edw.* As things, long lost, when they are found again,  
 So doth my sonne reioyce his fathers heart,  
 For whom euen now my soule was much perplex.  
 190 *Queen.* Be this a token to expresse my ioy, [*Kisse him.*  
 For inward passions will not let me speake.  
*Pr. Edw.* My gracious father, here receiue the gift,  
 [*Presenting him with K. Iohn's crown.*

170. *their*] *his* AB and Edd., except Del. — 171. *Citie* AB, Cap. and Tyr., *city's* Col., *cities'* Del. — 174. *fiftie*] *lofty* Col. — 192. [*Presenting him* &c.] add. by Del.

This wreath of conquest and reward of warre,  
 Got with as mickle perill of our liues,  
 As ere was thing of price before this daie; 195  
 Install your highnes in your proper right:  
 And, herewithall, I render to your hands  
 These prisoners, chiefe occasion of our strife.

*K. Edw.* So, Iohn of France, I see you keepe your word;  
 You promist to be sooner with our selfe 200  
 Then we did thinke for, and tis so indeed:  
 But, had you done at first as now you do,  
 How many ciuill townes had stooode vntoucht,  
 That now are turnd to ragged heaps of stones!  
 How many peoples liues mightst thou haue saud, 205  
 That are vntimely sunke into their graues!

*K. Iohn.* Edward, recount not things irreuocable;  
 Tell me what ransome thou requirdest to haue.

*K. Edw.* Thy ransome, Iohn, hereafter shall be known:  
 But first to England thou must crosse the seas, 210  
 To see what intertainment it affords;  
 Howere it fals, it cannot be so bad,  
 As ours hath bin since we ariude in France.

*K. Iohn.* Accursed man! of this I was fortolde,  
 But did misconster what the prophet told. 215

*Pr. Edw.* Now, father, this petition Edward makes  
 To thee, whose grace hath bin his strongest shield,  
 That, as thy pleasure chose me for the man  
 To be the instrument to shew thy power,  
 So thou wilt grant that many princes more, 220  
 Bred and brought vp within that little Isle,  
 May still be famous for lyke victories!  
 And, for my part, the bloudie scars I beare,  
 The wearie nights that I haue watcht in field,  
 The dangerous conflicts I haue often had, 225  
 The fearefull menaces, were proffered me,  
 The heate and cold and what else might displease,  
 I wish were now redoubled twentiefold;  
 So that hereafter ages, when they reade

- 230 The painfull traffike of my tender youth,  
 Might thereby be inflamd with such resolute,  
 As not the territories of France alone,  
 But likewise Spain, Turkie, and what countries els  
 That iustly would prouoke faire Englands ire,  
 235 Might, at their presence, tremble and retire.

- K. Edw.* Here, English Lordes, we do proclaime a rest,  
 An interceasing of our painfull armes:  
 Sheath vp your swords, refresh your weary lims,  
 Peruse your spoiles; and, after we haue breathd  
 240 A daie or two within this hauen-towne,  
 God willing, then for England wee be shipt;  
 Where, in a happie houre, I trust, we shall  
 Arriue, three kings, two princes, and a queene.

[*Flourish. Exeunt omnes.*]

232. *territory* Cap. prop. — 237. *An*] *And* Del.; *intercession* A. —  
 243. *Flourish. Exeunt omnes*, add. by Del.

THE END.

## NOTES.

### ACT I

1, 12. Grammar seems to require *daughter*; cp. *thou art all my child*, i. e. my only child, All's III. 2. 71.

✓ 1, 36. *lyneal*, directly descending, hereditary, as often in Shakespeare.

1, 41. Read *th' true*. Capell was doubtless induced by the metre to strike out *And* (l. 41); the construction, however, is: *stryuing to rebate and [to] place . . .*, the participle *stryuing* referring to *our* (l. 39): *when may we show our duty more than in striving &c.* — As to *place*, establish in an office, cp. *this yellow slave will place thieves and give them title* Tim. IV. 3. 35; *if I can place thee, I will* Per. IV. 6. 204.

✓ 1, 46. *rakt*, i. e. *rackt*, tormented; cp. *racked with deep despair* Milton (quoted by Webster).

✓ 1, 76. *lame*, cp. *lame of sense* Oth. I. 3. 63, *most lame and impotent conclusion* ib. II. 1. 162.

1, 85. Cp. *we'll pull his plumes* 1 H. VI., III. 3. 7, *Ajax employed plucks down Achilles' plumes* Troil. I. 3. 386.

1, 90. Cp. *until it had returned These terms of treason doubled down his throat* Rich. II., I. 1. 57.

✓ 1, 98. *Lyon's case*, the lion's skin. This passage corroborates Wint. IV. 4. 844: *though my case be a pitiful one, I hope I shall not be flayed out of it*. Cp., besides, *The man that once did sell the lion's skin While the beast lived, was killed with hunting him*. H. V., IV. 3. 93.

✓ 1, 134. *plant*, to install, to invest. Cp. *Anointed, crowned, planted many years* Rich. II., IV. 127; *to plant unrightful kings* ib. V. 1. 63.

✓ 1, 159 *vre*, i. e. *inure* (not Shak.) *The French soldiers have from their youth been practised and ured in feats of arms*. Sir Th. More (quoted by Webster).

2, 7. *scornefull*, in a passive sense, as Lucr. 520 *So thy surviving husband shall remain The scornful mark of every open eye*.

✓ 2, 12. *skipping*, wanton. Cp. *so skipping a dialogue* Tw. I. 5. 214, *thy skipping spirit* Merch. II. 2. 196.

✓ 2, 23. *to make fair weather*, to conciliate oneself, Ado I. 3. 25, K. John V. 1. 21, 2 H VI., V. 1. 30.

✓ 2, 29. *Gymould*, consisting of links or rings: *And in their pale dull mouths the gimmal'd* (Old Edd. *Jymold*) *bit Lies foul with chewed grass* H. V., IV. 2. 49.

✓ 2, 33. *whinyard*, a sword or hanger. Nares quotes, besides our passage, The Wits, O. Pl. VIII. 412 *This deboshed whinyard I will reclaim to comely bow and arrow.*

2, 75, 76. *Scot . . . they.* Cp. Troil. V. 3. 40—42 *When many times the captive Grecian falls, Even in the fan and wind of your fair sword, You bid them rise and live.*

2, 81. *O Sommers day*, o lucky hit. Cp. the common phrase *as one shall see in a summer's day*, Mids. I. 2. 89, H. V., III. 6. 67, ib. IV. 8. 23.

2, 96. Constr.: *As a May-blossom [is sullied] with pernicious winds.*

2, 104 seq. The sense is: to take piercing majesty from my eyes and to make them gaze on her with doting admiration.

2, 125. *no near*, i. e. no nearer. The old form of the comparative is often to be met with in Shakespeare.

2, 131. Cp. *Light seeking light doth light of light beguile* L. L. L., I. 1. 77, *by light we lose light* ib. V. 2. 376.

✓ 2, 153. *pide perfumes*, cp. *daisies pied* L. L. L., V. 2. 904. — *cost*, ornament, pomp.

## ACT II.

1, 2. *to drinke.* The infinitive with *to* is often put in the second of two clauses (*and to*) after verbs which, according to modern grammar, would reject *to*. Cp. *Makes both my body pine, and soul to languish* Per. I. 2. 31, *And let them all encircle him about, And, fairy-like, to pinch the unclean knight* M. Wiv. IV. 4. 56. (Abbott, s. 250). On the other hand, cp. *still losing when I saw myself to win* Sonn. 119, 4; *To see great Hercules whipping a gig, And profound Solomon to tune* (some Edd. *tuning*) *a jig, And Nestor play at push-pin with the boys* L. L. L., IV. 3. 167—9.

✓ 1, 4. The verb belonging to *rack*, floating vapour, cloud, is only once used by Shakespeare in an intransitive sense, *the racking clouds*, i. e. the fleeting clouds 3 H VI., II. 1. 27.

1, 29. It seems doubtful whether the poet intended a contrast between *spake* and *spoke*, both forms being very common in Elizabethan writers. Perhaps *spoke* is a mere misprint for *spake* (B).

1, 57. *queen of queens* L. L. L., IV. 3. 41; H. VIII., II. 4. 141; III. 2. 95. The reading of AB *qucen* for *queens* is a misprint, *s* having dropped out before *s* in *shall*.

✓ 1, 68. *ready grone*. Cp. K. John II. 211 *ready mounted are they* (i. e. *the cannons*); Webster quotes: *we ourselves will go ready armed before the children of Isaac* Num. XXXII, 17. In both these instances, it is true, *ready* (adv.) is added to a participle, not to an infinitive.

1, 71. *Tarters*. As in Marlowe's Tamburlaine the word always appears in the form *Tarter*, we have thought *Torter* to be a misprint for *Tarter*.

✓ 1, 72. *flynt-heart*, i. e. flint-hearted.

✓ 1, 107. *sommer-leaping*. to leap, to be desirous, to rejoice; cp. below II. 2. 13 *What, doth his highnes leap to heare these news*. As to the composition of the word, cp. *the summer-swelling flower*, i. e. growing up in summer, Gent. II. 4. 162.

✓ 1, 122. *voluntarie*, spontaneous; cp. *voluntary dotage of some mistress* Oth. IV. 1. 27.

1, 127. Cp. *the hollow of thine ear* Rom. III. 5. 3.

1, 143 seqq. Cp. Rom. II. 2. 4:

*Arise, fair sun, and kill the envious moon,*

*Who is already sick and pale with grief*

*That thou, her maid, art far more fair than she.*

1, 179—181. These lines are not in conformity either with) ? E. St  
the preceding or the following lines.

1, 184. *treasurer* (A). Painter, p. 186<sup>a</sup>: *to you that like a faithfull keeper and only treasurer of my heart, you may by some shining blame of pittle bring &c. treasure* was apparently introduced by B only for the sake of metre.

1, 186. We have not thought it necessary to alter *flankars* (AB), because the form *flankard*, though in another signification, also occurs.

✓ 1, 187. *discipline*, military skill, as often in Shak.

1, 235. Cp. *men indued with intellectual sense and souls*. Err. II. 1. 22.

1, 255 seqq. Cp. Meas. II. 4. 43.

*It were as good*

*To pardon him, that hath from nature stolen*

*A man already made, as to remit*

*Their saucy sweetness, that do coin Heaven's image*

*In stamps that are forbid.*

1, 281. The reading *bewties* (twice) seems to be corroborated by passages as: *one that composed your beauties* Mids. I. 1. 48, *I might in virtues, beauties . . . exceed account* Merch. III. 2. 158.

1, 284. Cp. *thy spiders that suck up thy venom*. Rich. II., III. 2. 14.

1, 296. Constr. *If I may . . . and that (= if) my old endeuer &c.* As to the use of *that* cp. Sonn. 39, 13 *Were it not thy sour leisure gave sweet leave To entertain the time . . . And that thou teachest how to make one twain*.

1, 353. It would be better not to keep the oath rendered by my right hand (*prophane the Idoll*) than to have my hand cut off (*than confound it*).

1, 361. She would indeed do a favour to the love of the king, but would not bear true love to her husband.

1, 392. Cp. 2 H. VI., V. 1. 99 seqq:

*these brows of mine,  
Whose smile and frown, like to Achilles' spear,  
Is able with the change to kill and cure.*

(‘alluding to Telephus cured by the dust scraped from Achilles’ spear, by which he had been wounded.’ Al. Schmidt.).

1, 396. Cp. *And he (the lion) from forage will incline to play*. L. L. L., IV. 1. 93.

✓ 1, 402. Though *vastures* may be a misprint for *vastness* (Collier), yet it may be an English form like *verdure*, *ordure*.

1, 404. *thy misdeeds*. Though the reading of the old editions *their misdeeds* is not devoid of sense, we have adopted Capell’s conjecture on account of l. 398, which contains the same idea.

✓ 1, 412. We are unable to quote another passage in which *besiege* is used as a noun.

1, 414. Pron. *inj’rèd*. We think it impossible that *inuièrd* should be an abbreviation from *envièrned*, which, besides, would be much too weak an expression to be used here by the Countess. *inwired*, prop. by Delius, is not to be found in any dictionary, and can therefore not be introduced into the text.

1, 438. Cp. Haml. II. 2. 181: *For if the sun breeds magots in a dead dog, being a good kissing carrion . . .*

✓ 1, 451. The same line occurs Shak. Sonn. 94, 14. See Introduction, p. xxx.

2, 10. The spelling *leiuelenant* is not to be altered, as it proves the pronunciation of the word.

✓ 2, 13. *to leap*, to be desirous; cp. *our master will leap to be his friend* Ant. III. 13. 51 and Per. V. 3. 45 *my heart leaps to be gone into my mother’s bosom*.

2, 42—43. These lines are possibly to be printed as one line (AB) and to be read: *She's as | imp'ra | for o | ver me | and I | to her* Cp. supra l. 5, and II. I. 417.

2, 56. *him* i. e. him that beats the drum.

2, 64. The same quibble perhaps Gentl. V. 4. 57: *I'll woo you like a soldier, at arms' end.* ~

2, 83. 'which cannot use poverty as a pretext.'

✓ 2, 117. *varieties*, the reading of the old editions, is quite an incongruous formation and probably only a misprint for *varieties*, which in our passage agrees very well with the preceding *register*. Shakespeare uses *variety* in a similar sense when speaking of Cleopatra, Ant. II. 2. 240: *Age cannot wither her, nor custom stale Her infinite variety.*

✓ 2, 118. *Letherne Adam*. Elze, Notes II, p. 3, thinks *letherne* to be O. E. *leper, liper, leperand* = *nequam, malus*, vile, hateful. But as *lether* in this signification is not to be met with in Elizabethan English, and as, besides, Adam, in our context at least, can hardly be called *nequam, malus*, we incline to adopt Mr. Furnivall's explanation (Transactions of the New Shakspeare Society Dec. 9, 1881, p. 10; Academy, July 22, 1882) who supposes the expression to be equivalent to 'Adam clad in skins.' This explanation is supported by Genesis III. 21: '*Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skin and clothed them*', and particularly by Shak. Err. IV. 3. 13 *the picture of old Adam* ('meaning the bailiff because the buff he wore resembled the native buff of Adam' Al. Schmidt, s. v.)

✓ 2, 124. *objection*, suit, request.

2, 136. 'I render my discontent subject to my submission, to my resignation.' As to *content*, cp. Rich. II., V. 2. 38 *To whose high will we bound our calm contents.*

2, 137. The sense of the somewhat irregular construction is: 'I will compel myself willingly to do what I would not like to do.'

✓ 2, 143. There is no reason to read with Elze *my thrice loved lord*, the present participle (gerund) often having the meaning of a passive participle. See Abbott, s. 372, and cp. Ant. III. 13. 77: *his all-obeying breath*, i. e. obeyed by all, Lucr. 993: *his unrecalling crime*. *loving* = beloved, kind, affectionate, friendly, very often occurs in Shakespeare: *my loving subjects* K. John II. 203, *my friends and loving countrymen* 1 H VI., III. 1. 137, *most loving liege* Rich. II., I. 1. 21. See Al. Schmidt, s. v. *unrecalling* and *love*.

✓ 2, 168. *packing*, deceitful. Cp. *here's packing to deceive us all* Shr. V. I. 121.

2, 169, 170. As a quibble is doubtless intended between *Resolute* and *dissolude*, we have adopted Capell's conjecture (l. 170), and have, besides, introduced the same word in l. 169. The error

is easily to be accounted for, as the printer or corrector tried to give the first line the regular number of syllables, and consequently wrote *Resolute* also in l. 170.

2, 197. Commonly taken for an allusion to Shakespeare's *Lucrece* (p. in 1594). The story of *Lucrece* was also in Painter's *Palace of Pleasure*, and there seems to have existed a drama about the same subject.

### ACT III.

1, 19 seqq. These lines are addressed to Charles; Collier's proposal to read *your* for *his* l. 20 is therefore unnecessary.

✓ 1, 27. *swill*, to drink greedily; cp. Rich. III., V. 2. 9 *The boar that swills your warm blood like wash.*

✓ 1, 30. *stall*, install, invest; cp. Rich. III., I. 3. 206 *decked in thy rights as thou art stalled in mine.*

1, 97. *on the lower hand*; cp. *on the upper hand* R. III., IV. 4. 37.

✓ 1, 126. *to buckle*, to join in close fight, as often in Shak.

✓ 1, 176. *lay about*, to fall to work with might and main, to do one's best, especially in fighting. Troil. I. 2. 58: *he'll lay about him to-day.*

✓ 2, 12. *envy*, malice, ill-will, as often in Shakespeare, f. i. *you turn the good we offer into envy* H. VIII., III. 1. 113.

✓ 3, 1. As we don't know any other instance in which *guide* is = guiding, guidance, we have thought it best to adopt Cap.'s proposal.

3, 6. In Holinshed's Chronicle the French guide is called *Gobin de Grace*.

3, 20. We have printed the names as given by Holinshed.

✓ 3, 77. *to foile my fame*. Cp. *And must not foil the precious note of it* (the crown) *with a base slave* Cymb. II. 3. 126 (M. Edd. *soil*).

✓ 3, 81. Elze (Notes I, 5) proposes to read *line* f. *line*, but he gives no instance for the use of *line* = paint. As to *line*, cp. As III. 2. 97 *all the pictures fairest lined are but black to Rosalind.*

3, 113. *that* supplies the place of *Before* (l. 112) and *turne* is the subjunctive mood. The construction was not understood and consequently altered by B.

✓ 3, 155. *wantonness* (= wanton) occurs again III. 5. 102 (not Shak.).

✓ 3, 161. *resty-stiffe*, stiff with too much rest, cp. Cymb. III. 6. 34: *when resty sloth finds the down pillow hard.*

✓ 3, 175. *tipe*, distinguishing mark, sign, badge; H. VIII., I. 3. 31: *tall stockings, short blistered breeches, and those types of travel.*

✓ 3, 190. *laurel*, adjectively used also by Shakespeare, *laurel victory* Ant. I. 3. 100.

✓ 3, 214. *to patronage* twice in Shakespeare 1 H. VI., III. 1. 48 and III. 4. 32.

✕ 5, 12. *fell* = fallen, Tit. II. 4. 50, Tim. IV. 3. 265, Lear IV. 6. 54.

5, 36. *those* = such.

✓ 5, 37. *breaketh out*, forces his way. Cp. K. John V. 6. 24: *broke out to acquaint you with this evil*. The construction of l. 38, in Capell's reading, is quite unintelligible.

✓ 5, 79. *often*, adjectively used; cp. *my often rumination* As IV. 1. 19.

✓ 5, 109. *upshot*, final issue, conclusion Tw. IV. 2. 76: *I cannot pursue this sport to the upshot*.

#### ACT IV.

✓ 1, 16. *Yet* = now, by this time (Germ. jetzt); cp. H. V., III. 3. 1: *How yet resolves the governor of the town*.

2, 34. Cp. 1 H. IV., V. 4. 133: *full bravely hast thou fleshed thy maiden sword*, 1 H. VI., IV. 7. 36: *did flesh his puny sword in Frenchmen's blood*.

3, 8. As Shakespeare uses much more frequently *to make (take) advantage of* than *to take advantage on*, it seems unnecessary to alter with Capell and Delius *of* into *on*.

✓ 4, 5. *moulths*, i. e. moths.

4, 44, 45. Cp. *So Beauty blemished once (is) for ever lost* P. P. 13. See Abbott, s. 403.

4, 75. *in our Bryttish earth*, in Britanny (?). *in your Brittlsh earth*, as proposed in Collier, seems to be too gross a hyperbole.

✓ 4, 83. *burgonet*, close fitting helmet, used by Shakespeare only 2. H. VI., V. 1. 200, 204, 208; Ant. I. 5. 24.

4, 124. *silver wings*. "Perhaps the writer was thinking of the Homeric *ἄργεα πτερόεντα*. Silver refers to the sweetness of Audley's eloquence. Milk-white messengers are his grey locks which have brought with them experience." W. G. S. (i. e. W. G. Stone, Leopold-Shakspeare, Introd., p. C.).

4, 134. 'Whichsoever we may choose, either life or death, the one holds the other in chase: for life hunts after death, and death prosecutes life.'

4, 140 seqq. Cp. Jul. Cæsar II. 2. 32:

*Cowards die many times before their deaths,  
The valiant never taste of death but once.  
Of all the wonders that I yet have heard,  
It seems to me most strange that men should fear,*

*Seeing that death, a necessary end,  
Will come when it will come.*

✓ 7, 22. As *accomplements* is not given in the dictionaries, we have preferred to read *accountrements*.

✓ 7, 24. *elders*, unusually = old soldiers.

✓ 8, 7. *brauery*, splendor, finery; cp. *with scarp and fans and double change of bravery* Shr. IV. 3. 57.

9, 5. *Are*. The construction is not quite exact, but the sense is clear.

9, 26. The reading of *A becoming* might perhaps quite as well have been retained.

9, 32. *that* = if; cp. note ad II. 1. 296.

9, 37, 38. The captivity of the king will procure thee a Cæsar's fame.

#### ACT V.

39. Cp. Shak. Merch. IV. 1. 192:

*But mercy is above this sceptred sway;  
It is enthroned in the hearts of Kings,  
It is an attribute to God himself;  
And earthly power doth then show likest God's,  
When mercy seasons justice.*

✓ 124. *to quittance* occurs in Shakespeare only 1 H. VI., II. 1. 14.

154. Cp. *black despair* 2 H. VI., III. 3. 23, R. III., II. 2. 36., and *saw sighs reek from you* L. L. L., IV. 3. 140, *he furnaces the thick sighs from him* Cymb. I. 6. 67, *love is a smoke raised with the fume of sighs* Rom. I. 1. 196.



# PSEUDO-SHAKESPEARIAN PLAYS.

EDITED

BY

KARL WARNKE, PH. D.

AND

LUDWIG PROESCHOLDT, PH. D.

IV. THE BIRTH OF MERLIN

---

HALLE:  
MAX NIEMEYER.  
1887.

Rowley -  
=

# THE BIRTH OF MERLIN.

*B. m.*  
*index*

REVISED AND EDITED

WITH INTRODUCTION AND NOTES

*Hans Fernow, rev. in E. M. xiii. 95* — *tl*

BY

KARL WARNKE, PH. D.

AND

LUDWIG PROESCHOLDT, PH. D.

72

---

HALLE:

MAX NIEMEYER.

1887.

β

✓

A.257858

# INTRODUCTION.



IN 1662 Kirkman the bookseller published a drama with the title '*The Birth of Merlin: Or, the Childe hath found his Father: As it hath been several times Acted with great applause. Written by William Shakespear, and William Rowley. Placere cupio. London: Printed by Tho: Johnson for Francis Kirkman, and Henry Marsh, and are to be sold at the Princes Arms in Chancery Lane. 1662.*' [London, British Museum, C. 34. l. 7]. As the play seems not to have been mentioned before, and as Kirkman gives us no notice of the copy from which he had it printed, we neither know when *The Birth of Merlin* was first performed, nor on what authority the publisher attributed it to Shakespeare and Rowley. In all appearance Kirkman simply reprinted the play from an old edition. Grammar and versification bear distinctly the stamp of the age of Queen Elizabeth or King James I. Besides, if Kirkman had chosen to alter the text, he would certainly not have printed the whole of the play as prose, but would have tried to re-establish the verse-lines, in which the play originally must have been written.

The play was edited again by H. Tyrrell (*The Doubtful Plays of Shakespeare*, London, 1851, pp. 411—443), and, somewhat later, quite independently of Tyrrell's edition, by Delius (*Pseudo-shakspearesche Dramen*, vol. II., Elberfeld, 1856).<sup>1)</sup> Both editors took pains to correct the text which, though not so corrupt as that of many other contemporary plays, yet exhibits a certain number of passages to which the critic's knife must be applied. Both editors, however, overshot their mark by modernizing the grammar of the play and by introducing into it a great many alterations which for the most part are quite uncalled for. Tyrrell, besides, gives no various readings at all; the list of various readings

---

<sup>1)</sup> Delius' edition was without any corrections or additions reprinted by Max Moltke, Tauchnitz-edition, vol. 1041, p. 279—352.

exhibited by Delius, is far from being exhaustive. Thus, we hope, a new edition of the interesting play will be welcomed by all the friends of Elizabethan literature.

Professor Elze has devoted some of his Notes on Elizabethan Dramatists (Halle, 1880—1886) to our play, viz. vol. I., No. II—VI, and vol. II., No. CL. These emendations as well as the corrections and alterations of the precedent editors have been carefully pointed out by us in the footnotes of our edition.

The title-page of *The Birth of Merlin* bears the names of Shakespeare and Rowley. All that is known about the life of W. Rowley, is summed up by A. W. Ward, *History of English Dramatic Literature*, vol. II., p. 134 seq. 'William Rowley (who has been confounded not only with his namesake Samuel, but with another Rowley of the name of Ralph) is mentioned as an actor of the Duke of York's company in the year 1610, but already in 1607 he had produced, together with Day and Wilkins, a play *The Travailes of the Three English Brothers* (the brothers Shirley)<sup>1</sup>). In 1613 he was a leading member in the same (now the Prince of Wales') company; in 1637 he married; and nothing further is known of his life (except that he acted in one of his plays and in a mask by Middleton). A tradition handed down by Langbaine records that he was 'beloved by those great men; Skakespeare, Fletcher, and Jonson.' W. Rowley's extant plays are *A New Wonder, A Woman Never Vext* (a comedy, pr. 1632), *All's Lost by Lust* (a tragedy, pr. 1633), *A Match at Midnight* (a comedy, pr. 1633), *A Shoemaker a Gentleman* (a comedy, pr. 1638). Besides Rowley wrote together with Massinger *The Parliament of Love* (licensed for the stage 1624); together with Fletcher *The Maid in the Mill* (first acted 1623), also, according to Dyce, *The Queen of Corinth* (produced between 1616 and 1619) and *The Bloody Brother* (written after 1624); together with Middleton *A Fair Quarrel* (pr. 1617), *The World tossed at Tennis* (pr. 1620), *The Changeling* (acted 1623), *The Spanish Gipsy* (pr. 1653); together with Dekker and Ford *The Witch of Edmonton* (pr. 1658); together with Web-

---

<sup>1</sup>) Considering the dates of Rowley's other compositions, it must be doubtful whether *The Old Law*, the title-page of which bears the names of Rowley, Middleton, and Massinger, was in fact composed as early as 1599, as Steevens, on the evidence of a passage in the play, feels inclined to suppose.

ster *A Cure for a Cuckold* (pr. 1661, by Kirkman), and *The Thracian Wonder* (pr. 1661, by Kirkman)<sup>1</sup>). As after all this W. Rowley was a favorite and well-known author of the age, it may well be that Kirkman, who attributed several plays to him, is right to say that he was also the author of *The Birth of Merlin*. But whether Shakespeare had a hand in the composition of this play, is an assertion which seems far less plausible.

Kirkman's intimation has, as far as we see, only been adopted by Tieck; all other critics, particularly Ulrici (Shakespeare's *Dramatische Kunst* vol. III., p. 109 seq.) and A. W. Ward (l. c., vol. I., p. 468 seq.) are of opinion that Shakespeare cannot be supposed to have had any share in our play. *The Birth of Merlin* was the first play read and copied by Tieck, when he first came to London in 1817. Twelve years afterwards he made the drama, together with other plays, known to his own countrymen by publishing a translation of it in his *Shakespeare's Vorschule*, Leipzig, 1829, vol. II., p. 219—366<sup>2</sup>). In the introductory pages preceding his translation, Tieck gives an analysis of the play, in which he sets forth all that may be said in favour of it. And indeed, it must be allowed that the author of the play, whoever he may have been, had some of the qualities requisite to a dramatic poet. The plot is on the whole well conducted; the scenes are full of action and dramatic life; the characters, particularly Prince Uter and Jane the Mother of Merlin, are somewhat skilfully shadowed forth. All those qualities, however, may be freely allowed to a great number of anonymous plays of the age, without entitling us to ascribe them to Shakespeare. And we are, it will seem, the less permitted to attribute even part of *The Birth of Merlin* to England's great poet, as the play shows deficiencies not to be met with in Shakespeare's genuine works.

In *The Birth of Merlin*, as in many other plays of the period, two stories form the groundwork on which the action of the drama is raised. But far from being skilfully intertwined with each other and melted into one, these two plots are not even externally connected with each other; the tragical fate of King Aurelius and

<sup>1</sup>) Cp. Delius, l. c., p. VI. seq.

<sup>2</sup>) The play was again translated into German by H. Döring (Gotha, 1833; 2nd ed. 1840), and by E. Ortlepp, *Nachträge zu Shakespeare*, vol. I., pp. 177—290.

the accession of his brother Uter Pendragon have no relation whatever to the episode in which the two daughters of the Earl of Chester play the principal part. It is hardly to be supposed that Shakespeare, who in his own works most harmoniously blended two or more stories into one, should not have been aware of the chasm gaping between the two plots of the play.

Likewise the characters in *The Birth of Merlin* would have taken quite a different turn, if touched up by Shakespeare's pen. At the time at which apparently our play was written, Shakespeare was composing his most consummate works, such as *Lear*, *Macbeth*, and *Coriolanus*. At that epoch he would certainly not have been contented with such poor and shallow characters as the Hermit and Earl Edol are in our play. Nor would he, as A. W. Ward rightly points out, have omitted the opportunity of revealing more psychological depth in the conflict of the Prince between duty and passion. And, last, not least, Shakespeare would certainly have succeeded in forming out of the renowned Merlin a figure more dramatic and more interesting than the Merlin of our play. Though it is true that the character of the marvellous boy-prophet is not destitute of a certain genuine freshness and briskness, yet the author of the play seems to have made use of him for no higher purpose than the gratification of the groundlings. Even admitting that the scenes grouped around Merlin, his hell-born father, and the Clown are due to Rowley's pen, it is quite improbable that in a play, written, though only in part, by Shakespeare, the character from which the whole play is named, should take so very little part in the action of it, as Merlin does. All that Merlin performs is to foretell their fate to the King, to Vortiger, and the Prince. And he foretells it invariably in the same manner, always conjuring up more or less frightful apparitions and shows of demons, dragons, and kings. 'The design of our dramatist', to use the words of A. W. Ward, 'seems to have fallen short of the poetic conception of a poetic theme, while his execution, though vigorous, is so coarse as to give a burlesque air to much of his drama. Shakspeare at least would never have taken part in a work which after so rude and coarse a fashion ventured on the same kind of ground as that familiar to his own airy step' (l. c., vol. I., p. 469).

In most of the so-called Pseudo-Shakespearean Plays, particularly in *The Two Noble Kinsmen* and *King Edward III.*, the editors

and commentators have been able to point out a number of passages and phrases which remind the reader of Shakespeare. Nothing of the kind is to be found in *The Birth of Merlin*. Throughout the play the language is either rough and homebred, or stilted and artificial; the verse, too, is uneven and far from showing Shakespeare's happy hand. Surely, no unbiassed reader will, in the absence of all external arguments, be disposed only from internal evidence to ascribe the play to Shakespeare. And indeed, Tieck himself seems to have been of opinion that the play, as it is, is not quite worthy of Shakespeare's genius, since he concludes his essay with the words: 'Had Shakespeare completed the play by himself, it is not to be doubted that we should be indebted to him for a production far superior to *The Birth of Merlin*.'

We are sorry to have to state that in spite of our researches we have not succeeded in discovering the special source from which the contents, especially the comic scenes, of our play have been taken. Let us hope that we are more successful, when we have the opportunity of consulting again the rich collections of the British Museum.

---



THE BIRTH OF MERLIN:

OR,

THE CHILDE HATH FOUND HIS FATHER.

# DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

AURELIUS, <i>King of Britain.</i>	SIR NICHODEMUS NOTHING, <i>a</i>
VORTIGER, <i>King of the Welsh</i>	<i>Courtier.</i>
<i>Brittains.</i>	THE DEVIL, <i>father of MERLIN.</i>
VTER PENDRAGON <i>the Prince,</i>	OSTORIUS, <i>the Saxon General.</i>
<i>Brother to AURELIUS.</i>	OCTA, <i>a Saxon Nobleman.</i>
DONOBERT, <i>a Nobleman, and Father</i>	PROXIMUS, <i>a Saxon Magician.</i>
<i>to CONSTANTIA and MODESTIA.</i>	<i>Two Bishops.</i>
<i>The Earl of GLOSTER, and Father</i>	<i>Two Saxon Lords.</i>
<i>to EDWYN.</i>	<i>Two of EDOLS Captains.</i>
EDOLL, <i>Earl of Chester, and General</i>	<i>Two Gentlemen.</i>
<i>to KING AURELIUS.</i>	<i>A little Antick Spirit.</i>
CADOR, <i>Earl of Cornwall, and</i>	
<i>Suitor to CONSTANTIA.</i>	
EDWYN, <i>Son to the Earl of GLOSTER,</i>	ARTESIA, <i>Sister to OSTORIUS the</i>
<i>and Suitor to MODESTIA.</i>	<i>Saxon General.</i>
TOCLIO and OSWOLD, <i>two Noblemen.</i>	CONSTANTIA
MERLIN <i>the Prophet.</i>	and
ANSELME <i>the Hermit, after Bishop</i>	MODESTIA
<i>of Winchester.</i>	IONE GOE-TOO'T, <i>Mother of</i>
CLOWN, <i>brother to IONE, mother of</i>	<i>MERLIN.</i>
<i>MERLIN.</i>	<i>A Waiting-woman to ARTESIA.</i>
	LUCINA, <i>Queen of the Shades.</i>

*The Scene: BRITTAİN.*

Dramatis Personæ. *Vortiger, King of Brittain A and Del., Vortiger, King of Wales Tyr.; cp. IV. 1. Vortiger, King of the Welsh Brittain.*

# ACT I.

## SCENE I.

*A Room in the Castle of Lord DONOBERT.*

*Enter DONOBERT, GLOSTER, CADOR, EDWIN, CONSTANTIA,  
and MODESTIA.*

*Cador.* You teach me language, sir, as one that knows  
The Debt of Love I owe unto her Vertues;  
Wherein like a true Courtier I have fed  
My self with hope of fair Success, and now  
Attend your wisht consent to my long Suit. 5

*Dono.* Believe me, youthful Lord,  
Time could not give an opportunity  
More fitting your desires, always provided,  
My Daughters love be suited with my Grant.

*Cador.* 'Tis the condition, sir, her Promise seal'd. 10

*Dono.* Ist so, Constantia?

*Const.* I was content to give him words for oathes;  
He swore so oft he lov'd me —

*Dono.* That thou believest him?

*Const.* He is a man, I hope. 15

*Dono.* That's in the trial, Girl.

*Const.* However, I am a woman, sir.

*Dono.* The Law's on thy side then: sha't have a Husband,  
I, and a worthy one. Take her, brave Cornwall,  
And make your happiness great as our wishes. 20

The whole of the play, the rhyme-couplets only excepted, being printed as prose in A, we shall only indicate the passages in which we differ from the division of lines as adopted by Delius.

ACT I. SCENE I. Stage-dir. add. by Tyr. — 2. *their Vertues* A and Edd. — 13. *me* —] *me.* A and Edd. — 20. *your*] *our* A and Edd. Tieck: *So schön sei euer Glück wie unsre Wünsche.*

*Cador.* Sir, I thank you.

*Glost.* Double the fortunes of the day, my Lord,  
And crown my wishes too: I have a son here,  
Who in my absence would protest no less  
25 Unto your other Daughter.

*Dono.* Ha, Gloster, is it so? what says Lord Edwin?  
Will she protest as much to thee?

*Edwin.* Else must she want some of her Sisters faith, Sir.

*Modest.* Of her credulity much rather, Sir:  
30 My Lord, you are a Soldier, and methinks  
The height of that Profession should diminish  
All heat of Loves desires,  
Being so late employ'd in blood and ruine.

*Edwin.* The more my Conscience tyes me to repair  
35 The worlds losses in a new succession.

*Modest.* Necessity, it seems, ties your affections then,  
And at that rate I would unwillingly  
Be thrust upon you; a wife is a dish soon cloyes, sir.

*Edwin.* Weak and diseased appetites it may.  
40 *Modest.* Most of your making have dull stomachs, sir.

*Dono.* If that be all, Girl, thou shalt quicken him;  
Be kinde to him, Modestia: Noble Edwin,  
Let it suffice, what's mine in her, speaks yours;  
For her consent, let your fair suit go on,  
45 She is a woman, sir, and will be won.

*Edwin.* You give me comfort, sir.

*Enter TOCLIO.*

*Dono.*

Now, Toclio?

*Toclio.* The King, my honor'd Lords, requires your presence,  
And calls a Councel for return of answer  
Unto the parling enemy, whose Embassadors  
50 Are on the way to Court.

*Dono.*

So suddenly?

Chester, it seems, has ply'd them hard at war,  
They sue so fast for peace, which by my advice

35. *worlds* may be read as a disyllable. — 42. *Modesta* A. — 46. *Enter*  
TOCLIO after l. 45 in A.

They ne're shall have, unless they leave the Realm.

Come, noble Gloster, let's attend the King.

It lies, sir, in your Son to do me pleasure, 55

And save the charges of a Wedding-Dinner;

If you'll make haste to end your Love-affairs,

One cost may give discharge to both my cares. [*Exit* DONO.,

*Edwin.* I'll do my best.

GLOSTER.

*Cador.* Now, Toclío, what stirring news at Court? 60

*Toclío.* Oh, my Lord, the Court's all fill'd with rumor, the  
City with news, and the Country with wonder, and all the  
bells i'th' Kingdom must proclaim it, we have a new Holy-day  
a coming.

*Const.* A holy-day! for whom? for thee? 65

*Toclío.* Me, Madam! 'sfoot! I'de be loath that any man  
should make a holy-day for me yet:

In brief, 'tis thus: There's here arriv'd at Court,

Sent by the Earl of Chester to the King,

A man of rare esteem for holyness, 70

A reverent Heremit, that by miracle

Not onely saved our army,

But without aid of man o'rethrew

The pagan Host, and with such wonder, sir,

As might confirm a Kingdom to his faith. 75

*Edwin.* This is strange news, indeed; where is he?

*Toclío.* In conference with the King, that much respects him.

*Modest.* Trust me, I long to see him.

*Toclío.* Faith, you will find no great pleasure in him, for

66—67. Elze, Notes on Elizabethan Dramatists, vol. 1., Halle, 1880, p. 2. considers these two lines as verse, dividing them at *man*, and proposing to read *for my sake* instead of *for me*. It may however well be that Toclío only delivers the account about the Hermit in verse. A similar case occurs II. 1. 9 seqq. — 72 seqq. Elze, l. c., regulates the lines: *Not only saved our army, but without* | THE aid of man o'erthrew the pagan host | And with such wonder, sir, as might confirm | A kingdom to his faith. But as Shak. says *with aid of s. b.* (3 H. VI., II. 1. 147, 2 H. VI., IV. 5. 4, Hamlet IV. 1. 33), we seem not to be permitted to add *the* in the phrase *without aid of s. b.*; besides the separation of *without* from *the aid*, and of *confirm* from *kingdom* sounds at any rate harsh to the ear. As to *without*, cp. Cor. III. 3. 133 *That won you without blows*. In l. 73 a foot is wanting, as in many other lines of our play.

80 ought that I can see, Lady. They say he is half a Prophet  
too: would he could tell me any news of the lost Prince,  
there's twenty Talents offer'd to him that finds him.

*Cador.* Such news was breeding in the morning.

*Toclío.* And now it has birth and life, sir. If fortune bless  
85 me, I'll once more search those woods where then we lost  
him; I know not yet what fate may follow me. [*Exit.*

*Cador.* Fortune go with you, sir. Come, fair Mistriss,  
Your Sister and Lord Edwin are in game,  
And all their wits at stake to win the Set.

90 *Const.* My sister has the hand yet; we had best leave them:  
She will be out anon as well as I,

He wants but cunning to put in a Dye. [*Exit CADOR, CONST.*

*Edwin.* You are a cunning Gamester, Madam.

*Modest.* It is a desperate Game, indeed, this Marriage,  
95 Where there's no winning without loss to either.

*Edwin.* Why, what but your perfection, noble Lady,  
Can bar the worthiness of this my suit?  
If so you please I count my happiness  
From difficult obtaining, you shall see

100 My duty and observance.

*Modest.* There shall be place to neither, noble sir;

I do beseech you, let this mild Reply  
Give answer to your suit: for here I vow,  
If e're I change my Virgin-name, by you

105 It gains or looses.

*Edwin.* My wishes have their crown.

*Modest.* Let them confine you then,  
As to my promise you give faith and credence.

*Edwin.* In your command my willing absence speaks it. [*Exit.*

*Modest.* Noble and vertuous: could I dream of Marriage,  
110 I should affect thee, Edwin. Oh, my soul,  
Here's something tells me that these best of creatures,  
These models of the world, weak man and woman,  
Should have their souls, their making, life, and being,  
To some more excellent use: if what the sense

104. name by you, | *It A* and *Edd.* — 105. *their own A*, *their own Tyr.* — 107. *As to my promise, you give faith and credence A* and *Edd.*

Calls pleasure were our ends, we might justly blame 115  
 Great natures wisdom, who rear'd a building  
 Of so much art and beauty to entertain  
 A guest so far incertain, so imperfect:  
 If onely speech distinguish us from beasts,  
 Who know no inequality of birth or place, 120  
 But still to fly from goodness: oh, how base  
 Were life at such a rate! No, no, that power  
 That gave to man his being, speech and wisdom,  
 Gave it for thankfulness. To him alone  
 That made me thus, may I thence truly know, 125  
 I'll pay to him, not man, the love I owe. [Exit.

## SCENE II.

*The British Court.*

*Flourish Cornets. Enter AURELIUS King of Britain, DONOBERT,  
 GLOSTER, CADOR, EDWIN, TOCLIO, OSWOLD, and Attendants.*

*Aur.* No tiding of our brother yet? 'Tis strange,  
 So ne're the Court, and in our own Land too,  
 And yet no news of him: oh, this loss  
 Tempers the sweetness of our happy conquests  
 With much untimely sorrow. 5

*Dono.* Royal sir,  
 His safety being unquestion'd, you should to time  
 Leave the redress of sorrow. Were he dead,  
 Or taken by the foe, our fatal loss  
 Had wanted no quick Herald to disclose it.

*Aur.* That hope alone sustains me, 10  
 Nor will we be so ingrateful unto heaven  
 To question what we fear with what we enjoy.  
 Is answer of our message yet return'd  
 From that religious man, the holy Hermit,  
 Sent by the Earl of Chester to confirm us 15

116. A so-called syllable-pause-line. — 125. whence A and Tyr., thence Del.

SCENE II. *The British Court* add. by Tyr. — 6. you wanting in A and Edd. *Edl* says, not necessary to supply the you.

- In that miraculous act? For 'twas no less:  
 Our Army being in rout, nay, quite o'rethrown,  
 As Chester writes, even then this holy man,  
 Arm'd with his cross and staff, went smiling on,  
 20 And boldly fronts the foe; at sight of whom  
 The Saxons stood amaz'd: for, to their seeming,  
 Above the Hermit's head appear'd such brightness,  
 Such clear and glorious beams, as if our men  
 March't all in fire; wherewith the Pagans fled,  
 25 And by our troops were all to death pursu'd.  
*Glost.* 'Tis full of wonder, sir.  
*Aurel.* Oh, Gloster, he's a jewel worth a Kingdom.  
 Where's Oswald with his answer?  
*Oswold.* 'Tis here, my Royal Lord.  
 30 *Aurel.* In writing? will he not sit with us?  
*Oswold.* His Orizons perform'd, he bad me say,  
 He would attend with all submission.  
*Aurel.* Proceed to council then; and let some give order,  
 The Embassadors being come to take our answer,  
 35 They have admittance. Oswald, Toclio,  
 Be it your charge! — [*Exeunt OSWOLD and TOCLIO*] And now,  
 The holy council of this reverend Hermit: [my Lords, observe  
 [*Reads*] 'As you respect your safety, limit not  
 That onely power that hath protected you;  
 40 Trust not an open enemy too far,  
 He's yet a looser, and knows you have won;  
 Mischiefs not ended are but then begun.

ANSELME the Hermit.'

- Dono.* Powerful and pithie, which my advice confirms:  
 No man leaves physick when his sickness slakes,  
 45 But doubles the receipts: the word of Peace  
 Seems fair to blood-shot eyes, but being appli'd  
 With such a medicine as blinds all the sight  
 Argues desire of Cure, but not of Art.  
*Aurel.* You argue from defects; if both the name

22. *Hermit head A.* — 30. Two lines in Del., div. at writing. —  
 36. Stage-dir. add. by Tyr. — 42. *then but* Tyr. — 48. *not knowledge of*  
*Art* Tyr.

And the condition of the Peace be one, 50  
 It is to be prefer'd, and in the offer,  
 Made by the Saxon, I see nought repugnant.

*Glost.* The time of truce requir'd for thirty days,  
 Carries suspicion in it, since half that space  
 Will serve to strength their weakned Regiments. 55

*Cador.* We in less time will undertake to free  
 Our Country from them.

\* \* *Edwin.* Leave that unto our fortune.

*Dono.* Is not our bold and hopeful General  
 Still Master of the field, their Legions slain,  
 The rest intrencht for fear, half starv'd, and wounded, 60  
 And shall we now give o're our fair advantage?  
 'Fore heaven, my Lord, the danger is far more  
 In trusting to their words then to their weapons.

*Enter OSWOLD.*

*Oswold.* The ambassadors are come, sir.

*Aurel.* Conduct them in!

We are resolv'd, my Lords: since policy fail'd 65  
 In the beginning, it shall have no hand  
 In the conclusion.

That heavenly power that hath so well begun  
 Their fatal overthrow, I know, can end it:  
 From which fair hope my self will give them answer. 70

*Flourish Cornets. Enter ARTESIA with the Saxon Lords.*

*Dono.* What's here? a woman Orator?

*Aurel.* Peace, Donobert! — Speak, what are you, Lady?

*Artes.* The sister of the Saxon General,  
 Warlike Ostorius the East Angles King;  
 My name Artesia, who in terms of love 75  
 Brings peace and health to great Aurelius,  
 Wishing she may return as fair a present  
 As she makes tender of.

55. *Regiment A, Regiments Tyr.* — 56. *We]* *Who A* and Edd. —  
 62. *Force heaven A*, corr. by Tyr. — 74. *Anglese A.* — 77. *she]* *the army Tyr.*

*Aurel.* The fairest present e're mine eyes were blest with! —  
 80 Command a chair there for this Saxon Beauty: —  
 Sit, Lady, we'll confer: your warlike brother  
 Sues for a peace, you say?

*Artes.* With endless love unto your State and Person.

*Aurel.* Ha's sent a moving Orator, believe me. —  
 85 What thinkst thou, Donobert?

*Dono.* Believe me, sir, were I but young agen,  
 This gilded pill might take my stomach quickly.

*Aurel.* True, thou art old: how soon we do forget  
 Our own defects! Fair damsel, — oh, my tongue  
 90 Turns Traitor, and will betray my heart — sister to  
 Our enemy: — 'sdeath, her beauty mazes me,  
 I cannot speak if I but look on her. —  
 What's that we did conclude?

*Dono.* This, Royal Lord —

*Aurel.* Pish, thou canst not utter it: —  
 95 Fair'st of creatures, tell the King your Brother,  
 That we, in love — ha! — and honor to our Country,  
 Command his Armies to depart our Realm.  
 But if you please, fair soul — Lord Donobert,  
 Deliver you our pleasure.

*Dono.* I shall, sir:

100 Lady, return, and certifie your brother —

*Aurel.* Thou art too blunt and rude! return so soon?  
 Fie, let her stay, and send some messenger  
 To certifie our pleasure.

*Dono.* What meanes your Grace?

*Aurel.* To give her time of rest to her long Journey;  
 105 We would not willingly be thought uncivil.

*Artes.* Great King of Brittain, let it not seem strange,  
 To embrace the Princely Offers of a friend,  
 Whose vertues with thine own, in fairest merit,  
 Both States in Peace and Love may now inherit.

110 *Aurel.* She speakes of Love agen!  
 Sure, 'tis my fear, she knows I do not hate her.

*Artes.* Be, then, thy self, most great Aurelius,

And let not envy nor a deeper sin  
 In these thy Councillors deprive thy goodness  
 Of that fair honor, we in seeking peace 115  
 Give first to thee, who never used to sue  
 But force our wishes. Yet, if this seem light,  
 Oh, let my sex, though worthless your respect,  
 Take the report of thy humanity,  
 Whose mild and vertuous life loud fame displayes, 120  
 As being o'recome by one so worthy praise.

*Aurel.* She has an Angels tongue. — Speak still.

*Dono.* This flattery is gross, sir; hear no more on't. —  
 Lady, these childish complements are needless;  
 You have your answer, and believe it, Madam, 125  
 His Grace, though yong, doth wear within his breast  
 Too grave a Councillor to be seduc't  
 By smoothing flattery or oyl words.

*Artes.* I come not, sir, to wooe him.

*Dono.* 'Twere folly, if you should; you must not wed him. 130

*Aurel.* Shame take thy tongue! Being old and weak thy self,  
 Thou doat'st, and looking on thine own defects,  
 Speak'st what thou'dst wish in me. Do I command  
 The deeds of others, mine own act not free?  
 Be pleas'd to smile or frown, we respect neither: 135  
 My will and rule shall stand and fall together.  
 Most fair Artesia, see the King descends  
 To give thee welcome with these warlike Saxons,  
 And now on equal terms both sues and grants:  
 Instead of Truce, let a perpetual League 140  
 Seal our united bloods in holy marriage;  
 Send the East Angels King this happy news,  
 That thou with me hast made a League for ever,  
 And added to his state a friend and brother.  
 Speak, dearest Love, dare you confirm this Title? 145

*Artes.* I were no woman to deny a good  
 So high and noble to my fame and Country.

115. *honor.* We Del. — 116. *use* A and Del, *used* Tyr. — 131 seqq. added to DONO.'s words (l. 130) A. Tyr. puts *Shame take thy tongue* twice: *wed him, Shame take thy tongue.* AUR. *Shame take thy tongue! Bring &c.* — 132. *thy* Tyr. — 146. *to deny so high and noble a proposal to my fame and country* Tyr.

*Aurel.* Live, then, a Queen in Brittain.

*Glost.* He meanes to marry her.

150 *Dono.* Death! he shall marry the devil first!

Marry a Pagan, an Idolater?

*Cador.* He has won her quickly.

*Edwin.* She was woo'd afore she came, sure,  
Or came of purpose to conclude the Match.

155 *Aurel.* Who dares oppose our will? My Lord of Gloster,

Be you Embassador unto our Brother,

The Brother of our Queen Artesia;

Tell him, for such our entertainment looks him,

Our marriage adding to the happiness

160 Of our intended joys; mans good or ill

In this like waves agree, come double still.

*Enter HERMIT.*

Who's this? the Hermit? Welcome, my happiness!

Our Contries hope, most reverent holy man,

I wanted but thy blessing to make perfect

165 The infinite sum of my felicity.

*Hermit.* Alack, sweet Prince, that happiness is yonder,  
Felicity and thou art far asunder;

This world can never give it.

*Aurel.* Thou art deceiv'd: see here what I have found,  
170 Beauty, Alliance, Peace, and strength of Friends,

All in this all exceeding excellence:

The League's confirm'd.

*Hermit.* With whom, dear Lord?

*Aurel.* With the great Brother of this Beauteous woman,  
175 The Royal Saxon King.

*Hermit.* Oh, then I see,  
And fear thou art too near thy misery.

What magick could so linck thee to this mischief?

By all the good that thou hast reapt by me,

Stand further from destruction.

180 *Aurel.* Speak as a man, and I shall hope to obey thee.

158. Tell him as such our entertainment looks for him Tyr.

*Hermit.* Idolatress, get hence! fond King, let go:  
Thou hugst thy ruine and thy Countries woe.

*Dono.* Well spoke, old Father; too him, bait him soundly.  
Now, by heavens blest Lady, I can scarce keep patience.

1. *Saxon Lord.* What devil is this? 185

2. *Saxon Lord.* That cursed Christian, by whose hellish charmes  
Our army was o'rethrown.

*Hermit.* Why do you dally, sir? Oh, tempt not heaven;  
Warm not a serpent in your naked bosom:  
Discharge them from your Court. 190

*Aurel.* Thou speak'st like madness!  
Command the frozen shepherd to the shade,  
When he sits warm i'th' Sun; the fever-sick  
To add more heat unto his burning pain:  
These may obey, 'tis less extremity  
Then thou enjoynst to me. Cast but thine eye 195  
Upon this beauty, do it, I'll forgive thee,  
Though jealousie in others findes no pardon;  
Then say thou dost not love; I shall then swear  
Th'art immortal and no earthly man.  
Oh, blame then my mortality, not me. 200

*Hermit.* It is thy weakness brings thy misery,  
Unhappy Prince.

*Aurel.* Be milder in thy doom.

*Hermit.* 'Tis you that must indure heavens doom, which faln ? *E. M.*  
Remembers just.

*Artes.* Thou shalt not live to see it. — How fares my Lord? 205  
If my poor presence breed dislike, great Prince,  
I am no such neglected soul, will seek  
To tie you to your word.

*Aurel.* My word, dear Love! may my Religion,  
Crown, State, and Kingdom fail, when I fail thee. 210  
Command Earl Chester to break up the camp  
Without disturbance to our Saxon friends;  
Send every hour swift posts to hasten on  
The King her Brother, to conclude this League,

181. *Idolaters A.* — 195. *eyes Tyr.* — 198. *love me A, love like me Tyr., love Del.* — 206. *breeds Tyr.*

- 215 This endless happy Peace of Love and Marriage;  
 Till when provide for Revels, and give charge  
 That nought be wanting which may make our triumphs  
 Sportful and free to all. If such fair blood  
 Ingender ill, man must not look for good. [*Ex. all but*  
*Heremit. Flourish.*

*Enter MODESTIA, reading in a book.*

- 220 *Mod.* How much the oft report of this blest Hermit  
 Hath won on my desires; I must behold him:  
 And sure this should be he. Oh, the world's folly,  
 Proud earth and dust, how low a price bears goodness!  
 All that should make man absolute, shines in him.
- 225 Much reverent Sir, may I without offence  
 Give interruption to your holy thoughts?  
*Hermit.* What would you, Lady?  
*Mod.* That which till now ne're found a language in me:  
 I am in love.  
*Her.* In love? with what?  
*Mod.* With vertue.
- 230 *Her.* There's no blame in that.  
*Mod.* Nay, sir, with you, with your Religious Life,  
 Your Vertue, Goodness, if there be a name  
 To express affection greater, that,  
 That would I learn and utter: Reverent Sir,
- 235 If there be any thing to bar my suit,  
 Be charitable and expose it; your prayers  
 Are the same Orizons which I will number.  
 Holy Sir,  
 Keep not instruction back from willingness,
- 240 Possess me of that knowledge leads you on  
 To this humility; for well I know,  
 Were greatness good, you would not live so low.  
*Her.* Are you a Virgin?  
*Mod.* Yes, Sir.
- 245 *Her.* Your name?  
*Mod.* Modestia.

217. *make A, will make Tyr., may make Del.* — 219. *men Tyr.* —  
 233. *that] than that word Del.* — 246. *Modesta A.*

*Her.* Your name and vertues meet, a Modest Virgin:  
 Live ever in the sanctimonious way  
 To Heaven and Happiness. There's goodness in you,  
 I must instruct you further. Come, look up, 250  
 Behold yon firmament: there sits a power,  
 Whose foot-stool is this earth. Oh, learn this lesson,  
 And practise it: he that will climb so high,  
 Must leave no joy beneath to move his eye.  
*Mod.* I apprehend you, sir: on Heaven I fix my love, 255  
 Earth gives us grief, our joys are all above;  
 For this was man in innocence naked born,  
 To show us wealth hinders our sweet return. [*Exeunt.*]

## A C T II.

## SCENE I.

*A Forest.*

*Enter Clown and his sister great with childe.*

*Clown.* Away! follow me no further, I am none of thy brother.  
 What, with Childe? great with Childe, and knows not whose  
 the Father on't! I am asham'd to call thee Sister.

*Joan.* Believe me, Brother, he was a Gentleman.

*Clown.* Nay, I believe that; he gives arms, and legs too, 5  
 and has made you the Herald to blaze 'em. But, Joan,  
 Joan, sister Joan, can you tell me his name that did it?  
 how shall we call my Cousin, your bastard, when we have it?

*Joan.* Alas, I know not the Gentlemans name, Brother!  
 I met him in these woods, the last great hunting; 10  
 He was so kinde and proffer'd me so much,  
 As I had not the heart to ask him more.

*Clown.* Not his name? why, this showes your Country  
 -breeding now; had you been brought up i'th' City, you'd

254. *leave*] *let* Tyr.; but *leave* is often almost = to let, to suffer,  
 cp. *you barely leave our thorns to prick ourselves* All's IV. 2. 19, and see  
 Al. Schmidt, Sh.-L., s. v. *leave* 8). — 254 and 258. *Exit*] corr. by Tyr.

ACT II. SCENE I. *A Forest.* add. by Tyr. — 2. *know* Tyr. — 8. *name*  
 Del. — 9—12. Not printed as verse in A and Edd., cp. ad I. 1. 66. —  
 14. *breeding.* *Now, had* Del.

15 have got a Father first, and the childe afterwards: Hast thou no markes to know him by?

*Joan.* He had most rich Attire, a fair Hat and Feather, a gilt Sword, and most excellent Hangers.

*Clown.* Pox on his Hangers, would he had bin gelt for his labor.

20 *Joan.* Had you but heard him swear, you would have thought —

*Clown.* I, as you did. Swearing and lying goes together still. Did his Oathes get you with Childe, we shall have a roaring Boy then, yfaith. Well, sister, I must leave you.

*Joan.* Dear brother, stay, help me to finde him out,  
25 I'll ask no further.

*Clown.* 'Sfoot, who should I finde? who should I ask for?

*Joan.* Alas, I know not, he uses in these woods,  
And these are witness of his oathes and promise.

*Clown.* We are like to have a hot suit on't, when our  
30 best witness's but a Knight a'th' Post.

*Joan.* Do but enquire this Forrest, I'll go with you;  
Some happy fate may guide us till we meet him.

*Clown.* Meet him? and what name shall we have for him,  
when we meet him? 'Sfoot, thou neither knowst him nor  
35 canst tell what to call him. Was ever man tyr'd with such a  
business, to have a sister got with childe, and know not who  
did it? Well, you shall see him, I'll do my best for you,  
Ile make Proclamation; if these Woods and Trees, as you say,  
will bear any witness, let them answer. Oh yes: If there be  
40 any man that wants a name, will come in for conscience sake,  
and acknowledge himself to be a Whore-Master, he shall have  
that laid to his charge in an hour, he shall not be rid on in  
an age; if he have Lands, he shall have an heir; if he have  
patience, he shall have a wife; if he have neither Lands nor  
45 patience, he shall have a Whore. So ho, boy, so ho, so, so.

[*Within*] *Prince Tier.* So ho, boy, so ho, illo ho, illo ho.

*Clown.* Hark, hark, sister, there's one hollows to us; what  
a wicked world's this, a man cannot so soon name a whore,  
but a knave comes presently: and see where he is; stand  
50 close a while, sister.

*Enter PRINCE VTER.*

*Prince.* How like a voice that Eccho spake, but oh,  
My thoughts are lost for ever in amazement.  
Could I but meet a man to tell her beauties,  
These trees would bend their tops to kiss the air  
That from my lips should give her praises up. 55

*Clown.* He talks of a woman, sister.

*Joan.* This may be he, brother.

*Clown.* View him well; you see, he has a fair Sword, but  
his Hangers are faln.

*Prince.* Here did I see her first, here view her beauty: 60  
Oh, had I known her name, I had been happy.

*Clown.* Sister, this is he, sure; he knows not thy name  
neither. A couple of wise fools yfaith, to get children, and  
know not one another.

*Prince.* You weeping leaves, upon whose tender cheeks 65  
Doth stand a flood of tears at my complaint,  
And heard my vows and oathes —

*Clown.* Law, Law, he has been a great swearer too; tis he,

*Prince.* For having overtook her. [sister.

As I have seen a forward blood-hound strip 70  
The swiftest of the cry, ready to seize  
His wished hopes, upon the sudden view,  
Struck with astonishment, at his arriv'd prey,  
Instead of seizure stands at fearful bay;  
Or like to Marius soldiers, who, o'retook, 75  
The eye-sight killing Gorgon at one look  
Made everlasting stand: so fear'd my power,  
Whose cloud aspir'd the Sun, dissolv'd a shower.  
Pigmalion, then I tasted thy sad fate,  
Whose Ivory picture and my fair were one: 80  
Our dotage past imagination,  
I saw and felt desire —

*Clown.* Pox a your fingering! did he feel, sister?

*Prince.* But enjoy'd not.

51. *spoke, but ah* Tyr. — 63. *either* Del. — 64. *not know* Tyr. —  
67. *And*] *You* Del. — 71. *swifter* A. and Edd. — 75. *whom o'ertook* Del. —  
82. *not*] *now* A, corr. by Tyr. and Del.

- Oh fate, thou hadst thy days and nights to feed  
 85 On calm affection; one poor sight was all,  
 Converts my pleasure to perpetual thrall:  
 Imbracing thine, thou lostest breath and desire,  
 So I, relating mine, will here expire.  
 For here I vow to you, mournful plants,  
 90 Who were the first, made happy by her fame,  
 Never to part hence, till I know her name.

*Clown.* Give me thy hand, sister, *The Childe has found his Father.* This is he, sure, as I am a man; had I been a woman, these kind words would have won me, I should have  
 95 had a great belly too, that's certain. Well, I'll speak to him.  
 — Most honest and fleshly-minded Gentleman, give me your hand, sir.

*Prince.* Ha, what art thou, that thus rude and boldly darest  
 Take notice of a wretch so much ally'd  
 100 To misery as I am?

*Clown.* Nay, Sir, for our aliance, I shall be found to be a poor brother-in-Law of your worships. The Gentlewoman you spake on, is my sister: you see what a clew she spreads; her name is Joan Go-too't, I am her elder, but she has been at  
 105 it before me; 'tis a woman's fault. — Pox a this bashfulness! come forward, jug, prethee, speak to him.

*Prince.* Have you e're seen me, Lady?

*Clown.* Seen ye? ha, ha! It seems she has felt you too. Here's a young Go-too't a coming, sir; she is my sister; we  
 110 all love to Go-too't, as well as your worship. She's a Maid yet, but you may make her a wife, when you please, sir.

*Prince.* I am amaz'd with wonder: Tell me, woman, What sin have I comitted worthy this?

*Joan.* Do you not know me, sir?

115 *Prince.* Know thee! as I do thunder, hell, and mischief; Witch, scullion, hag!

*Clown.* I see, he will marry her; he speaks so like a husband.

87. *losest* Tyr. — 89. *you, ye mournful* Tyr. and Del. Read *mournful* as three syllables. — 98. *rudely* Tyr. — Div. at *boldly* | *wretch* | *am* by Del. — 110. *she's scarce* a Tyr. — 113. *I*] *you* A and Del., corr. by Tyr. — 116. *wich* A; *stallion* A, *scullion* Del. The same misprint occurs in Q 2 (1604) of Hml. II, 2. 616.

- Prince.* Death! I will cut their tongues out for this blasphemy.  
 Strumpet, villain, where have you ever seen me? 120  
*Clown.* Speak for your self, with a pox to ye.  
*Prince.* Slaves, Ile make you curse your selves for this temp-  
*Joan.* Oh, sir, if ever you did speak to me, [tation.  
 It was in smother phrase, in fairer language.  
*Prince.* Lightning consume me, if I ever saw thee. 125  
 My rage o'reflows my blood, all patience flies me. [*Beats her.*]  
*Clown.* Hold, I beseech you, sir, I have nothing to say to you.  
*Joan.* Help, help! murder, murder!

*Enter TOCLIO and OSWOLD.*

- Toclio.* Make haste, Sir, this way the sound came, it was a wood.  
*Oswold.* See where she is, and the Prince, the price of all 130  
 our wishes.  
*Clown.* The prince, say ye? ha's made a poor Subject of  
 me, I am sure.  
*Toclio.* Sweet Prince, noble Vter, speak, how fare you, sir?  
*Oswold.* Dear sir, recal your self; your fearful absence 135  
 Hath won too much already on the grief  
 Of our sad King, from whom our laboring search  
 Hath had this fair success in meeting you.  
*Toclio.* His silence and his looks argue distraction.  
*Clown.* Nay, he's mad, sure, he will not acknowledge my 140  
 sister, nor the childe neither.  
*Oswold.* Let us entreat your Grace along with us;  
 Your sight will bring new life to the King your Brother.  
*Toclio.* Will you go, sir?  
*Prince.* Yes, any whether; guide me, all's hell, I see; 145  
 Man may change air, but not his misery. [*Exit PRINCE,*  
*Joan.* Lend me one word with you, sir. TOCLIO.  
*Clown.* Well said, sister, he has a Feather, and fair Hangers  
 too, this may be he.  
*Oswold.* What would you, fair one? 150  
*Joan.* Sure, I have seen you in these woods ere this.

119—20. Div. at *tongues | villain | me* by Del. — 119. *cut out their Tyr.*; but read *I'll cut &c.* — 122. *Slaves* put in a line by itself by Del. — 129. *i'the wood* Del. — 145. *all's hell; I see,* Del. — 151. Given to CLOWN in A.

*Oswold.* Trust me, never; I never saw this place,  
Till at this time my friend conducted me.

*Joan.* The more's my sorrow then.

155 *Oswold.* Would I could comfort you.

I am a Bachelor, but it seems you have

A husband, you have been foully o'reshot else.

*Clown.* A woman's fault, we are all subject to go to't, sir.

*Enter TOCLIO.*

*Toclio.* Oswald, away; the Prince will not stir a foot without

160 *Oswold.* I am coming. Farewell, woman. [you.

*Toclio.* Prithee, make haste. [Exit OSWOLD.

*Joan.* Good sir, but one word with you, ere you leave us.

*Toclio.* With me, fair soul?

*Clown.* Shee'l have a fling at him too; the Childe must  
165 have a Father.

*Joan.* Have you ne'er seen me, sir?

*Toclio.* Seen thee? 'Sfoot, I have seen many fair faces in  
my time. Prithee, look up, and do not weep so. Sure, pretty  
wanton, I have seen this face before.

170 *Joan.* It is enough, though you ne'er see me more. [Sinks down.

*Toclio.* 'Sfoot, she's faln. This place is enchanted, sure;  
look to the woman, fellow. [Exit.

*Clown.* Oh, she's dead, she's dead! As you are a man,  
stay and help, sir. — Joan, Joan, sister Joan, why, Joan Go  
175 -too't, I say; will you cast away your self, and your childe,  
and me too? what do you mean, sister?

*Joan.* Oh, give me pardon, sir; 'twas too much joy  
Opprest my loving thoughts; I know you were  
Too noble to deny me — ha! Where is he?

180 *Clown.* Who, the Gentleman? he's gone, sister.

*Joan.* Oh! I am undone then! Run, tell him I did  
But faint for joy; dear brother, haste, why dost thou stay?  
Oh, never cease, till he give answer to thee.

*Clown.* He: which he? what do you call him, tro?

161. Stage-dir. not in A and Edd. — 168seqq. Printed as verse, div.  
at *thee* | *time* | *so* | *before*. Del. — 170. *your*, corr. by Tyr. and Del. —  
171. Div. at *fallen* Del. — 178. *thought* Del. — 181. *run and tell* Tyr.

*Joan.* Unnatural brother!  
 Shew me the path he took, why dost thou dally?  
 Speak, oh, which way went he?  
*Clown.* This way, that way, through the bushes there.  
*Joan.* Were it through fire,  
 The Journey's easie, winged with sweet desire. [*Exit.* 190  
*Clown.* Hey day, there's some hope of this yet. Ile follow  
 her for kindreds sake; if she miss of her purpose now, she'l  
 challenge all she findes, I see; for if ever we meet with a  
 two-legd creature in the whole Kingdom, the Childe shall  
 have a Father, that's certain. [*Exit.* 195

## SCENE II.

*An Ante-chamber at the British Court.*

*Loud Musick.* Enter two with the Sword and Mace, CADOR, EDWIN,  
 two Bishops, AURELIUS, OSTORIUS, leading ARTESIA Crown'd, CON-  
 STANCIA, MODESTIA, OCTA, PROXIMUS a Magician, DONOBERT,  
 GLOSTER, OSWOLD, TOCLIO; all pass over the Stage. Manet DONOBERT,  
 GLOSTER, EDWIN, CADOR.

*Dono.* Come, Gloster, I do not like this hasty Marriage.  
*Gloster.* She was quickly wooed and won: not six days since  
 Arrived an enemy to sue for Peace,  
 And now crown'd Queen of Brittain; this is strange.  
*Dono.* Her brother too made as quick speed in coming, 5  
 Leaving his Saxons and his starved Troops,  
 To take the advantage, whilst 'twas offer'd.  
 'Fore heaven, I fear the King's too credulous;  
 Our Army is discharg'd too.  
*Gloster.* Yes, and our General commanded home. 10  
 Son Edwin, have you seen him since?  
*Edwin.* He's come to Court, but will not view the presence,  
 Nor speak unto the King; he 's so discontent  
 At this so strange aliance with the Saxon,  
 As nothing can perswade his patience. 15

186—187. Div. at took by Del. — 192. *she'd* Del.

SCENE II. *An Antechamber at the British Court* add. by Tyr. —

1. *Come, Gloster* put in a line by itself Del.

- Cador.* You know, his humor will indure no check,  
 No, if the King oppose it:  
 All crosses feeds both his spleen and his impatience;  
 Those affections are in him like powder,  
 20 Apt to inflame with every little spark,  
 And blow up all his reason.  
*Gloster.* Edol of Chester is a noble Soldier.  
*Dono.* So is he, by the Rood, ever most faithful  
 To the King and Kingdom, how e're his passions guide him.

*Enter EDOLL with Captains.*

- 25 *Cador.* See where he comes, my Lord.  
*Omnes.* Welcome to Court, brave Earl.  
*Edol.* Do not deceive me by your flatteries:  
 Is not the Saxon here? the Legue confirm'd?  
 The Marriage ratif'd? the Court divided  
 30 With Pagan Infidels? the least part Christians,  
 At least in their Commands? Oh, the gods!  
 It is a thought that takes away my sleep,  
 And dulls my senses so I scarcely know you:  
 Prepare my horses, Ile away to Chester.  
 35 *Capt.* What shall we do with our Companies, my Lord?  
*Edol.* Keep them at home to increase Cuckolds,  
 And get some Cases for your Captainships;  
 Smooth up your brows, the wars has spoil'd your faces,  
 And few will now regard you.  
 40 *Dono.* Preserve your patience, Sir.  
*Edol.* Preserve your Honors, Lords, your Countries Safety,  
 Your Lives and Lands from strangers. What black devil  
 Could so bewitch the King, so to discharge  
 A Royal Army in the height of conquest,  
 45 Nay, even already made victorious,  
 To give such credit to an enemy,  
 A starved foe, a stragling fugitive,  
 Beaten beneath our feet, so low dejected,

17. ? *Not even if.* — 18. *crosses* used as a monosyllable; *feed* Tyr. and Del.; *both*] *but* Del. — 36. ? *Cuckolds with.* — 38. *have* Tyr. — 48. *love dejected* A, corr. by Tyr. and Del.

So servile, and so base, as hope of life  
Had won them all to leave the Land for ever? 50

*Dono.* It was the Kings will.

*Edol.* It was your want of wisdom,  
That should have laid before his tender youth  
The dangers of a State, where forain Powers  
Bandy for Sovereignty with Lawful Kings; 55  
Who being settled once, to assure themselves,  
Will never fail to seek the blood and life  
Of all competitors.

*Dono.* Your words sound well, my Lord, and point at safety,  
Both for the Realm and us; but why did you, 60  
Within whose power it lay, as General,  
With full Commission to dispose the war,  
Lend ear to parly with the weakned foe?

*Edol.* Oh, the good Gods!

*Cador.* And on that parly came this Embassie. 65

*Edol.* You will hear me?

*Edwin.* Your letters did declare it to the King,  
Both of the Peace, and all Conditions,  
Brought by this Saxon Lady, whose fond love  
Has thus bewitched him. 70

*Edol.* I will curse you all as black as hell,  
Unless you hear me; your gross mistake would make  
Wisdom herself run madding through the streets,  
And quarrel with her shadow. Death!  
Why kill'd ye not that woman? 75

*Dono. Glost.* Oh, my Lord!

*Edol.* The great devil take me quick, had I been by,  
And all the women of the world were barren,  
She should have died, ere he had married her  
On these conditions.

*Cador.* It is not reason that directs you thus. 80

*Edol.* Then have I none, for all I have directs me.  
Never was man so palpably abus'd,  
So basely marted, bought and sold to scorn.  
My Honor, Fame, and hopeful Victories,

85 The loss of Time, Expences, Blood, and Fortunes,  
All vanisht into nothing.

*Edwin.* This rage is vain, my Lord:

What the King does, nor they nor you can help.

*Edol.* My Sword must fail me then.

90 *Cador.* 'Gainst whom will you expose it?

*Edol.* What's that to you? 'gainst all the devils in hell,  
To guard my country.

*Edwin.* These are airy words.

*Edol.* Sir, you tread too hard upon my patience.

*Edwin.* I speak the duty of a Subjects faith,

95 And say agen, had you been here in presence,  
What the king did, you had not dar'd to cross it.

*Edol.* I will trample on his Life and Soul that says it.

*Cador.* My Lord!

*Edwin.* Come, come.

*Edol.* Now, before heaven —

*Cador.* Dear Sir!

*Edol.* Not dare? thou liest beneath thy lungs.

100 *Gloster.* No more, son Edwin.

*Edwin.* I have done, sir; I take my leave.

*Edol.* But thou shalt not, you shall take no leave of me, Sir.

*Dono.* For wisdoms sake, my Lord —

*Edol.* Sir, I'll leave him, and you, and all of you,

105 The Court and King, and let my Sword and friends  
Shuffle for Edols safety: stay you here,  
And hug the Saxons, till they cut your throats,  
Or bring the Land to servile slavery.

Such yokes of baseness Chester must not suffer!

110 Go, and repent betimes these foul misdeeds,

For in this League all our whole Kingdome bleeds,

Which Ile prevent, or perish. [*Exit* EDOL, CAPT.]

*Glost.* See how his rage transports him!

*Cador.* These passions set apart, a braver soldier

115 Breathes not i'th' world this day.

*Dono.* I wish his own worth do not court his ruine.

The King must Rule, and we must learn to obey,

True vertue still directs the noble way.

90. *oppose* Del. (*expose* = to lay bare). — 102. *thou shall* A.

## SCENE III.

*Hall of state in the Palace.*

*Loud Musick. Enter AURELIUS, ARTESIA, OSTORIUS, OCTA,  
PROXIMUS, TOCLIO, OSWOLD, Hermit.*

*Aurel.* Why is the Court so dull? me thinks, each room  
And angle of our Palace should appear  
Stuck full of objects fit for mirth and triumphs,  
To show our high content. Oswald, fill wine!  
Must we begin the Revels? Be it so, then! 5  
Reach me the cup: Ile now begin a Health  
To our lov'd Queen, the bright Artesia,  
The Royal Saxon King, our warlike brother.  
Go and command all the whole Court to pledge it.  
Fill to the Hermit there! Most reverent Anselme, 10  
Wee'l do thee Honor first, to pledge my Queen.

*Her.* I drink no healths, great King, and if I did,  
I would be loath to part with health to those  
That have no power to give it back agen.

*Aurel.* Mistake not, it is the argument of Love 15  
And Duty to our Queen and us.

*Artes.* But he owes none, it seems.

*Her.* I do to vertue, Madame. Temperate minds  
Covets that health to drink, which nature gives  
In every spring to man; he that doth hold 20  
His body but a Tenement at will,  
Bestows no cost, but to repair what's ill:  
Yet if your healths or heat of Wine, fair Princess,  
Could this old frame or these cras'd limbes restore,  
Or keep out death or sickness, then fill more, 25  
I'll make fresh way for appetite; if no,  
On such a prodigal who would wealth bestow?

*Ostorius.* He speaks not like a guest to grace a wedding.

*Enter TOCLIO.*

*Artes.* No, sir, but like an envious imposter.

*Octa.* A Christian slave, a Cinick. 30

SCENE III. No new scene in Del. — *Hall of State in the Palace* add.  
by Tyr. — 8. *And the Tyr.* — 11. *thee the Honor Tyr.* — 19. *Covet Tyr.*  
and Del. — 23. *Princes A.*

- Ostor.* What vertue could decline your Kingly spirit  
 To such respect of him whose magick spells  
 Met with your vanquisht Troops, and turn'd your Arms  
 To that necessity of fight, which, through despair  
 35 Of any hope to stand but by his charms,  
 Had been defeated in a bloody conquest?

- Ocla.* 'Twas magick, hellbred magick did it, sir,  
 And that's a course, my Lord, which we esteem  
 In all our Saxon Wars unto the last  
 40 And lowest ebbe of servile treachery.

- Aurel.* Sure, you are deceiv'd, it was the hand of heaven  
 That in his vertue gave us victory.  
 Is there a power in man that can strike fear  
 Thorough a general camp, or create spirits  
 45 In recreant bosoms above present sense?

- Ostor.* To blind the sense there may, with apparition  
 Of well arm'd troops, which in themselves are air,  
 Form'd into humane shapes, and such that day  
 Were by that Sorcerer rais'd to cross our fortunes.

- 50 *Aurel.* There is a law tells us that words want force  
 To make deeds void; examples must be shown  
 By instances alike, ere I believe it.

- Ostor.* 'Tis easily perform'd, believe me, sir:  
 Propose your own desires, and give but way  
 55 'To what our Magick here shall straight perform,  
 And then let his or our deserts be censur'd.

*Aurel.* We could not wish a greater happiness  
 Then what this satisfaction brings with it.  
 Let him proceed, fair brother.

- Ostor.* He shall, sir.  
 60 Come, learned Proximus, this task be thine:  
 Let thy great charms confound the opinion  
 This Christian by his spells hath falsly won.

*Prox.* Great King, propound your wishes, then,

1. 4. *At*

34. *which through*] *which the A, which but for the Tyr., when the Del. As to the use of through, cp. 1H. IV., III. 2. 124 thou art like enough, through vassal fear, to fight against me, and Cymb. V. 3. 61 some falling merely through fear. — 47. which in] within A, corr. by Tyr., but not by Del.*

What persons, of what State, what numbers, or how arm'd,  
Please your own thoughts; they shall appear before you. 65

*Aurel.* Strange art! What thinkst thou, reverent Hermit?

*Her.* Let him go on, sir.

*Aurel.* Wilt thou behold his cunning?

*Her.* Right gladly, sir; it will be my joy to tell,  
That I was here to laugh at him and hell. 70

*Aurel.* I like thy confidence.

*Artes.* His sawcy impudence! — Proceed to th'trial.

*Prox.* Speak your desires, my Lord, and be it placed  
In any angle underneath the Moon,  
The center of the Earth, the Sea, the Air, 75  
The region of the fire, nay, hell itself,  
And I'll present it.

*Aurel.* Wee'll have no sight so fearful, onely this:  
If all thy art can reach it, show me here  
The two great Champions of the Trojan War, 80  
Achilles and brave Hector, our great Ancestor,  
Both in their warlike habits, Armor, Shields,  
And Weapons then in use for fight.

*Prox.* 'Tis done, my Lord, command a halt and silence,  
As each man will respect his life or danger. 85  
*Armel, Plesgeth!*

*Enter Spirits.*

*Spirits.* *Quid vis?*

*Prox.* Attend me!

*Aurel.* The Apparition comes; on our displeasure,  
Let all keep place and silence. [*Within Drums beat Marches.* 90

*Enter PROXIMUS, bringing in HECTOR, attir'd and arm'd after the Trojan manner, with Target, Sword, and Battel-ax, a Trumpet before him, and a Spirit in flame colours with a Torch; at the other door ACHILLES with his Spear and Falchon, a Trumpet, and a Spirit in black before him; Trumpets sound alarm, and they manage their weapons to begin the Fight: and after some Charges, the Hermit steps between them, at which seeming amaz'd the spirits tremble.*  
[*Thunder within.*

65. *your thoughts* Tyr. — 73. *place't* A. — 74. *beneath* Tyr. — 86. (Stage-dir.) *Spirit* A. — 90. (Stage-dir.) *and tremble* A.

- Prox.* What means this stay, bright Armel, Plesgeth?  
 Why fear you and fall back?  
 Renew the Alarums, and enforce the Combat,  
 Or hell or darkness circles you for ever.
- 95 *Arm.* We dare not.  
*Prox.* Ha!  
*Plesgeth.* Our charms are all dissolv'd: Armel, away!  
 'Tis worse then hell to us, whilst here we stay. [*Exit all.*  
*Herm.* What! at a Non-plus, sir? command them back,  
 [for shame!
- 100 *Prox.* What power o're-aws my Spells? Return, you  
 Armel, Plesgeth, double damnation seize you! [Hell-hounds!  
 By all the Infernal powers, the prince of devils  
 Is in this Hermits habit: what else could force  
 My Spirits quake or tremble thus?
- 105 *Her.* Weak argument to hide your want of skill:  
 Does the devil fear the devil, or war with hell?  
 They have not been acquainted long, it seems.  
 Know, misbelieving Pagan, even that Power,  
 That overthrew your Forces, still lets you see,
- 110 He onely can controul both hell and thee.  
*Prox.* Disgrace and mischief! Ile enforce new charms,  
 New spells, and spirits rais'd from the low Abyss  
 Of hells unbottom'd depths.  
*Aurel.* We have enough, sir;  
 Give o're your charms, wee'l finde some other time
- 115 To praise your Art. I dare not but acknowledge  
 That heavenly Power my heart stands witness to:  
 Be not dismaid, my Lords, at this disaster,  
 Nor thou, my fairest Queen: we'l change the Scene  
 To some more pleasing sports. Lead to our Chamber. —
- 120 How ere in this thy pleasures finde a cross,  
 Our joy's too fixed here to suffer loss.  
*Tocio.* Which I shall adde to, sir, with news I bring:  
 The Prince, your Brother, lives.  
*Aurel.* Ha!

93. *Alarms* A, corr. by Del. — 98. *while* Tyr. — *Exeunt Spirits*  
 Tyr. and Del. — 119. *our*] *your* A and Edd.

120 *how ere* ac. *however*

*Toclío.* And comes to grace this high and heaven-knit Mar- 125

*Aurel.* Why dost thou flatter me, to make me think [riage.  
Such happiness attends me?

*Enter PRINCE VTER and OSWOLD.*

*Toclío.* His presence speaks my truth, sir.

*Dono.* 'Fore me, 'tis he: look, Gloster.

*Glost.* A blessing beyond hope, sir. 130

*Aurel.* Ha, 'tis he: welcome, my second Comfort.

Artesia, Dearest Love, it is my Brother,

My Princely Brother, all my Kingdom's hope:

Oh, give him welcome, as thou lov'st my health.

*Artes.* You have so free a welcome, sir, from me, 135

As this your presence has such power, I swear,

O're me, a stranger, that I must forget

My Countrey, Name, and Friends, and count this place

My Joy and Birthright.

*Prince.* 'Tis she! 'tis she, I swear! oh, ye good gods, 'tis she! 140

That face within those woods where first I saw her,

Captived my senses, and thus many months

Bar'd me from all society of men.

How came she to this place?

Brother Aurelius, speak that Angel's name, 145

Her heaven-blest name, oh, speak it quickly, sir.

*Aurel.* It is Artesia, the Royal Saxon Princess.

*Prince.* A woman, and no Deity, no feigned shape,

To mock the reason of admiring sense,

On whom a hope as low as mine may live, 150

Love, and enjoy, dear Brother, may it not?

*Aurel.* She is all the Good or Vertue thou canst name,

My Wife, my Queen.

*Prince.* Ha! your wife!

*Artes.* Which you shall finde, sir, if that time and fortune 155

May make my love but worthy of your tryal.

*Prince.* Oh!

*Aurel.* What troubles you, dear Brother?

129. *Force me A*, corr. by Tyr. and Del. — 140. *'Tis she* put in a line by itself by Del.

Why with so strange and fixt an eye dost thou  
160 Behold my Joys?

*Artes.* You are not well, sir.

*Prince.* Yes, yes. — Oh, you immortal powers,  
Why has poor man so many entrances  
For sorrow to creep in at, when our sense  
165 Is much too weak to hold his happiness?  
Oh, say, I was born deaf: and let your silence  
Confirm in me the knowing my defect;  
At least be charitable to conceal my sin,  
For hearing is no less in me, dear Brother.

170 *Aurel.* No more!

I see thou art a Rival in the Joys  
Of my high Bliss. Come, my Artesia;  
The Day's most prais'd when 'tis ecclipt by Night,  
Great Good must have as great Ill opposite.

175 *Prince.* Stay, hear but a word; yet now I think on't,  
This is your Wedding-night, and were it mine,  
I should be angry with least loss of time.

*Artes.* Envy speaks no such words, has no such looks.

*Prince.* Sweet rest unto you both.

180 *Aurel.* Lights to our Nuptial Chamber.

*Artes.*

Could you speak so,

I would not fear how much my grief did grow.

*Aurel.* Lights to our Chamber; on, on, set on!

[*Exeunt. Manet Prince.*]

*Prince.* 'Could you speak so,

I would not fear how much my grief did grow.'

185 Those were her very words; sure, I am waking,  
She wrung me by the hand, and spake them to me  
With a most passionate affection.

Perhaps she loves, and now repents her choice,

In marriage with my brother. Oh, fond man,

190 How darest thou trust thy Traitorous thoughts, thus to  
Betray thy self? 'twas but a waking dream,  
Wherein thou madest thy wishes speak, not her,

183. *Exeunt all except the Prince Tyr.* — 184. *griefts A*, corr. by Del. —  
190. *Traitors A*.

In which thy foolish hopes strives to prolong  
 A wretched being. So sickly children play  
 With health-lov'd toys, which for a time delay, 195  
 But do not cure the fit. Be, then, a man,  
 Meet that destruction which thou canst not flie.  
 From not to live, make it thy best to die,  
 And call her now, whom thou didst hope to wed,  
 Thy brothers wife. Thou art too nere akin, 200  
 And such an act above all name's a sin  
 Not to be blotted out; heaven pardon me!  
 She's banisht from my bosom now for ever.  
 To lowest ebbes men justly hope a flood;  
 When vice grows barren, all desires are good. 205

*Enter Waiting Gentlewoman with a Jewel.*

*Gent.* The noble Prince, I take it, sir?  
*Prince.* You speak me, what I should be, Lady.  
*Gent.* Know, by that name, sir, Queen Artesia greets you.  
*Prince.* Alas, good vertue, how is she mistaken!  
*Gent.* Commending her affection in this Jewel, sir. 210  
*Prince.* She binds my service to her: ha! a Jewel, 'tis  
 A fair one, trust me, and methinks, it much  
 Resembles something I have seen with her.  
*Gent.* It is an artificial crab, Sir.  
*Prince.* A creature that goes backward. 215  
*Gent.* True, from the way it looks.  
*Prince.* There is no moral in it aludes to her self?  
*Gent.* 'Tis your construction gives you that, sir;  
 She's a woman.  
*Prince.* And, like this, may use her legs and eyes 220  
 Two several ways.  
*Gent.* Just like the Sea-crab,  
 Which on the Mussel prayes, whilst he bills at a stone.  
*Prince.* Pretty in troth. Prithce, tell me, art thou honest?  
*Gent.* I hope I seem no other, sir.  
*Prince.* And those that seem so, are sometimes bad enough. 225

193. *strive* Tyr. and Del. — 197. No stop behind *Flie* (flie from) in Del. — 222. *mistle* Del. — 221—2, 226—30, 232—3, 237—38 are printed as prose by Del.

*Gent.* If they will accuse themselves for want of witness,  
Let them, I am not so foolish.

*Prince.* I see th'art wise.

Come, speak me truly: What is the greatest sin?

*Gent.* That which man never acted; what has been done  
230 Is as the least, common to all as one.

*Prince.* Dost think thy Lady is of thy opinion?

*Gent.* She's a bad Scholar else; I have brought her up,  
And she dares owe me still.

*Prince.* I, 'tis a fault in greatness, they dare owe  
235 Many, ere they pay one. But darest thou  
Expose thy scholar to my examining?

*Gent.* Yes, in good troth, sir, and pray put her to't too;  
'Tis a hard lesson, if she answer it not.

*Prince.* Thou know'st the hardest.

240 *Gent.* As far as a woman may, sir.

*Prince.* I commend thy plainness.

When wilt thou bring me to thy Lady?

*Gent.* Next opportunity I attend you, sir.

*Prince.* Thanks, take this, and commend me to her.

245 *Gent.* Think of your Sea-crab, sir, I pray. [Exit.

*Prince.* Oh, by any means, Lady. —

What should all this tend to?

If it be Love or Lust that thus incites her,

The sin is horrid and incestuous;

250 If to betray my life, what hopes she by it?

Yes, it may be a practice 'twixt themselves,

To expel the Brittain and ensure the State

Through our destructions; all this may be

Veil'd with a deeper reach in villany,

255 Then all my thoughts can guess at; — however,

I will confer with her, and if I finde

Lust hath given Life to Envy in her minde,

I may prevent the danger: so men wise

By the same step by which they fell, may rise;

260 Vices are Vertues, if so thought and seen,

And Trees with foulest roots branch soonest green. [Exit.

247. shall Tyr. — 253. destruction Tyr. — 254. valid A., veil'd Del.

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.

*Before the Palace of King AURELIUS.**Enter Clown and his Sister.**Clown.* Come, sister, thou that art all fool, all mad woman.*Joan.* Prithee, have patience, we are now at Court.

*Clown.* At Court! ha, ha, that proves thy madness: was  
there ever any woman in thy taking travel'd to Court for a  
husband? 'Slid, 'tis enough for them to get children, and  
the City to keep 'em, and the Countrey to finde Nurses:  
every thing must be done in his due place, sister. 5

*Joan.* Be but content a while; for, sure, I know  
This Journey will be happy. Oh, dear brother,  
This night my sweet Friend came to comfort me;  
I saw him and embrac't him in mine arms. 10

*Clown.* Why did you not hold him, and call me to help you?

*Joan.* Alas, I thought I had been with him still,  
But when I wak't —

*Clown.* A pox of all Loger-heads! then you were but in 15  
a Dream all this while, and we may still go look him. Well,  
since we are come to Court, cast your Cats eyes about you,  
and either finde him out you dreamt on, or some other, for  
Ile trouble my self no further.

*Enter DONOBERT, CADOR, EDWIN, and TOCLIO.*

See, see, here comes more Courtiers; look about you, come; 20  
pray, view 'em all well; the old man has none of the marks  
about him, the other have both Swords and Feathers: what  
thinkest thou of that tall yong Gentleman?

*Joan.* He much resembles him; but, sure, my friend,  
Brother, was not so high of stature. 25

*Clown.* Oh, beast, wast thou got a childe with a short thing too?

*Dono.* Come, come, Ile hear no more on't: Go, Lord Edwin,  
Tell her, this day her sister shall be married

ACT III. SCENE I. *Before the Palace of King Aurelius* add. by Tyr. —  
1. *that om.* by Tyr. and Del. — 15. *Ah pox A.* — 22. *both*] but Del. —  
26. *got with child* Tyr.

- To Cador, Earl of Cornwal; so shall she  
 30 To thee, brave Edwin, if she'll have my blessing.  
*Edwin.* She is addicted to a single Life,  
 She will not hear of Marriage.  
*Dono.* Tush, fear it not: go you from me to her,  
 Use your best skill, my Lord, and if you fail,  
 35 I have a trick shall do it: haste, haste about it.  
*Edwin.* Sir, I am gone;  
 My hope is in your help more then my own.  
*Dono.* And worthy Toclio, to your care I must  
 Commend this business  
 40 For Lights and Musick, and what else is needful.  
*Toclio.* I shall, my Lord.  
*Clown.* We would intreat a word, sir. Come forward, sister.  
[Exit DONO., TOC., CADOR.]  
*Edwin.* What lackst thou, fellow?  
*Clown.* I lack a father for a childe, sir.  
 45 *Edwin.* How! a God-father?  
*Clown.* No, sir, we mean the own father: it may be you,  
 sir, for any thing we know; I think the childe is like you.  
*Edwin.* Like me! prithee, where is it?  
*Clown.* Nay, 'tis not born yet, sir, 'tis forth coming; you  
 50 see, the childe must have a father: what do you think of  
 my sister?  
*Edwin.* Why, I think, if she ne're had husband, she's a  
 whore, and thou a fool. Farewell. [Exit.]  
*Clown.* I thank you, sir. Well, pull up thy heart, sister;  
 55 if there be any Law i'th' Court, this fellow shall father it,  
 'cause he uses me so scurvily. There's a great Wedding  
 towards, they say; we'll amongst them for a husband for thee.

*Enter SIR NICODEMUS with a letter.*

- If we miss there, Ile have another bout with him that abus'd  
 me. See, look, there comes another Hat and Feather, this  
 60 should be a close Letcher, he's reading of a Love-letter.

*Sir Nic.* Earl Cador's Marriage, and a Masque to grace it.  
 So, so!

57. *among Tyr.*

This night shall make me famous for Presentments. —

How now, what are you?

*Clown.* A couple of Great-Brittains, you may see by our bellies, sir. 65

*Sir Nic.* And what of this, sir?

*Clown.* Why, thus the matter stands, sir: There's one of your Courtiers Hunting Nags has made a Gap through another mans Inclosure. Now, sir, here's the question, who should be at charge of a Fur-bush to stop it? 70

*Sir Nic.* Ha, ha, this is out of my element: the Law must end it.

*Clown.* Your worship says well; for, surely, I think some Lawyer had a hand in the business, we have such a troublesome Issue. 75

*Sir Nic.* But what's thy business with me now?

*Clown.* Nay, sir, the business is done already, you may see by my sisters belly.

*Sir Nic.* Oh, now I finde thee. This Gentlewoman, it seems, has been humbled. 80

*Clown.* As low as the ground would give her leave, sir, and your Worship knows this: though there be many fathers without children, yet to have a childe without a father, were most unnatural.

*Sir Nic.* That's true, ifaith, I never heard of a childe yet that e're begot his father. 85

*Clown.* Why, true, you say wisely, sir.

*Sir Nic.* And therefore I conclude, that he that got the childe, is without all question the father of it.

*Clown.* I, now you come to the matter, sir; and our suit is to your Worship for the discovery of this father. 90

*Sir Nic.* Why, lives he in the Court here?

*Joan.* Yes, sir, and I desire but Marriage.

*Sir Nic.* And does the knave refuse it? Come, come, be merry, wench; he shall marry thee, and keep the childe too, if my Knighthood can do any thing. I am bound by mine Orders to help distressed Ladies, and can there be a greater injury to a woman with childe, then to lack a father for't? I am asham'd of your simpleness. Come, come, give me a 95

100 Courtiers' Fee for my pains, and Ile be thy Advocate my self, and justice shall be found; nay, Ile sue the Law for it; but give me my Fee first.

*Clown.* If all the money I have i'th' world will do it, you shall have it, sir.

105 *Sir Nic.* An Angel does it.

*Clown.* Nay, there's two, for your better eyesight, sir.

*Sir Nic.* Why, well said! Give me thy hand, wench, Ile teach thee a trick for all this, shall get a father for thy childe presently, and this it is, mark now: You meet a man,  
110 as you meet me now, thou claimest Marriage of me, and layest the childe to my charge; I deny it: pish, that's nothing, hold thy Claim fast, thy word carries it, and no Law can withstand it.

*Clown.* Ist possible?

115 *Sir Nic.* Past all opposition; her own word carries it. Let her challenge any man, the childe shall call him Father; there's a trick for your money now.

*Clown.* Troth, Sir, we thank you, we'l make use of your trick, and go no further to seek the childe a Father, for  
120 we challenge you, Sir: sister, lay it to him, he shall marry thee, I shall have a worshipful old man to my brother.

*Sir Nic.* Ha, ha, I like thy pleasantness.

*Joan.* Nay, indeed, Sir, I do challenge you.

*Clown.* You think we jest, sir?

125 *Sir Nic.* I, by my troth, do I. I like thy wit yfaith, thou shalt live at Court with me; didst never here of Nicodemus Nothing? I am the man.

*Clown.* Nothing? 'slid, we are out agen. Thou wast never got with childe with nothing, sure?

130 *Joan.* I know not what to say.

*Sir Nic.* Never grieve, wench, show me the man, and process shall fly out.

*Clown.* 'Tis enough for us to finde the children, we look that you should finde the Father, and therefore either do us  
135 justice, or we'l stand to our first challenge.

106. *better sight* Tyr. — 111. *push* A, corr. by Tyr. and Del. — 112. *words carries* A, *words carry* Tyr., *word carries* Del. — 119. *the childe* om. Tyr. — 128. *wert* Tyr.

*Sir Nic.* Would you have justice without an Adversary?  
Unless you can show me the man, I can do you no good in it.

*Clown.* Why, then I hope you'll do us no harm, sir; you'll restore

*Sir Nic.* What, my Fee? marry, Law forbid it! [my money.  
Finde out the party, and you shall have justice, 140  
Your fault clos'd up, and all shall be amended,  
The Childe his Father, and the Law-suit ended. [*Exit.*

*Clown.* Well, he has deserv'd his Fee, indeed, for he has  
brought our suit to a quick end, I promise you, and yet the  
Childe has never a Father; nor we have no more money to 145  
seek after him. A shame of all lecherous placcats! Now you  
look like a Cat had newly kitten'd; what will you do now,  
tro? Follow me no further, lest I beat your brains out.

*Joan.* Impose upon me any punishment,  
Rather then leave me now. 150

*Clown.* Well, I think I am bewitched with thee; I cannot  
finde in my heart to forsake her. There was never sister  
would have abus'd a poor brother as thou hast done; I am  
even pin'd away with fretting, there's nothing but flesh and  
bones about me. Well, and I had my money agen, it were 155  
some comfort. Hark, sister, does it not thunder? [*Thunder.*

*Joan.* Oh yes, most fearfully: What shall we do, brother?

*Clown.* Marry, e'en get some shelter, ere the storm catch us:  
away, let's away, I prithee.

*Enter the Devil in mans habit, richly attir'd, his feet and his  
head horrid.*

*Joan.* Ha, 'tis he! Stay, brother, dear brother, stay. 160

*Clown.* What's the matter now?

*Joan.* My love, my friend is come; yonder he goes.

*Clown.* Where, where? show me where; Ile stop him, if  
the devil be not in him.

*Joan.* Look there, look yonder! 165  
Oh, dear friend, pity my distress,

137. *do no Tyr.* — 140—41. *Find out . . . clos'd up* om. by Del. —  
142. *Child find his* Del.; *Law ended* A and Edd. — 145. *nor have we more  
money* Tyr. — 147. *now* om. Tyr. — 151. *bewitch* A, corr. by Tyr. and Del. —  
153. *I have* Tyr. — 158. *e'ene* A. — 165—66. One line in Del.

For heaven and goodness, do but speak to me.

*Devil.* She calls me, and yet drives me headlong from her.

Poor mortal, thou and I are much uneven,

170 Thou must not speak of goodness nor of heaven,

If I confer with thee; but be of comfort:

Whilst men do breath, and Britains name be known,

The fatal fruit thou bear'st within thy womb,

Shall here be famous till the day of doom.

175 *Clown.* 'Slid, who's that talks so? I can see nobody.

*Joan.* Then art thou blind or mad. See where he goes,

And beckons me to come; oh, lead me forth,

I'll follow thee in spight of fear or death. [*Exit.*

*Clown.* Oh brave! she'll run to the devil for a husband;  
180 she's stark mad, sure, and talks to a shaddow, for I could  
see no substance: Well, I'll after her; the childe was got by  
chance, and the father must be found at all adventure. [*Exit.*

## SCENE II.

### *The Porch of a Church.*

*Enter HERMIT, MODESTIA, and EDWIN.*

*Mod.* Oh, reverent sir, by you my heart hath reacht

At the large hopes of holy Piety,

And for this have I craved your company,

Here in your sight religiously to vow

5 My chaste thoughts up to heaven, and make you now

The witness of my faith.

*Her.* Angels assist thy hopes.

*Edwin.* What meanes my Love? thou art my promis'd wife.

*Mod.* To part with willingly what friends and life

10 Can make no good assurance of.

*Edwin.* Oh, finde remorse, fair soul, to love and merit,

And yet recant thy vow.

*Mod.* Never:

This world and I are parted now for ever.

15 *Her.* To finde the way to bliss, oh, happy woman,

173. *fruit*] *print* Del. — 176. *thou art* Tyr.

SCENE II. *The Porch of a Church* add. by Tyr. — 3. *have* add. by Del.

Th'ast learn'd the hardest Lesson, well I see.

Now show thy fortitude and constancy:

Let these thy friends thy sad departure weep,

Thou shalt but loose the wealth thou couldst not keep.

My contemplation calls me, I must leave ye.

20

*Edwin.* O, reverent Sir, perswade not her to leave me.

*Her.* My Lord, I do not, nor to cease to love ye;

I onely pray her faith may fixed stand;

Marriage was blest, I know, with heavens own hand. [*Exit.*

*Edwin.* You hear him, Lady, 'tis not a virgins state,

25

But sanctity of life, must make you happy.

*Mod.* Good sir, you say you love me; gentle Edwin,

Even by that love I do beseech you, leave me.

*Edwin.* Think of your fathers tears, your weeping friends,

Whom cruel grief makes pale and bloodless for you.

30

*Mod.* Would I were dead to all.

*Edwin.*

Why do you weep?

*Mod.* Oh, who would live to see

How men with care and cost seek misery?

*Edwin.* Why do you seek it then? What joy, what pleasure

Can give you comfort in a single life?

35

*Mod.* The contemplation of a happy death,

Which is to me so pleasing that I think

No torture could divert me: What's this world,

Wherein you'd have me walk, but a sad passage

To a dread Judgement-Seat, from whence even now

40

We are but bail'd, upon our good abearing,

Till that great Sessions come, when Death, the Cryer,

Will surely summon us and all to appear,

To plead us guilty or our bail to clear?

What musick's this?

[*Soft Musick.* 45

*Enter two Bishops, DONOBERT, GLOSTER, CADOR, CONSTANCIA,*

*OSWOLD, TOCLIO.*

*Edwin.* Oh, now resolve, and think upon my love!

This sounds the Marriage of your beauteous sister,

16. *lesson well, I see* Del. — 21. *her not* Tyr. — 25. *virgin state* Tyr. —  
30. *bloodless all for* Tyr. — 42. *that*] *those* Tyr. — 45. *Stage-dir. Bishops, Ed-*  
*win, Don.* corr. by Tyr.

Vertuous Constancia, with the noble Cador.

Look, and behold this pleasure.

50 *Mod.* Cover me with night,  
It is a vanity not worth the sight.

*Dono.* See, see, she's yonder.

Pass on! Son Cador, Daughter Constancia,  
I beseech you all, unless she first move speech,

55 Salute her not. — Edwin, what good success?

*Edwin.* Nothing as yet, unless this object take her.

*Dono.* See, see, her eye is fixt upon her sister;

Seem careless all, and take no notice of her: —

On afore there; come, my Constancia.

60 *Mod.* Not speak to me, nor dain to cast an eye  
To look on my despised poverty?

I must be more charitable; — pray, stay, Lady,  
Are not you she whom I did once call sister?

*Const.* I did acknowledge such a name to one,

65 Whilst she was worthy of it, in whose folly,  
Since you neglect your fame and friends together,  
In you I drown'd a sisters name for ever.

*Mod.* Your looks did speak no less.

*Glost.* It now begins to work, this sight has moved her.

70 *Dono.* I knew this trick would take, or nothing.

*Mod.* Though you disdain in me a sister's name,

Yet charity, me thinks, should be so strong

To instruct ere you reject. I am a wretch,

Even follies instance, who perhaps have er'd,

75 Not having known the goodness bears so high

And fair a show in you; which being exprest,

I may recant this low despised life,

And please those friends whom I have mov'd to grief.

*Cador.* She is coming, yfaith; be merry, Edwin.

80 *Const.* Since you desire instruction, you shall have it.

What is 't should make you thus desire to live

Vow'd to a single life?

*Mod.* Because I know I cannot flie from death.

53. *Pass on son Cador. Daughter* A and Edd. — 59. *on there afore* Tyr. — 70. *know* A and Del., *knew* Tyr. — 78 *have* add. by Del.

Oh, my good sister, I beseech you, hear me :  
 This world is but a Masque, catching weak eyes 85  
 With what is not our selves but our disguise,  
 A Vizard that falls off, the Dance being done,  
 And leaves Deaths Glass for all to look upon;  
 Our best happiness here lasts but a night,  
 Whose burning Tapers makes false Ware seem right. 90  
 Who knows not this, and will not now provide  
 Some better shift before his shame be spy'd,  
 And knowing this vain world at last will leave him,  
 Shake off these robes that help but to deceive him!

*Const.* Her words are powerful, I am amaz'd to hear her! 95

*Dono.* Her soul's enchanted with infected Spells.

Leave her, best Girl; for now in thee  
 Ile seek the fruits of Age, Posterity. —  
 Out o' my sight! sure, I was half asleep  
 Or drunk, when I begot thee. 100

*Const.* Good sir, forbear. What say you to that, sister?  
 The joy of children, a blest Mothers Name?  
 Oh, who without much grief can loose such Fame?

*Mod.* Who can enjoy it without sorrow rather?  
 And that most certain where the joy's unsure, 105  
 Seeing the fruit that we beget, endure  
 So many miseries, that oft we pray  
 The Heavens to shut up their afflicted day;  
 At best we do but bring forth Heirs to die,  
 And fill the Coffins of our enemy. 110

*Const.* Oh, my soul!

*Dono.* Hear her no more, Constantia,  
 She's sure bewicht with Error; leave her, Girl.

*Const.* Then must I leave all goodness, sir: away,  
 Stand off, I say.

*Dono.* How's this? 115

*Const.* I have no father, friend, no husband now;  
 All are but borrowed robes, in which we masque  
 To waste and spend the time, when all our Life  
 Is but one good betwixt two Ague-days,

- 120 Which from the first ere we have time to praise,  
 A second Fever takes us: Oh, my best sister,  
 My souls eternal friend, forgive the rashness  
 Of my distemper'd tongue; for how could she,  
 Knew not her self, know thy felicity,
- 125 From which worlds cannot now remove me?  
*Dono.* Art thou mad too, fond woman? What's thy meaning?  
*Const.* To seek eternal happiness in heaven,  
 Which all this world affords not.  
*Cador.* Think of thy Vow, thou art my promis'd Wife.
- 130 *Const.* Pray, trouble me no further.  
*Omnes.* Strange alteration!  
*Cador.* Why do you stand at gaze, you sacred Priests?  
 You holy men, be equal to the Gods,  
 And consummate my Marriage with this woman.  
*Bishop.* Her self gives barr, my Lord, to your desires
- 135 And our performance; 'tis against the Law  
 And Orders of the Church to force a Marriage.  
*Cador.* How am I wrong'd! Was this your trick, my Lord?  
*Dono.* I am abus'd past sufferance;  
 Grief and amazement strive which Sense of mine
- 140 Shall loose her being first. Yet let me call thee Daughter.  
*Cador.* Me, Wife.  
*Const.* Your words are air, you speak of want to wealth,  
 And wish her sickness, newly rais'd to health.  
*Dono.* Bewitched Girls, tempt not an old mans fury,
- 145 That hath no strength to uphold his feeble age,  
 But what your sights give life to. Oh, beware,  
 And do not make me curse you.  
 [Kneel.] *Mod.* Dear father,  
 Here at your feet we kneel, grant us but this,
- 150 That, in your sight and hearing, the good Hermit  
 May plead our Cause; which, if it shall not give  
 Such satisfaction as your Age desires,  
 We will submit to you.  
*Const.* You gave us life;  
 Save not our bodies, but our souls, from death.

*Dono.* This gives some comfort yet: Rise with my blessings. — 155  
 Have patience, noble Cador, worthy Edwin;  
 Send for the Hermit that we may confer.  
 For, sure, religion tyes you not to leave  
 Your careful Father thus; if so it be,  
 Take your content, and give all grief to me. [Exeunt. 160

## SCENE III.

*A cave in the Forest.*

*Thunder and Lightning; Enter Devil.*

*Devil.* Mix light and darkness; earth and heaven dissolve,  
 Be of one piece agen, and turn to Chaos;  
 Break all your works, you powers, and spoil the world,  
 Or, if you will maintain earth still, give way  
 And life to this abortive birth now coming, 5  
 Whose fame shall add unto your Oracles.  
 Lucina, Hecate, dreadful Queen of Night,  
 Bright Proserpine, be pleas'd for Ceres love,  
 From Stigian darkness summon up the Fates,  
 And in a moment bring them quickly hither, 10  
 Lest death do vent her birth and her together. [Thunder.  
 Assist, you spirits of infernal deeps,  
 Squint-ey'd Erictho, midnight Incubus,  
 Rise, rise to aid this birth prodigious.

*Enter Lucina and the three Fates.*

Thanks, Hecate; hail, sister to the Gods! 15  
 There lies your way, haste with the Fates, and help,  
 Give quick dispatch unto her laboring throws,  
 To bring this mixture of infernal seed  
 To humane being; [Exeunt Fates.  
 And to beguile her pains, till back you come, 20  
 Anticks shall dance and Musick fill the room. — [Dance.  
 Thanks, Queen of Shades.

160. *Take you content Del.*

SCENE III. *A Cave in the Forest* add. by Tyr. — 8. *from Ceres Tyr.* —  
 20. *beguil A.*

- Lucina.* Farewel, great servant to th'infernal King.  
 In honor of this childe, the Fates shall bring  
 25 All their assisting powers of Knowledge, Arts,  
 Learning, and Wisdom, all the hidden parts  
 Of all-admiring Prophecy, to fore-see  
 The event of times to come. His Art shall stand  
 A wall of brass to guard the Brittain Land.  
 30 Even from this minute, all his Arts appears  
 Manlike in Judgement, Person, State, and years.  
 Upon his brest the Fates have fixt his name,  
 And since his birthplace was this forrest here,  
 They now have nam'd him *Merlin Silvester*.  
 35 *Devil.* And Merlin's name in Brittany shall live,  
 Whilst men inhabit here or Fates can give  
 Power to amazing wonder; envy shall weep,  
 And mischief sit and shake her ebbone wings,  
 Whilst all the world of Merlins magick sings. [Exit.

## SCENE IV.

*The Forest.**Enter Clown.*

- Clown.* Well, I wonder how my poor sister does, after  
 all this thundering; I think she's dead, for I can hear no  
 tidings of her. Those woods yields small comfort for  
 her; I could meet nothing but a swinherds wife, keeping  
 5 hogs by the Forestside, but neither she nor none of her sowes  
 would stir a foot to help us; indeed, I think she durst not  
 trust her self amongst the trees with me, for I must needs  
 confess I offer'd some kindness to her. Well, I would fain  
 know what's become of my sister. If she have brought me  
 10 a yong Cousin, his face may be a picture to finde his  
 Father by. So ho! sister Joan, Joan Go-too't, where art  
 thou?

*Joan. (within).* Here, here, brother, stay but a while, I  
 come to thee.

26. and add. by Del. — 30. *Art Tyr.* — 35. *Brittain A.*

SCENE IV. *The Forest* add. by Tyr. — 3. *These Tyr.; yield Tyr.* and  
 Del.; for] to Tyr. — 7. *amongst]* under Tyr. — 11. *so oh A.*

*Clown.* O brave! she's alive still, I know her voice, she  
speaks, and speaks cherfully, methinks. How now, what  
Moon-calf has she got with her? 15

*Enter JOAN and MERLIN with a Book.*

*Joan.* Come, my dear Merlin, why dost thou fix thine eye  
So deeply on that book?

*Merlin.* To sound the depth  
Of Arts, of Learning, Wisdom, Knowledge. 20

*Joan.* Oh, my dear, dear son,  
Those studies fits thee when thou art a man.

*Merlin.* Why, mother, I can be but half a man at best,  
And that is your mortality; the rest  
In me is spirit; 'tis not meat, nor time, 25  
That gives this growth and bigness; no, my years  
Shall be more strange then yet my birth appears.  
Look, mother, there's my Uncle.

*Joan.* How doest thou know him, son? thou never sawst him.

*Merlin.* Yet I know him, and know the pains he has taken 30  
for ye, to finde out my Father. — Give me your hand, good Uncle.

*Clown.* Ha, ha, I'de laugh at that, yfaith. Do you know me, sir?

*Merlin.* Yes, by the same token that even now you kist the  
swinherds wife i'th' woods, and would have done more, if she  
would have let you, Uncle. 35

*Clown.* A witch, a witch, a witch, sister! Rid him out of  
your company, he is either a witch or a conjurer; he could  
never have known this else.

*Joan.* Pray, love him, brother, he is my son.

*Clown.* Ha, ha, this is worse then all the rest yfaith; by 40  
his beard, he is more like your husband. Let me see, is your  
great belly gone?

*Joan.* Yes, and this the happy fruit.

*Clown.* What, this Hartichoke? A Childe born with a beard  
on his face? 45

*Merlin.* Yes, and strong legs to go, and teeth to eat.

*Clown.* You can nurse up your self, then? There's some charges sav'd for Soap and Candle. 'Slid, I have heard of some that has been born with teeth, but never none with  
50 such a talking tongue before.

*Joan.* Come, come, you must use him kindly, brother; Did you but know his worth, you would make much of him.

*Clown.* Make much of a Moncky? This is worse then *Tom Thumb*, that let a fart in his Mothers belly; a Childe to  
55 speak, eat, and go the first hour of his birth, nay, such a Baby as had need of a Barber before he was born too, why, sister, this is monstrous, and shames all our kindred.

*Joan.* That thus 'gainst nature and our common births He comes thus furnisht to salute the world,  
60 Is power of Fates, and gift of his great father.

*Clown.* Why, of what profession is your father, sir?

*Merlin.* He keeps a Hot-house i'th' Low-Countries; will you see him, sir?

*Clown.* See him? why, sister, has the childe found his father?

65 *Mer.* Yes, and Ile fetch him, Uncle. [*Exit.*]

*Clown.* Do not Uncle me, till I know your kindred. Fore my conscience, some Baboon begot thee. — Surely, thou art horribly deceived, sister, this Urchin cannot be of thy breeding; I shall be asham'd to call him cousin, though his father  
70 be a Gentleman.

*Enter MERLIN and DEVIL.*

*Merlin.* Now, my kinde Uncle, see:

The Childe has found his Father, this is he.

*Clown.* The devil it is; ha, ha, is this your sweet-heart, sister? have we run through the Countrey, haunted the City,  
75 and examin'd the Court to finde out a Gallant with a Hat and Feather, and a silken Sword, and golden Hangers, and do you now bring me to a Ragamuffin with a face like a Frying-pan?

*Joan.* Fie, brother, you mistake, behold him better.

49. have been Tyr. — 54. that . . . belly om. Tyr. — 66. for A and Del., fore Tyr.

Missing Page

Missing Page

To meet bold Edol, their stern General,  
 That now, contrary to the Kings command, 25  
 Hath re-united all his cashier'd Troops,  
 And this way beats his drums to threaten us.  
*Ocla.* Then our Plot is discover'd.  
*Ostor.* Come, th'art a fool, his Army and his life  
 Is given unto us: where is the Queen my sister? 30  
*Ocla.* In conference with the Prince.  
*Ostor.* Bring the Guards nearer, all is fair and good;  
 Their Conference, I hope, shall end in blood. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VI.

*A Room in the Palace.**Enter PRINCE and ARTESIA.*

*Artes.* Come, come, you do but flatter;  
 What you term Love, is but a Dream of blood,  
 Wakes with injoying, and with open eyes  
 Forgot, contemn'd, and lost.  
*Prince.* I must be wary, her words are dangerous. — 5  
 True, we'll speak of Love no more, then.  
*Artes.* Nay, if you will, you may;  
 'Tis but in jest, and yet so children play  
 With fiery flames, and covet what is bright,  
 But, feeling his effects, abhor the light. 10  
 Pleasure is like a Building, the more high,  
 The narrower still it grows; Cedars do dye  
 Soonest at top.  
*Prince.* How does your instance suit?  
*Artes.* From Art and Nature to make sure the root, 15  
 And lay a fast foundation, ere I try  
 The incertain Changes of a wavering Skie.  
 Make your example thus. — You have a kiss, —  
 Was it not pleasing?  
*Prince.* Above all name to express it.

28. *Plot's A.*

SCENE VI. No new scene in Edd. — 14. *instanced A*, corr. by Tyr.  
 and Del.

- 20 *Artes.* Yet now the pleasure's gone,  
And you have lost your joys possession.  
*Prince.* Yet when you please, this flood may ebb again.  
*Artes.* But where it never ebbs, there runs the main.  
*Prince.* Who can attain such hopes?
- 25 *Artes.* Ile show the way to it, give you  
A taste once more of what you may enjoy. [Kiss.  
*Prince.* Impudent whore! —  
I were more false than Atheism can be,  
Should I not call this high felicity.
- 30 *Artes.* If I should trust your faith, alas, I fear,  
You soon would change belief.  
*Prince.* I would covet Martyrdom to make't confirm'd.  
*Artes.* Give me your hand on that you'll keep your word?  
*Prince.* I will.
- 35 *Artes.* Enough: Help, husband, king Aurelius, help!  
Rescue betraid Artesia!  
*Prince.* Nay, then 'tis I that am betraid, I see;  
Yet with thy blood Ile end thy Treachery.  
*Artes.* How now? what troubles you? Is this you, sir,
- 40 That but even now would suffer Martyrdom  
To win your hopes, and is there now such terror  
In names of men to fright you? nay, then I see  
What mettle you are made on.  
*Prince.* Ha! was it but tryal? then I ask your pardon:
- 45 What a dull slave was I to be so fearful! —  
Ile trust her now no more, yet try the utmost. —  
I am resolved, no brother, no man breathing,  
Were he my bloods begetter, should withhold  
Me from your love; I 'd leap into his bosom,
- 50 And from his brest pull forth that happiness  
Heaven had reserved in you for my enjoying.  
*Artes.* I, now you speak a Lover like a Prince! —  
Treason, treason!  
*Prince.* Agen?
- 55 *Artes.* Help, Saxon Princes: Treason!

*Enter OSTORIUS, OCTA &c.*

*Ostor.* Rescue the Queen: strike down the Villain.

*Enter EDOL, AURELIUS, DONOBERT, CADOR, EDWIN, TOCLIO,  
OSWOLD, at the other door.*

*Edol.* Call in the Guards: the Prince in danger! —  
Fall back, dear Sir, my brest shall buckler you.

*Aurel.* Beat down their weapons!

*Edol.* Slave, wert thou made of brass, my sword shall bite thee. 60

*Aurel.* Withdraw, on pain of death! Where is the Traitor?

*Artes.* Oh, save your life, my Lord; let it suffice,  
My beauty forc't mine own captivity.

*Aurel.* Who did attempt to wrong thee?

*Prince.* Hear me, Sir.

*Aurel.* Oh, my sad soul! wast thou? 65

*Artes.* Oh, do not stand to speak; one minutes stay  
Prevents a second speech for ever.

*Aurel.* Make our Guards strong:  
My dear Artesia, let us know thy wrongs  
And our own dangers. 70

*Artes.* The Prince your brother, with these Brittain Lords,  
Have all agreed to take me hence by force  
And marry me to him.

*Prince.* The Devil shall wed thee first:  
Thy baseness and thy lust confound and rot thee! 75

*Artes.* He courted me even now, and in mine ear  
Sham'd not to plead his most dishonest love  
And their attempts to seize your sacred person,  
Either to shut you up within some prison,  
Or, which is worse, I fear, to murder you. 80

*Omnes Brittains.* 'Tis all as false as hell.

*Edol.* And as foul as she is.

*Artes.* You know me, Sir?

*Edol.* Yes, Deadly Sin, we know you,  
And shall discover all your villany.

*Aurel.* Chester, forbear! 85

66. *not stay Tyr.* — 81. *'tis false as Tyr.*

*Ostor.* Their treasons, sir, are plain:

Why are their Souldiers lodg'd so near the Court?

*Octa.* Nay, why came he in arms so suddenly?

*Edol.* You fleering Anticks, do not wake my fury.

90 *Octa.* Fury?

*Edol.* Ratsbane, do not urge me.

*Artes.* Good sir, keep farther from them.

*Prince.* Oh, my sick heart!

She is a witch by nature, devil by art.

95 *Aurel.* Bite thine own slanderous tongue; 'tis thou art false,  
I have observ'd your passions long ere this.

*Ostor.* Stand on your guard, my Lord, we are your friends,  
And all our Force is yours.

*Edol.* To spoil and rob the Kingdom.

*Aurel.*

Sir, be silent.

100 *Edol.* Silent! how long? till Doomsday? shall I stand by.  
And hear mine Honor blasted with foul Treason,  
The State half lost, your life endangered,  
And yet be silent?

*Artes.* Yes, my blunt Lord, unless you speak your Treasons.

105 Sir, let your Guards, as Traitors, seize them all,  
And then let tortures and devulsive racks  
Force a confession from them.

*Edol.* Wilde-fire and Brimstone eat thee! Hear me, sir!

*Aurel.* Sir, Ile not hear you.

*Edol.*

But you shall! Not hear me?

110 Were the worlds Monarch, Cesar, living, he should hear me.  
I tell you, Sir, these serpents have betrayed  
Your Life and Kingdom: does not every day  
Bring tidings of more swarms of lowsie slaves,  
The offal fugitives of barren Germany,  
115 That land upon our Coasts, and by our neglect  
Settled in Norfolk and Northumberland?

*Ostor.* They come as Aids and Safeguards to the King.

*Octa.* Has he not need, when Vortiger's in arms,  
And you raise Powers, 'tis thought, to joyn with him?

102. *and your life endanger'd, yet* A and Edd. — 110. Two lines in Del., div. at *he.* — 113. *knaves* Tyr. — 115. *and have by* Tyr.

*Edol.* Peace, you pernicious Rat.

120

*Dono.*

Prithee, forbear.

*Edol.* Away, suffer a gilded rascal,

A low-bred despicable creeper, an insulting Toad,  
To spit his poison'd venome in my face!

*Octa.* Sir, sir!

*Edol.* Do not reply, you Cur; for, by the Gods, 125

Tho' the Kings presence guard thee, I shall break all patience,

And, like a Lion rous'd to spoil, shall run

Foul-mouth'd upon thee, and devour thee quick. —

Speak, sir, will you forsake these scorpions,

Or stay till they have stung you to the heart? 130

*Aurel.* Y'are traitors all. This is our wife, our Queen:

Brother Ostorius, troop your Saxons up,

We'll hence to Winchester, and raise more powers,

To man with strength the Castle Camilot. —

Go hence, false men, joyn you with Vortiger, 135

The murderer of our brother Constantine:

We'll hunt both him and you with dreadful vengeance.

Since Brittain fails, we'll trust to forrain friends,

And guard our person from your traitorous ends.

[*Exeunt AUREL., OSTOR., OCTA, ARTES., TOC., OSW.*]

*Edwin.* He's sure bewitch't.

*Glost.* What counsel now for safety? 140

*Dono.* Onely this, sir: with all the speed we can,

Preserve the person of the King and Kingdom.

*Cador.* Which to effect, 'tis best march hence to Wales,

And set on Vortiger before he joyn

His Forces with the Saxons. 145

*Edwin.* On, then, with speed for Wales and Vortiger!

That tempest once o'reblown, we come, Ostorius,

To meet thy traiterous Saxons, thee and them,

That with advantage thus have won the King,

To back your factions and to work our ruines. 150

This, by the Gods and my good Sword, I'll set

In bloody lines upon thy Burgonet. [*Exeunt.*]

133. *and* not in A and Edd. — 137. *vengeance* A. — 140. *bewitch* A,  
corr. by Tyr. and Del. — 144. *joins* Tyr. — 150. *ruin* Tyr.

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.

*Before a Ruined Castle in Wales.*

*Enter CLOWN, MERLIN, and a little antick Spirit.*

*Mer.* How now, Uncle? Why do you search your pockets so? Do you miss any thing?

*Clown.* Ha! Cousin Merlin, I hope your beard does not overgrow your honesty; I pray, remember, you are made up  
5 of sisters thread, I am your mothers brother, whosoever was your father.

*Mer.* Why, wherein can you task my duty, Uncle?

*Clown.* Your self or your page it must be, I have kept no other company, since your mother bound your head to my  
10 Protectorship; I do feel a fault of one side; either it was that Sparrowhawk, or a Cast of Merlins, for I finde a Covey of Cardecus sprung out of my pocket.

*Mer.* Why, do you want any money, Uncle? Sirrah, had you any from him?

*Clown.* Deny it not, for my pockets are witness against you.

*Spirit.* Yes, I had, to teach you better wit to look to it.

*Clown.* Pray, use your fingers better, and my wit may serve as it is, sir.

*Mer.* Well, restore it.

*Spirit.* There it is.

*Clown.* I, there's some honesty in this; 'twas a token from your invisible Father, Cousin, which I would not have to go invisibly from me agen.

*Mer.* Well, you are sure you have it now, Uncle?

*Clown.* Yes, and mean to keep it now from your pages  
25 filching fingers too.

*Spirit.* If you have it so sure, pray show it me agen.

*Clown.* Yes, my little juggler, I dare show it. Ha, cleanly conveyance agen! Ye have no invisible fingers, have ye? 'Tis

30 gone, certainly.

*Spirit.* Why, sir, I toucht you not.

ACT IV. SCENE I. *Before a Ruined Castle in Wales.* add. by Tyr. —  
5. of my sisters Del.; whoever Tyr. — 11. Cony A and Tyr., corr. by Del.

*Mer.* Why, look you, Uncle, I have it now. How ill do you look to it. Here, keep it safer.

*Clown.* Ha, ha, this is fine, yfaith. I must keep some other company, if you have these slights of hand. 35

*Mer.* Come, come, Uncle, 'tis all my Art which shall not offend you, sir, onely I give you a taste of it to show you sport.

*Clown.* Oh, but 'tis ill jesting with a mans pocket, tho'. But I am glad to see your cunning, Cousin, for now will I warrant thee a living till thou diest. You have heard the news in Wales here? 40

*Mer.* Uncle, let me prevent your care and counsel,  
'Twill give you better knowledge of my cunning.  
You would prefer me now, in hope of gain, 45  
To Vortiger, King of the Welsh Brittaines,  
To whom are all the Artists summon'd now,  
That seeks the secrets of futurity,  
The Bards, the Druids, Wizards, Conjurers,  
Not an Aruspex with his whisling spells, 50  
No Capnomancer with his musty fumes,  
No Witch or Juggler, but is thither sent,  
To calculate the strange and fear'd event  
Of his prodigious Castle, now in building,  
Where all the labors of the painful day 55  
Are ruin'd still i'th' night, and to this place  
You would have me go.

*Clown.* Well, if thy mother were not my sister, I would say she was a witch that begot thee; but this is thy father, not thy mother wit. Thou hast taken my tale into thy mouth, 60  
and spake my thoughts before me; therefore away, shuffle thy self amongst the Conjurers, and be a made man before thou comest to age.

*Mer.* Nay, but stay, Uncle, you overslip my dangers:  
The Prophecies and all the cunning Wizards 65  
Have certifi'd the king that this his Castle

40. *you* A. — 40. *I will* Tyr. — 48. *seek* Tyr. and Del. — 50. *Aura-*  
*spex* A. — 51. *Capuomanster* A. — 54. *this*] *his* Tyr. — 59. *thee*] *this* A. —  
60. *taken away my* Tyr. — 61. *thoughts*] *words* Del. — 66. *this* om. Tyr.

Can never stand, till the foundation's laid  
With Mortar temper'd with the fatal blood  
Of such a childe whose father was no mortal.

70 *Clown.* What's this to thee? If the devil were thy father,  
was not thy mother born at Carmarden? Diggon for that,  
then; and then it must be a childe's blood, and who will  
take thee for a childe with such a beard of thy face? Is  
there not diggon for that too, Cousin?

75 *Mer.* I must not go: lend me your ear a while,  
I'll give you reasons to the contrary.

*Enter two Gentlemen.*

1. *Gent.* Sure, this is an endless piece of work the king has  
sent us about!

2. *Gent.* Kings may do it, man; the like has been done to  
80 finde out the Unicorn.

1. *Gent.* Which will be sooner found, I think, then this  
fiend-begotten childe we seek for.

2. *Gent.* Pox of those Conjurers that would speak of such  
a one, and yet all their cunning could not tell us where to  
85 finde him.

1. *Gent.* In Wales they say assuredly he lives; come, let's  
enquire further.

*Mer.* Uncle, your perswasions must not prevail with me:  
I know mine enemies better then you do.

90 *Clown.* I say, th'art a bastard then, if thou disobey thine  
Uncle. Was not Joan Go-too't, thy mother, my sister? If  
the devil were thy father, what kin art thou to any man  
alive, but Bailys and Brokers? and they are but brothers in  
Law to thee neither.

95 1. *Gent.* How's this? I think we shall speed here.

2. *Gent.* I, and unlook't for too. Go near and listen to them.

*Clown.* Hast thou a beard to hide it? Wilt thou show  
thy self a childe? Wilt thou have more hair then wit? Wilt  
thou deny thy mother, because no body knows thy father?  
100 Or shall thine Uncle be an ass?

1. *Gent.* Bless ye, friend: pray, what call you this small Gentlemans name?

*Clown.* Small, sir? a small man may be a great Gentleman; his father may be of an ancient house, for ought we know, sir.

2. *Gent.* Why, do you not know his father? 105

*Clown.* No, nor you neither, I think, unless the devil be in ye.

1. *Gent.* What is his name, sir?

*Clown.* His name is my Cousin, sir; his education is my sisters son, but his maners are his own.

*Mer.* Why ask ye, Gentlemen? my name is Merlin. 110

*Clown.* Yes, and a Goshawk was his father, for ought we know; for I am sure his mother was a Wind-sucker.

2. *Gent.* He has a mother, then?

*Clown.* As sure as I have a sister, sir.

1. *Gent.* But his father you leave doubtful. 115

*Clown.* Well, Sir, as wise men as you doubt, whether he had a father or no?

1. *Gent.* Sure, this is he we seek for.

2. *Gent.* I think no less: and, sir, we let you know the King hath sent for you. 120

*Clown.* The more childe he; and he had bin rul'd by me, he should have gone before he was sent for.

1. *Gent.* May we not see his mother?

*Clown.* Yes, and feel her too, if you anger her; a devilish thing, I can tell ye, she has been. Ile go fetch her to ye. [*Exit.* 125

2. *Gent.* Sir, it were fit you did resolve for speed, You must unto the King.

*Mer.* My service, sir,  
Shall need no strickt command, it shall obey  
Most peaceably; but needless 'tis to fetch  
What is brought home. My journey may be staid, 130  
The King is coming hither  
With the same quest you bore before him; hark,  
This drum will tell ye. [*Within Drums beat a low March.*

1. *Gent.* This is some cunning indeed, sir.

*Florish. Enter VORTIGER, reading a letter, PROXIMUS,  
with Drum and Soldiers, &c.*

- 135 *Vort.* Still in our eye your message, Proximus,  
We keep to spur our speed:  
Ostorius and Octa we shall salute  
With succor against Prince Vter and Aurelius,  
Whom now we hear incamps at Winchester.  
140 There's nothing interrupts our way so much  
As doth the erection of this fatal Castle,  
That spite of all our Art and daily labor  
The night still ruins.

- Prox.* As erst I did affirm, still I maintain,  
145 The fiend-begotten childe must be found out,  
Whose blood gives strength to the foundation;  
It cannot stand else.

*Enter CLOWN and JOAN, joining MERLIN.*

- Vort.* Ha! Is't so?  
Then, Proximus, by this intelligence  
He should be found: speak, is this he you tell of?  
150 *Clown.* Yes, Sir, and I his Uncle, and she his mother.  
*Vort.* And who is his father?  
*Clown.* Why, she his mother can best tell you that, and  
yet I thinke the childe be wise enough, for he has found his  
father.  
155 *Vort.* Woman, is this thy son?  
*Joan.* It is, my Lord.  
*Vort.* What was his father? Or where lives he?  
*Mer.* Mother, speak freely and unastonisht;  
That which you dar'd to act, dread not to name.  
160 *Joan.* In which I shall betray my sin and shame.  
But since it must be so, then, know, great King,  
All that my self yet knows of him is this:  
In pride of blood and beauty I did live,  
My glass the Altar was, my face the Idol;  
165 Such was my peevish love unto my self,  
That I did hate all other; such disdain

139. *encamp'd Del.* — 141. *famous Castle Tyr.* — 147. *Enter CLOWN  
and JOAN, MERLIN A.*

Was in my scornful eye that I suppos'd  
 No mortal creature worthy to enjoy me.  
 Thus with the Peacock I beheld my train,  
 But never saw the blackness of my feet; 170  
 Oft have I chid the winds for breathing on me,  
 And curst the Sun, fearing to blast my beauty.  
 In midst of this most leaprous disease,  
 A seeming fair young man appear'd unto me,  
 In all things suiting my aspiring pride, 175  
 And with him brought along a conquering power,  
 To which my frailty yielded; from whose embraces  
 This issue came; what more he is, I know not.

*Vort.* Some Incubus or Spirit of the night  
 Begot him then, for, sure, no mortal did it. 180

*Mer.* No matter who, my Lord; leave further quest,  
 Since 'tis as hurtful as unnecessary  
 More to enquire: Go to the cause, my Lord,  
 Why you have sought me thus?

*Vort.* I doubt not but thou knowst; yet, to be plain, 185  
 I sought thee for thy blood.

*Mer.* By whose direction?

*Prox.* By mine;  
 My art infallible instructed me,  
 Upon thy blood must the foundation rise 190  
 Of the Kings building, it cannot stand else.

*Mer.* Hast thou such leisure to enquire my Fate,  
 And let thine own hang careless over thee?  
 Knowst thou what pendelous mischief roofs thy head,  
 How fatal, and how sudden? 195

*Prox.* Pish!  
 Bearded abortive, thou foretel my danger? —  
 My Lord, he trifles to delay his own.

*Mer.* No, I yield my self: and here before the King  
 Make good thine Augury, as I shall mine. 200  
 If thy fate fall not, thou hast spoke all truth,  
 And let my blood satisfie the Kings desires:  
 If thou thy self wilt write thine Epitaph,

- Dispatch it quickly, there's not a minutes time  
 205 Betwixt thee and thy death. [*A stone falls and kills Proximus.*  
*Prox.* Ha, ha, ha!  
*Mer.* I, so thou mayest die laughing.  
*Vort.* Ha! This is above admiration. Look, is 'he dead?  
*Clown.* Yes, sir, here's brains to make mortar on, if you'l  
 210 use them. — Cousin Merlin, there's no more of this stone fruit  
 ready to fall, is there? I pray, give your Uncle a little fair  
 warning.  
*Mer.* Remove that shape of death. And now, my Lord,  
 For clear satisfaction of your doubts, Merlin will show  
 215 The fatal cause that keeps your Castle down,  
 And hinders your proceedings.  
 Stand there, and by an apparition see  
 The labor and the end of all your destiny.  
 Mother and Uncle, you must be absent.  
 220 *Clown.* Is your father coming, Cousin?  
*Mer.* Nay, you must be gone.  
*Joan.* Come, you'll offend him, brother.  
*Clown.* I would fain see my brother i'law; if you were  
 married, I might lawfully call him so.  
 [*Exeunt* JOAN and CLOWN. MERLIN strikes his wand.  
*Thunder and Lightning; two Dragons appear, a*  
*White and a Red; they fight a while, and pause.*  
 225 *Vort.* What means this stay?  
*Mer.* Be not amaz'd, my Lord, for on the victory,  
 Of loss or Gain, as these two Champions ends,  
 Your fate, your life, and kingdom, all depends;  
 Therefore observe it well.  
 230 *Vort.* I shall. Heaven be auspicious to us.  
 [*Thunder: The two Dragons fight agen, and the White*  
*Dragon drives off the Red.*

204. *time*] *space* Tyr. — 205. 'twixt A; *and death* Tyr. Elze, Notes, Vol. II, p. 1 supposes ll. 209 and 210 to form one verse; but we must not forget that lines with three or four feet very often occur in our play. — 215. *your fatal Castle* A, corr. by Tyr. and Del. — 218. *and end* A and Edd. — 224. *Exeunt Joan and Clown.* om. A. — 225. Om. by Tyr.; *stay*. Elze, l. c. II, p. 2 proposes to read *play*, but *stay* directly refers to the preceding stage-dir. *and pause*.

*Vort.* The conquest is on the white Dragons part.  
Now, Merlin, faithfully expound the meaning.

*Mer.* Your Grace must then not be offended with me.

*Vort.* It is the weakest part I found in thee,  
To doubt of me so slightly. Shall I blame 235  
My prophet that foretells me of my dangers?  
Thy cunning I approve most excellent.

*Mer.* Then know, my Lord, there is a dampish Cave,  
The nightly habitation of these Dragons,  
Vaulted beneath where you would build your Castle, 240  
Whose enmity and nightly combats there  
Maintain a constant ruine of your labors.  
To make it more plain, the Dragons, then,  
Your self betoken and the Saxon King;  
The vanquisht Red is, sir, your dreadful Emblem. 245

*Vort.* Oh, my fate!

*Mer.* Nay, you must hear with patience, Royal sir.  
You slew the lawful King Constantius:  
'Twas a red deed, your Crown his blood did cement.  
The English Saxon, first brought in by you 250  
For aid against Constantius brethren,  
Is the white horror who now, knit together,  
Have driven and shut you up in these wilde mountains; .  
And though they now seek to unite with friendship,  
It is to wound your bosom, not embrace it, 255  
And with an utter exstirpation  
To rout the Britains out, and plant the English.  
Seek for your safety, Sir, and spend no time  
To build the airy Castles; for Prince Vter,  
Armed with vengeance for his brothers blood, 260  
Is hard upon you. If you mistrust me,  
And to my words crave witness, sir, then know,  
Here comes a messenger to tell you so. [Exeunt.

*Enter Messenger.*

*Mes.* My Lord! Prince Vter!

*Vort.* And who else, sir? 265

234. *Is it Del.; I have found Tyr.* — 242. *of our labour Tyr.* —  
257. *To rout] Drive Tyr.* — 262. *craves A, corr. by Tyr. and Del.*

*Mes.* Edol, the great General.

*Vort.* The great Devil! They are coming to meet us.

*Mes.* With a full power, my Lord.

*Vort.* With a full vengeance

They mean to meet us; so we are ready

270 To their confront. At full march, double footing,

We'll loose no ground, nor shall their numbers fright us:

If it be Fate, it cannot be withstood;

We got our Crown so, be it lost in blood. [Exeunt.

## SCENE II.

*Open Country in Wales.*

*Enter* PRINCE VTER, EDOL, CADOR, EDWIN, TOCLIO,  
with Drum and Soldiers.

*Prince.* Stay, and advice; hold, drum!

*Edol.* Beat, slave! Why do you pause?

Why make a stand? where are our enemies?

Or do you mean we fight amongst our selves?

5 *Prince.* Nay, noble Edol,

Let us here take counsel, it cannot hurt,

It is the surest Garison to safety.

*Edol.* Fie on such slow delays! So fearful men,

That are to pass over a flowing river,

10 Stand on the bank to parly of the danger,

Till the tide rise, and then be swallowed.

Is not the King in field?

*Cador.* Proud Vortiger, the Traitor, is in field.

*Edwin.* The Murderer and Usurper.

15 *Edol.* Let him be the devil, so I may fight with him.

For heavens love, sir, march on!

Oh, my patience! will you delay,

Untill the Saxons come to aid his party? [A Tucket.

*Prince.* There's no such fear: prithee, be calm a while.

270. *As full A. and Tyr.; confront, at full march double footing.* Del.

SCENE II. *Open Country in Wales.* add. by Tyr. — 5—6. One line in Del. — 6. Read *Let's here* | *take coun* | *sel, it* | *can't hurt, or coun* | *sel, —* | *it can* | *not hurt* |. Elze, Notes I, p. 2. proposes to read *Let us take counsel here.* — 11. then] *they* Tyr. — 15—16. Div. at *devil* Del.

Hark! It seems by this, he comes or sends to us. 20

*Edol.* If it be for parly, I will drown the summons,  
If all our drums and hoarseness choke me not.

*Enter Captain.*

*Prince.* Nay, prithee, hear. — From whence art thou?

*Cap.* From the King Vortiger.

*Edol.* Traitor, there's none such: Alarum, drum, strike, slave, 25  
Or, by mine honor, I will break thy head,  
And beat thy drumsticks both about thine ears.

*Prince.* Hold, noble Edol,  
Let's hear what Articles he can inforce.

*Edol.* What articles or what conditions 30  
Can you expect to value half your wrong,  
Unless he kill himself by thousand tortures,  
And send his carcase to appease your vengeance  
For the foul murder of Constantius,  
And that 's not a tenth part neither. 35

*Prince.* 'Tis true,  
My brothers blood is crying to me now,  
I do applaud thy counsel: hence, be gone! — [*Exit Captain.*  
We'll hear no parly now but by our swords.

*Edol.* And those shall speak home in death-killing words: 40  
Alarum to the fight; sound, sound the Alarum. [*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III.

*A Field of Battle.*

*Alarum.* *Enter* EDOL, *driving all* VORTIGERS *Force before him,*  
*then exit.* *Enter* PRINCE VTER *pursuing* VORTIGER.

*Vort.* Dost follow me?

*Prince.* Yes, to thy death I will.

*Vort.* Stay, be advis'd;  
I would not be the onely fall of Princes,  
I slew thy brother.

22. *me* twice in A and Tyr. — 25—27. Div. at *such* | *honor* | *both* |  
*ears* Del. — 27. *drums heads* A, corr. by Del. — 38. *your counsel* Tyr., *thy*  
*counsels* Del.

SCENE III. *A Field of Battle* add. by Tyr. — 1. *the death* Tyr. —  
3. *It would* Del.

- 5 *Prince.* Thou didst,  
 Black Traitor, and in that vengeance I pursue thee.  
*Vort.* Take mercy for thy self, and flie my sword,  
 Save thine own life as satisfaction,  
 Which here I give thee for thy brothers death.
- 10 *Prince.* Give what's thine own: a Traitors heart and head,  
 That 's all thou art right Lord of. The Kingdom  
 Which thou usurp'st, thou most unhappy Tyrant,  
 Is leaving thee; the Saxons which thou broughtst  
 To back thy usurpations, are grown great,
- 15 And where they seat themselves, do hourly seek  
 To blot the Records of old Brute and Brittain's  
 From memory of men, calling themselves  
 Hingest-men, and Brittain Hingest-land, that no more  
 The Brittain name be known: all this by thee,
- 20 Thou base destroyer of thy Native Countrey.

*Enter EDOL.*

*Edol.* What, stand you talking? Fight!

*Prince.* Hold, Edol.

*Edol.* Hold out, my sword,

And listen not to King or Princes word;

- 25 There's work enough abroad, this task is mine. [*Alarum.*

*Prince.* Prosper thy Valour, as thy Vertues shine. [*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE IV.

*Another Part of the Field of Battle.*

*Enter CADOR and EDWIN.*

*Cador.* Bright Victory her self fights on our part,  
 And, buckled in a golden Beaver, rides  
 Triumphant before us.

*Edw.* Justice is with her,

- 5 Who ever takes the true and rightful cause.  
 Let us not lag behinde them.

7. *flee* Tyr. — 18. *Brittain* om. in A and Edd. — 21. *are you*  
 Tyr.; *Fight* printed as stage-dir. in A; Tyr. omitting *fight* adds [*He*  
*attacks Vort.*].

SCENE IV. No new scene in Tyr.

*Enter PRINCE.*

*Cador.* Here comes the Prince. How goes our fortunes, Sir?

*Prince.* Hopeful and fair, brave Cador.

Proud Vortiger, beat down by Edols sword,  
Was rescu'd by the following multitudes, 10  
And now for safety's fled unto a Castle  
Here standing on the hill: but I have sent  
A cry of hounds as violent as hunger,  
To break his stony walls; or, if they fail,  
We'll send in wilde fire to dislodge him thence, 15  
Or burn them all with flaming violence. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE V.

*Another Part of the Field.*

*Blazing Star appears.*

*Florish Trumpets.* *Enter* PRINCE VTER, EDOL, CADOR, EDWIN,  
TOCLIO, *with Drum and Soldiers.*

*Prince.* Look, Edol: still this fiery exalation shoots  
His frightful horrors on th'amazed world;  
See, in the beam that's 'bout his flaming ring,  
A Dragons head appears, from out whose mouth  
Two flaming flakes of fire stretch East and West. 5

*Edol.* And see, from forth the body of the Star  
Seven smaller blazing streams directly point  
On this affrighted kingdom.

*Cador.* 'Tis a dreadful Meteor.

*Edwin.* And doth portend strange fears. 10

*Prince.* This is no Crown of Peace; this angry fire  
Hath something more to burn then Vortiger;  
If it alone were pointed at his fall,  
It would pull in his blasing Piramids  
And be appeas'd, for Vortiger is dead. 15

*Edol.* These never come without their large effects.

7. *go Del.* — 14. *strong walls Tyr.* — 16. *with all Tyr.*

SCENE V. *Another Part of the Field.* add. by Tyr. — 1. *Look, Edol*  
put by Elze (Notes I., p. 3) in a line by itself. — 3. *that 'bout A and Del.,*  
corr. by Tyr. — 5. *flames] snakes Tyr.* — 14. *his] its Tyr.*

90 By me hath sent a nimble-ioynted iennet,  
 As swift as euer yet thou didst bestride,  
 And therewithall he counsels thee to flie;  
 Else death himself hath sworne that thou shalt die.

*Pr. Edw.* Back with the beast vnto the beast that sent him!

95 Tell him, I cannot sit a cowards horse;  
 Bid him to-daie bestride the iade himselfe;  
 For I will staine my horse quite ore with bloud,  
 And double guild my spurs, but I will catch him;  
 So tell the carping boy, and get thee gone. [*Exit Herald.*]

*Enter another Herald.*

100 *Her.* Edward of Wales, Phillip, the second sonne  
 To the most mightie christian king of France,  
 Seeing thy bodies liuing-date expird,  
 All full of charitie and christian loue,  
 Commends this booke, full fraught with holy prayers,  
 105 To thy faire hand, and, for thy houre of lyfe,  
 Intreats thee that thou meditate therein,  
 And arme thy soule for hir long iourney towards.  
 Thus haue I done his bidding, and returne.

*Pr. Edw.* Herald of Phillip, greet thy Lord from me:

110 All good that he can send, I can receiue;  
 But thinkst thou not, the vnaduised boy  
 Hath wrongd himselfe in thus far tendering me?  
 Haply he cannot praie without the booke,  
 — I thinke him no diuine extemporall —,

115 Then render backe this common place of prayer,  
 To do himselfe good in aduersitie;  
 Besides he knows not my sinnes qualitie,  
 And therefore knowes no praiera for my auaille;  
 Ere night his praier may be to praie to God,

120 To put it in my heart to heare his praier.  
 So tell the courtly wanton, and be gone.

*Her.* I go.

[*Exit Herald.*]

99. *capring* A; [*Exit Herald.*] and *Herald* after *another* add. by Del.  
 — 104. *holy* add. by Cap. and Tyr. — 112. *thus*] *this* A; *farre* B: —  
 113. *Happily* A: — 122. [*Exit Herald.*] om. A.

*Pr. Edw.* How confident their strength and number makes  
 Now, Audley, sound those siluer winges of thine, [them! —  
 And let those milke-white messengers of time 125  
 Shew thy times learning in this dangerous time.  
 Thyselfe art bruis'd and bit with many broiles,  
 And stratagems forepast with yron pens  
 Are texted in thine honorable face;  
 Thou art a married man in this distresse, 130  
 But danger wooes me as a blushing maide:  
 Teach me an answere to this perillous time.

*Aud.* To die is all as common as to liue:  
 The one in choice, the other holds in chase;  
 For, from the instant we begin to liue, 135  
 We do pursue and hunt the time to die;  
 First bud we, then we blow, and after seed,  
 Then, presently, we fall; and, as a shade  
 Followes the bodie, so we follow death.  
 If, then, we hunt for death, why do we feare it? 140  
 If we feare it, why do we follow it?  
 If we do feare, how can we shun it?  
 If we do feare, with feare we do but aide  
 The thing we feare, to seize on vs the sooner:  
 If wee feare not, then no resolued proffer 145  
 Can ouerthrow the limit of our fate;  
 For, whether ripe or rotten, drop we shall,  
 As we do drawe the lotterie of our doome.

*Pr. Edw.* Ah, good olde man, a thousand thousand armors  
 These words of thine haue buckled on my backe: 150  
 Ah, what an idiot hast thou made of lyfe,  
 To seeke the thing it feares! and how disgrast  
 The imperiall victorie of murdring death,  
 Since all the liues, his conquering arrowes strike,  
 Seeke him, and he not them, to shame his glorie! 155  
 I will not giue a pennie for a lyfe,  
 Nor halfe a halfepenie to shun grim death,

124. *strings* Del. — 127. *bruis'd*] *busie* AB, corr. by Cap.; *bit*] *bent* Cap. and Tyr. — 129. *texed* B, Cap., and Tyr. — 141. *Or, if we* Cap. and Tyr. — 142. Om. in Cap. and Edd. — 151. *thou hast made* Col.

Since for to liue is but to seeke to die,  
 And dying but beginning of new lyfe.  
 160 Let come the houre when he that rules it will!  
 To liue or die I hold indifferent.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE V.

*The same. The French Camp.**Enter KING IOHN and CHARLES.*

*K. Iohn.* A sodaine darknes hath defast the skie,  
 The windes are crept into their caues for feare,  
 The leaues moue not, the world is husht and still,  
 The birds cease singing, and the wandring brookes  
 5 Murmure no wonted greeting to their shores;  
 Silence attends some wonder and expecteth  
 That heauen should pronounce some prophecie:  
 Where or from whome proceeds this silence, Charles?

*Charles.* Our men, with open mouthes and staring eyes,  
 10 Looke on each other, as they did attend  
 Each others wordes, and yet no creature speakes;  
 A tongue-tied feare hath made a midnight houre,  
 And speeches sleepe through all the waking regions.

*K. Iohn.* But now the pompeous Sunne, in all his pride,  
 15 Lookt through his golden coach vpon the worlde,  
 And, on a sodaine, hath he hid himselfe,  
 That now the vnder-earth is as a graue,  
 Darke, deadly, silent, and vncomfortable. [*A clamor of rauens.*  
 Harke, what a deadly outcrie do I heare?

20 *Charles.* Here comes my brother Phillip.

*K. Iohn.*

All dismayd:

*Enter PHILLIP.*

What fearefull words are those thy lookes presage?

*Phil.* A flight, a flight!

SCENE V. Stage-dir. added by Cap. — 3. *wood* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del. — 8. *Whence* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del. — 19. *om. B.* — 20. [*Enter PHILLIP.*] add. by Del. — 20, 21. *All dismayd . . . presage* one line in A, two lines in B, divided at *words*; *All dismayd* put in a line by itself in mod. Edd.

*K. John.* Coward, what flight? thou liest, there needs no

*Phil.* A flight. [flight.

*K. John.* Awake thy craven powers, and tell on 25  
The substance of that verie feare indeed,  
Which is so gastly printed in thy face:  
What is the matter?

*Phil.* A flight of vgly rauens  
Do croke and houer ore our souldiers heads,  
And keepe in triangles and cornerd squares, 30  
Right as our forces are imbatteléd;  
With their approach there came this sodain fog,  
Which now hath hid the airie floor of heauen  
And made at noone a night vnnaturall  
Vpon the quaking and dismaied world: 35  
In briefe, our souldiers haue let fall their armes,  
And stand like metamorphosd images,  
Bloudlesse and pale, one gazing on another.

*K. John.* I, now I call to mind the prophesie,  
But I must giue no enterance to a feare. — 40  
Returne, and harden vp those yeelding soules:  
Tell them, the rauens, seeing them in armes,  
So many faire against a famisht few,  
Come but to dine vpon their handieworke  
And praie vpon the carrion that they kill: 45  
For when we see a horse laid downe to die,  
Although he be not dead, the rauinous birds  
Sit watching the departure of his life;  
Euen so these rauens for the carcasses  
Of those poore English, that are markt to die, 50  
Houer about, and, if they crie to vs,  
Tis but for meate that we must kill for them.  
Awake, and comfort vp my souldiers,  
And sound the trumpets, and at once dispatch  
This litle busines of a silly fraude. [Exit PHILIP. 55

26. *The very substance of that feare* prop. by Cap. and adopted by Del. — 33. *floor*] *flower* AB. — 41. *these* AB. — 47. *he be* add. by Cap., Tyr., and Del. — 50. *these* B. — 55. [*Exit Prince.*] A.

*Prince.* Thanks, Edol, we imbrace the name and title,  
 And in our Sheild and Standard shall the figure  
 Of a Red Dragon still be born before us,  
 To fright the bloody Saxons. Oh, my Aurelius,  
 160 Sweet rest thy soul; let thy disturbed spirit  
 Expect revenge, think what it would, it hath:  
 The Dragon's coming in his fiery wrath. [*Exeunt.*

## A C T V.

## SCENE I.

*A barren Waste, a huge Rock appearing.*

*Thunder, then Musick.*

*Enter JOAN fearfully, THE DEVIL, following her.*

*Joan.* Hence, thou black horror! Is thy lustful fire  
 Kindled agen? Not thy loud-throated thunder  
 Nor thy adulterate infernal Musick  
 Shall e're bewitch me more. Oh, too too much  
 5 Is past already!

*Devil.* Why dost thou fly me?  
 I come a Lover to thee to imbrace  
 And gently twine thy body in mine arms.

*Joan.* Out, thou Hell-hound!  
 10 *Devil.* What hound so e're I be,  
 Fawning and sporting as I would with thee,  
 Why should I not be stroakt and plaid withal?  
 Willt thou not thank the Lion might devour thee,  
 If he shall let thee pass?

*Joan.* Yes, thou art he;  
 15 Free me, and Ile thank thee.

*Devil.* Why, whither wouldst?  
 I am at home with thee, thou art mine own,  
 Have we not charge of family together?  
 Where is your son?

*Joan.* Oh, darknesse cover me!

*Devil.* There is a pride which thou hast won by me,

ACT V. SCENE I. *A barren . . . appearing.* add. by Tyr. — 3. *adul-*  
*terous Tyr.* — 9. *thou om. Tyr.* — 12. *not I Tyr.*

The mother of a fame, shall never die. 20  
 Kings shall have need of written Chronicles  
 To keep their names alive, but Merlin none;  
 Ages to ages shall like Satellites  
 Report the wonders of his name and glory,  
 While there are tongues and times to tell his story. 25

*Joan.* Oh, rot my memory before my flesh,  
 Let him be called some hell- or earth-bred monster,  
 That ne're had hapless woman for a mother!  
 Sweet death, deliver me! Hence from my sight!  
 Why shouldst thou now appear? I had no pride 30  
 Nor lustful thought about me, to conjure  
 And call thee to my ruine, whenas at first  
 Thy cursed person became visible.

*Devil.* I am the same I was.

*Joan.* But I am chang'd.

*Devil.* Agen Ile change thee to the same thou wert, 35  
 To quench my lust. — Come forth, by thunder led,  
 My Coajutors in the spoils of mortals. [*Thunder.*

*Enter Spirits.*

Claspe in your Ebon arms that prize of mine,  
 Mount her as high as palled Hecate;  
 And on this rock Ile stand to cast up fumes 40  
 And darkness o're the blew-fac'd firmament:  
 From Brittain and from Merlin Ile remove her,  
 They ne're shall meet agen.

*Joan.* Help me some saving hand!  
 If not too late, I cry: Let mercy come! 45

*Enter MERLIN.*

*Mer.* Stay, you black slaves of night, let loose your hold,  
 Set her down safe, or by th'infernal Stix,  
 Ile binde you up with exorcisms so strong,  
 That all the black pentagoron of hell  
 Shall ne're release you. Save your selves and vanish! 50  
 [*Exeunt Spirits.*

22. *name* Tyr. — 23. *Sabalists* A and Tyr., corr. by Del. — 28. *for his mother* Tyr. — 36. *quench* to A. — 37. *spoil* Tyr. — 38. (Stage-dir.) *Spirit* A. — 50. *you* A, corr. by Tyr. and Del.

*Devil.* Ha! What's he?

*Mer.* The Childe has found his Father. Do you not know me?

*Devil.* Merlin!

*Joan.* Oh, help me, gentle son!

55 *Mer.* Fear not, they shall not hurt you.

*Devil.* Relievest thou her to disobey thy father?

*Mer.* Obedience is no lesson in your school;

Nature and kind to her commands my duty;

The part that you begot was against kinde,

60 So all I ow to you, is to be unkind.

*Devil.* Ile blast thee, slave, to death, and on this rock  
Stick thee as an eternal Monument.

*Mer.* Ha, ha, thy power's too weak; what art thou, devil,  
But an inferior lustful Incubus,

65 Taking advantage of the wanton flesh,  
Wherewith thou dost beguile the ignorant?

Put off the form of thy humanity,

And cral upon thy speckled belly, serpent,

Or Ile unclasp the jaws of Acheron,

70 And fix thee ever in the local fire,

*Devil.* Traitor to hell! Curse that I e're begot thee!

*Mer.* Thou didst beget thy scourge. Storm not, nor stir,  
The power of Merlins Art is all confirm'd  
In the Fates decretals. Ile ransack hell,

75 And make thy masters bow unto my spells.

Thou first shalt taste it, — [*Thunder and Lightning in the Rock.*  
*Tenibrarum precis, deviliarum et infirorum Deus, hunc Incu-*  
*bum in ignis eterni abisum accipite, aut in hoc carcere tenebroso*  
*in sempiternum astringere mando.*

[*The Rock incloses him.*

80 So! there beget earthquakes or some noisom damps,

For never shalt thou touch a woman more. —

How chear you, mother?

*Joan.* Oh, now my son is my deliverer,

Yet I must name him with my deepest sorrow.

[*Alarum afar off.*

51. *What is Del.* — 52. Two lines in *Del.* — 62. *as add. by Del.* —  
75. *master Tyr.; spell Del.* — 76. *shall A.* — 77. *precis*] *princeps* prop.  
by Elze, Notes I., p. 3. — 80. *some om. Del.*

*Mer.* Take comfort now: past times are ne're recal'd, 85  
 I did forsee your mischief, and prevent it.  
 Hark, how the sounds of war now call me hence  
 To aid Pendragon that in battail stands  
 Against the Saxons, from whose aid  
 Merlin must not be absent. Leave this soyl, 90  
 And Ile conduct you to a place retir'd,  
 Which I by art have rais'd, call'd Merlins Bower.  
 There shall you dwell with solitary sighs,  
 With grones and passions, your companions,  
 To weep away this flesh you have offended with, 95  
 And leave all bare unto your aierial soul.  
 And when you die, I will erect a Monument  
 Upon the verdant Plains of Salisbury,  
 No King shall have so high a sepulchre,  
 With pendulous stones that I will hang by art, 100  
 Where neither Lime nor Morter shalbe us'd,  
 A dark Enigma to the memory,  
 For none shall have the power to number them,  
 A place that I will hallow for your rest,  
 Where no Night-hag shall walk, nor Ware-wolf tread: 105  
 There Merlins Mother shall be sepulcher'd. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*The British Camp.**Enter* DONOBERT, GLOSTER, and HERMIT.

*Dono.* Sincerely, Gloster, I have told you all:  
 My Daughters are both vow'd to Single Life,  
 And this day gone unto the Nunnery,  
 Though I begot them to another end,  
 And fairly promis'd them in Marriage, 5  
 One to Earl Cadour, t'other to your son,  
 My worthy friend, the Earl of Gloster.  
 Those lost, I am lost: they are lost, all's lost.  
 Answer me this, then: Is't a sin to marry?

102. *thy memory Tyr.,? men's memory.* — 104. *hollow A.* — 106. *Where A,* corr. by Del.

SCENE II. *The British Camp.* add. by Tyr. — 3. *into Tyr.*

10 *Hermit.* Oh no, my Lord.

*Dono.* Go to, then, Ile go no further with you;  
I perswade you to no ill, perswade you, then,  
That I perswade you well.

*Gloster.* 'Twill be a good Office in you, sir.

*Enter CADOR and EDWIN.*

15 *Dono.* Which since they thus neglect,  
My memory shall lose them now for ever. —  
See, see, the Noble Lords, their promis'd Husbands!  
Had Fate so pleas'd, you might have call'd me Father.

*Edwin.* Those hopes are past, my Lord; for even this minute  
20 We saw them both enter the Monastery,  
Secluded from the world and men for ever.

*Cador.* 'Tis both our griefs we cannot, Sir.  
But from the King take you the Times joy from us:  
The Saxon King Ostorius slain and Octa fled,  
25 That Woman-fury, Queen Artesia,  
Is fast in hold, and forc't to re-deliver  
London and Winchester, which she had fortif'd,  
To Princely Vter, lately styl'd Pendragon,  
Who now triumphantly is marching hither  
30 To be invested with the Brittain Crown.

*Dono.* The joy of this shall banish from my breast  
All thought that I was Father to two Children,  
Two stubborn Daughters, that have left me thus.  
Let my old arms embrace, and call you Sons;  
35 For, by the Honor of my Fathers House,  
I'll part my estate most equally betwixt you.

*Edwin, Cador.* Sir, y'are most noble.

*Flor. Tromp.* *Enter EDOL with Drum and Colours,*  
*OSWOLD bearing the Standard, TOCLIO the Shield, with*  
*the Red Dragon pictur'd in'em, two BISHOPS with the*  
*Crown, PRINCE VTER, MERLIN, ARTESIA bound, GUARD,*  
*and CLOWN.*

*Prince.* Set up our Sheild and Standard, noble Soldiers.

11. *I will Del.* — 19. *past, my Lord, for ever; this Tyr.* — 23. ? *take the.*  
— 30. *British Crown Tyr.* — 37. *you are Tyr. and Del.*

We have firm hope that, tho' our Dragon sleep,  
Merlin will us and our fair Kingdom keep. 40

*Clown.* As his Uncle lives, I warrant you.

*Glost.* Happy Restorer of the Brittain's fame,  
Uprising Sun, let us salute thy glory:  
Ride in a day perpetual about us,  
And no night be in thy thrones zodiack. 45  
Why do we stay to binde those Princely browes  
With this Imperial Honor?

*Prince.* Stay, noble Gloster!

That monster first must be expel'd our eye,  
Or we shall take no joy in it.

*Dono.* If that be hindrance, give her quick Judgement, 50  
And send her hence to death; she has long deserv'd it.

*Edol.* Let my Sentence stand for all: take her hence,  
And stake her carcase in the burning Sun,  
Till it be parcht and dry, and then fley off  
Her wicked skin, and stuff the pelt with straw 55  
To be shown up and down at Fairs and Markets,  
Two pence a piece to see so foul a Monster,  
'Twill be a fair monopoly, and worth the begging.

*Artes.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Edol.* Dost laugh, Erictho? 60

*Artes.* Yes, at thy poor invention,  
Is there no better torturemonger?

*Dono.* Burn her to dust.

*Artes.* That's a Phoenix death, and glorious.

*Edol.* I, that's too good for her.

*Prince.* Alive she shall be buried, circled in a wall, 65  
Thou murtheress of a King, there starve to death.

*Artes.* Then Ile starve death when he comes for his prey,  
And i'th' mean time Ile live upon your curses.

*Edol.* I, 'tis diet good enough; away with her!

*Artes.* With joy, my best of wishes is before, 70  
Thy brother's poison'd, but I wanted more. [Exit.

39. *fair hope* Tyr. — 49. *Or else we take* Tyr. — 57. *piece.* To see  
Del. — 58. *'Twill*] will A and Edd.; and *worth the begging* om. Tyr. —  
64. to A. — 65. *Alive* put in a line by itself by Del. — 69. *diet* om. Del..

- Prince.* Why does our Prophet Merlin stand apart,  
 Sadly observing these our Ceremonies,  
 And not applaud our joys with thy hid knowledge?  
 75 Let thy divining Art now satisfie  
 Some part of my desires; for well I know,  
 'Tis in thy power to show the full event,  
 That shall both end our Reign and Chronicle.  
 Speak, learned Merlin, and resolve my fears,  
 80 Whether by war we shal expel the Saxons,  
 Or govern what we hold with beauteous peace  
 In Wales and Brittain?

- Mer.* Long happiness attend Pendragons Reign!  
 What Heaven decrees, fate hath no power to alter:  
 85 The Saxons, sir, will keep the ground they have,  
 And by supplying numbers still increase,  
 Till Brittain be no more. So please your Grace,  
 I will in visible apparitions  
 Present you Prophecies which shall concern  
 90 Succeeding Princes which my Art shall raise,  
 Till men shall call these times the latter days.

*Prince.* Do it, my Merlin,  
 And Crown me with much joy and wonder.

*MERLIN strikes. Hoebays. Enter a King in Armour, his  
 Sheild quarter'd with thirteen Crowns. At the other door  
 enter divers Princes who present their Crowns to him at  
 his feet, and do him homage; then enters Death and strikes  
 him; he, growing sick, Crowns CONSTANTINE. [Exeunt.*

- Mer.* This King, my Lord, presents your Royal Son,  
 95 Who in his prime of years shall be so fortunate,  
 That thirteen several Princes shall present  
 Their several Crowns unto him, and all Kings else  
 Shall so admire his fame and victories,  
 That they shall all be glad,  
 100 Either through fear or love, to do him homage;  
 But death, who neither favors the weak nor valiant,  
 In the midst of all his glories soon shall seize him,

97. unto] to Tyr. — 101. favours neither Tyr.

Scarcely permitting him to appoint one  
In all his purchased Kingdoms to succeed him.

*Prince.* Thanks to our Prophet 105  
For this so wish'd for satisfaction;  
And hereby now we learn that always Fate  
Must be observ'd, what ever that decree:  
All future times shall still record this Story,  
Of Merlin's learned worth and Arthur's glory. 110

[*Exeunt Omnes.*]

THE END.

## NOTES.

### ACT I.

1, 10. Her promise already ratified this condition.

✓ 1, 24. *protest*, i. e. declare his love; cp. Wiv. III. 5. 75: *after we had embraced, kissed and protested*, and Cæs. I. 2. 74: *to stale with ordinary oaths my love to every new protester*.

1, 40. *dull stomachs*, i. e. weak appetite. Tieck: '*Viel eurer Art sind nur von schwachem Hunger.*'

✓ 1, 43. *speaks yours*, i. e. declares itself yours. Cp. Wint. I. 2. 178: *we are yours in the garden*, i. e. we are at your service.

1, 44, 45. Cp. Tit. Andr. II. 1. 82, 83:

*She is a woman, therefore may be woo'd*  
*She is a woman, therefore may be won.*

1, 90 seqq. Tieck:

*'Die Schwester ist im Vorteil noch; kommt, lasst sie,*  
*Sie wird nicht minder schnell als ich verlieren,*  
*Ihm fehlt nur Kunst die Würfel zu regieren.'*

1, 106. Your wishes must put some restraint on you, if you give faith and credence to my promise. The punctuation of A (*then, as to my promise, you give faith and promise?*), adopted by Edd., is void of all sense.

✓ 2, 1. Though the form *liding* does not occur in Shakespeare, we have not altered it, as it is not uncommon in Middle English; cp. Skeat, Etym. Dict., s. v.

2, 38, 39. The only Power, i. e. God, who has discomfited the enemy, should not be limited; you should pursue your victory, and not treat with the enemy.

2, 42. If mischiefs are not quite uprooted and destroyed, they will soon reappear with new vigour; if the vanquished enemy is spared by the conqueror, he will soon grow mischievous again. Tieck:

*'Beschränkt nicht, liebt ihr eure Sicherheit,  
Die hohe Macht, die euch allein beschirmte,  
Traut einem offenen Feinde nicht zu sehr,  
Noch ist er im Verlust, ihr habt gewonnen,  
Sonst endet Unheil nicht, ist nur begonnen.'*

- 2, 45. Tieck: *'das Wort des Friedens  
Ist blut'gen Augen schön, doch angewendet  
Mit Pflastern, durch die das Gesicht erblindet,  
Zeigt wen'ge Kunst, wenn auch der Heilung Wunsch.'*

- 2, 56. Tieck: *'Man kann gewiss in wen'ger Zeit von ihnen  
Das Land befreien.'*

But it would perhaps be better to give ll. 56 and 57 (*Who (not We) in less time will undertake to free Our country from them?*) to *Aurelius* and not to *Cador*.

2, 79. *Aurelius* evidently repeats the expression used by *Artesia*; *Tyrrell's* conjecture is, therefore, to be rejected.

✓ 2, 86. If I were but young again, I am sure this gilded pill would take my appetite quickly, I should have no appetite to taste it; whereupon the king replies: To be sure, you are old, and you have quite forgotten the defects of your own youth. As for *to take one's stomach*, cp. I H. IV., II. 3. 44: *what is't that takes from thee thy stomach?* Tieck seems to be mistaken in translating:

*'Wär' ich nur wieder jung, die gold'ne Pille  
Begehrte wohl mein Magen leicht.'*

- 2, 118. Tieck:

*'Lass mich als Weib, so unwert ich auch bin,  
Die Nachricht bringen deiner Menschlichkeit,  
Des milde Tugend Fama laut verkündet,  
Und der die Völker sich in Liebe bindet.'*

2, 121. *As being* &c is loosely annexed to *Take the report of thy humanity*. l. 119, = that we are overcome &c.

✓ 2, 134. And do I act mine own (deeds) not free. As to *free* = freely, cp. H. VIII., II. 1. 82: *I as free forgive you as I would be forgiven*; and Mch. II. 1. 19: *which else should free have wrought*.

2, 158 seqq. The sense of the passage, which is perhaps somewhat corrupt, seems to be: Tell him that our entertainment expects him as such (i. e. as brother), and that our marriage will add to our joys and happiness; the good or evil qualities of man and woman, like two waves, get united and doubled by marriage (*in this*). Tieck:

*'Sagt ihm welch' grosse Freud' ihn hier erwartet,  
Und wie mein Glück der Ehebund vermehrt,*

Wie jede Freude mir nun doppelt helle  
Im Spiegel dieser wollustreichen Welle.'

- 4 ✓ 2, 158. *sweet* often applied to heaven and celestial things.  
Cp. IV. 5. 160: *Sweet rest thy soul.*

## ACT II.

1, 5. Tieck: '*Denn er armiert und beint auch dazu, und braucht dich zum Herold, seine Armatur kund zu geben.*' As to *blaze* = proclaim like a herald, cp. 2 H. VI., IV. 10. 76: *thou shalt wear it (the blood) as a herald's coat, to emblaze the honour that thy master got.*

✓ 1, 27. *uses*, i. e. is accustomed to go, frequents. *He useth every day to a merchant's house where I serve water.* B. Jonson (Quoted by Webster.).

✓ 1, 30. *Knight of the Post*, a man who gained his living by giving false evidence on trials or false bail (Nares, s. v.), is here comically applied by the Clown to the trees of the forest which his sister had called to witness.

1, 39. *Oh yes*, i. e. *oyez*, hear ye, give attention, the usual introduction of a publication of the public crier. (Al. Schmidt, Shakespeare-Lexicon, s. v.).

1, 53. i. e. to relate her beauties to him (*Fänd' ich hier wen, die Schön' ihm zu beschreiben.* Tieck.).

1, 67. Though the construction is somewhat inexact, it does not seem necessary to read *you* for *and*.

1, 69. Tieck: '*Weil ich sie fand und doch verlor.*'

1, 75 seqq. These lines seem to refer to one of two adventures related by Plutarch, Life of Marius, ch. 39 and ch. 45. A soldier was sent by the magistrates of the town of Minturnæ into Marius' bedroom, in order to kill him. But on seeing Marius' face, and on hearing his voice, the soldier, frightened out of his wits, threw away his sword and fled from the house. — In ch. 45 Plutarch relates that Marius once sent some warriors with the order to kill Anthony the orator. When the soldiers found Anthony in his chamber, 'they beganne to encorage one another to kill him, not one of them having the harte to laye handes uppon him. For Anthonyes tongue was as sweete as a Sirene, and had such an excellent grace in speaking that when he begann to speake vnto the souldiers, and to pray them to saue his life: there was not one of them so hard hearted, as once to touch him, no not onely to looke him in the face, but looking downewardes, fell a weeping.' See North's Plutarch, ed. 1579, p. 477.

1, 78. Tieck: '*Zur Sonne strebt der Dunst, wird Regenflut!*'

1, 98. *rude and boldly* = rudely and boldly, as often in Shak.

- ✓ 1, 103. Cp. All's I. 3. 188: *you have wound a goodly clew.*
- ✓ 1, 106. *Jug*, a diminutive of Joan, also occurs Lr. I. 4. 245: *Whoop, Jug, I love thee.*
- 1, 110. As *maid* is = girl (*is there a maid with child by him?* Meas. I. 2. 92), Tyrrell's conjecture is quite uncalled for.
- 1, 127. We are to suppose that the Prince turns to the Clown, in order to beat him too.
- ✓ 1. 157. *overshot*, exceeded in shooting, blundering. Cp. H. V., III. 7. 134: *'tis not the first time you were overshot.*
- ✓ 2. 12. *the presence*, i. e. the court. Cp. H. VIII., IV. 2. 37: *i' the presence he would say untruths*, i. e. before the king and his court.
- 2, 13. *discontent*, i. e. discontented.
- ✓ 2, 15. *perswade his patience*. Cp. Hml. IV. 5. 168: *hadst thou thy wils and didst persuade revenge?* and 3 H. VI., III. 3. 176: *sends me a paper to persuade me patience.*
- 2, 31. It would perhaps be better to write *With Pagan Infidels, the least part Christians*, for the sense seems to be: The court is divided with pagan Infidels, who are equal to the christians, if not in number, at least in authority and influenc (*in their commands*).
- 2, 37. Your commissions are not worth anything, you may inclose and keep them. Tieck: *'Schlafmützen schafft euch an anstatt der Helme.'* ?
- 2, 49. They had already resolved to leave the country, hoping by that means to preserve their lives.
- 2, 51, 52. These two lines may be considered as a blank-verse (l. 52 *'Twas*).
- 2, 71, *as black as hell*. Cp. John IV. 3. 121: *thou'rt damned as black, nay, nothing is so black.*
- 2, 83. For the proverbial phrase *bought and sold* (our German *verraten und verkauft*) cp. Err. III. 1. 72, John V. 4. 10, 1 H. VI., IV. 4. 13, Rich. III., V. 3. 305, Troil. II. 1. 51.
- 2, 90. Cp. *to be exposed against the warring winds* Lr. IV. 7. 32, where Ff. and modern Edd. read *opposed*.
- 2, 111. *all our whole Kingdome*, cp. II. 3. 9: *all the whole Court*.
- 3, 30. Cp. Cæs. IV. 3. 133: *how vilely doth this cynic rhyme.*
- 3, 45. *above present sense*, i. e. without their perceiving any thing directly by the eye.
- 3, 46. *there may*, scil. be such a power.
- 3, 86. We have not been able to discover the names of the two spirits elsewhere.
- ✓ 3, 139. *birthright*, i. e. patrimony, inheritance.
- 3, 150. *on whom* refers to *woman*, l. 148.

✓ 3, 195. *health-loved*, i. e. loved when they were in a state of health.

3, 198. Tieck: '*Du kannst nicht leben, stirb mit keckem Mut.*'  
The use of the infinitive with *to* after a preposition is very surprising; it may be compared with passages as *For to have this absolute power of Dictator they added never to be afraid to be deposed*, i. e. for to to have &c. North's Plutarch 611 (Quoted by Abbott, § 355).

3, 205. If we see our vicious thoughts and actions miscarry, we turn from vice, and only endeavour to do what is good.

✓ 3, 222. *Mussel*, i. e. muscle, a bivalvular shell-fish (Cp. Tp. I. 2. 463).

✓ 3, 257. *Envy* = malice, as often in Shak.

### ACT III.

✓ 1, 146. *placcats*. 'Placket, probably a stomacher (according to some a petticoat, or the opening in it.' A. Schmidt, Shak.-Lex., s. v. Cp. LLL. III. 186: *Dread prince of plackets* and Lr. III. 4. 100: *keep thy hand out of plackets*.

2, 22. *nor to cease*, i. e. nor do I persuade you to cease.

2, 42. Cp. Wint. III. 2. 1: *this sessions even pushes against our heart*.

2, 65. The regular construction being interrupted by l. 66 *in you* (l. 67) takes up again *in whose folly*.

✓ 2, 75. *goodness*, i. e. happiness, good fortune.

2, 84 seqq. Tieck:

*'Ich bitte, theure Schwester, hör' mich an:  
Die Welt ist Maskenspiel, nicht was ich bin,  
Nur meine Larve täuscht den schwachen Sinn.  
Die Larve fällt, sobald der Tanz vollbracht,  
Und alle schaun dann in des Todes Nacht.  
Das Glück, es überlebt den Abend nicht,  
Wo Falsches ächt scheint bei der Kerzen Licht.  
Wer dies erkennt, sucht edlere Gewande,  
Die ihn bedecken vor der Blöße Schande.  
Er weiss, die Welt flieht ihn in kurzer Zeit,  
Und wirft es ab, dies täuschend bunte Kleid.'*

2, 104. Tieck:

*'Ist dies ein Quell nicht ewig neuer Sorgen?  
Wie ungewiss sind diese Mutterfreuden!  
Die wir geboren, sehn wir oftmals leiden  
So manche Not, dass wir zum Himmel flehn,  
Er mög' ihr frühes End' uns lassen sehn.  
Auch glücklich, raubt der Tod doch, was uns freute,  
So steuern wir zu unsers Feindes Beute.'*

2, 116. Tieck:

*'Nicht Freunde, Vater, Gatten hab' ich nun.  
Geborgte Maskenkleider sind es nur,  
Worin wir schwärmen; unser Leben ist  
Ein freier Tag nur zwischen Fieberbrennen,  
Und eh' [wir] diesen nur geniessen können,  
Raftt uns ein zweites Fieber hin. O Schwester!  
Du meiner Seele Trost, vergieb den Hohn.  
Wie konnte die, (ich muss dich Vorbild nennen)  
Die sich nicht kannte, wohl dein Glück erkennen?  
Von ihm soll nun die Welt mich nicht mehr trennen.'*

2, 120. Which refers to *one good* (l. 119). The construction is: Ere we; away from the *ague-day*, have time to praise the good day.

✓ 3, 11. *vent*, apparently = scent. This passage seems to corroborate the explanation of *it (war) is sprightly walking, audible, and full of vent*, Cor. IV. 5. 238, as given in Edinb. Rev., Oct. 1872. *vent*, in both the passages, is a technical term of sportsmen for scent, and *full of scent* means full of eager excitement, as a dog scenting any thing, full of pluck and courage. S. Al. Schmidt, Shak.-Lex., s. v. *vent* 5.

4/ § 80. *Or are mine eyes matches?* The sense seems to be: or are my eyes indeed equal to each other, so that both of them always see the same thing? Cp. Spens. F. Q., IV. 1. 28:

*Als as she double spake, so heard she double,  
With matchlesse eares, deformed and distort.*

4/ § 103. Tieck: *'Von Seiten der Mutter stammt sie von den Willigs in Suffolk ab, aber unser eigentliches Stammschloss ist Brings-herein und Lassnichlos.'* Layton-Buzzard, i. e. Lay it on, Buzzard, was perhaps a technical term of hunting.

4/ § 107. Tieck: *'Seine Ahnherrn stammen aus Höllenbrodel in Wales.'*

5, 18. Upon such a hazardous sea that the least miscarriage shall ruin me.

5, 25. For *contrary*, cp. Wint. V. 1. 45, John IV. 2. 198, Tim. IV. 3. 144, Hml. III. 2. 221.

✓ 6, 3. *Wakes with injoying*, i. e. that awakes, that ceases to be as soon as we will enjoy it. Tieck:

*'Was ihr Liebe nennt,  
Ist nur ein Traum, der beim Genuss entschwindet.'*

✓ 6, 60. Cp. Wiv. II. 1. 136: *I have a sword, and it shall bite thee*, and Rich. II., I. 3. 303, Lr. V. 3. 276.

6, 63. My own beauty made me as it were his prisoner. Tieck:

*'Die eigne Schönheit brachte mir Gefahr.'*

6, 65. *O my sad soul.* Tieck: *'O meine Ahnung.'* Cp. LLL. V. 2. 741: *entreat out of a new-sad soul* and Ado V. 1. 42: *my soul doth tell me Hero is belied.*

6, 95. Cp. 3 H. VI., I. 4. 41: *view this face, and bite thy tongue that slanders him with cowardice.*

6, 108. Cp. *fire and brimstone!* Tw. II. 5. 56, Oth. III. 1. 245.

#### ACT IV.

✓ 1, 11. *Sparrow-hawk*, i. e. the little Antick Spirit.

✓ 1, 12. *Cardecu*. 'Quart d'écu, the quarter of a crown, i. e. fifteen pence, or thereabouts.' Nares, s. v.

✓ 1, 29. *conveyance*, dishonest practice, trickery; cp. 3 H. VI., III. 3. 160: *Till I make King Lewis behold thy sly conveyance and thy Lord's false love.*

✓ 1, 47. *Artist*, scholar, as also sometimes in Shakespeare.

✓ 1, 71. *Diggon*. ? = *dig on*. Tieck: *'Darauf berufe dich nur. Dann soll es ja auch eines Kindes Blut sein, und wer wird dich mit deinem langen Bart wol für ein Kind halten? Ist das nicht Grund genug, Vetter?'*

+ 1, 94. *neither* follows *but* by way of enforcing it. Cp. Merch. III. 5. 9: *and that is but a kind of bastard hope neither.*

✓ 1, 112. *Wind-sucker* (the name of the kestrel, a species of kite) seems to have been a denomination for a wanton woman. As to the tropical use of the word, cp. Ben Jonson, *Silent Woman*, Act I.: *Did you ever hear such a wind-sucker as this? Or such a rook as the other?* (Quoted by Nares, s. v.)

1, 139. As to the construction, which is altered by Delius, cp. John IV. 2, 165: *whom they say is killed to-night*, Cymb. I. 4, 137 *whom in constancy you think stands so safe.*

✓ 1, 174. *a seeming fair young man*, i. e. he who was in appearance a fair young man.

1, 194. Cp. Lr. III. 4, 69: *All the plagues that in the pendulous air hang fated o'er men's faults.*

1, 227. 'There is no doubt some corruption in [this] line, but it baffles my endeavours to detect and mend it.' Elze, Notes I, p. 2. It seems to be best to consider *Of* as a corruption of *on*, as it often occurs; cp. *such a beard of thy face*, supra IV. 1, 73, *Pox of those Conjurers*, ib. 83. Also Tieck seems to have understood the passage in this way:

*not enough. E. st.*

‘an diesem Kampf,  
Am Sieg und Fall, der diesem wird gegeben,  
Hängt euer Schicksal, euer Reich und Leben.’

✓ 1, 270. *double footing*, i. e. taking double steps; another expression for *at full march*.

2, 16. These lines might also be divided:

*For heavens love, sir, march on! — Oh, my patience!*  
*Will you delay untill the Saxons come*  
*To aid his party?*

3, 3. The sense is: I should not like to be the only man that brings princes to fall. Tieck: ‘*Nicht aller Fürsten Blut will ich vergiessen.*’

✓ 5, 5. As to the use of *flakes*, cp. Lr. IV. 7, 30: *these white flakes*, i. e. this white hair.

✓ 5, 10. *fears*, i. e. fearful objects, as Rom. IV. 3, 50: *environed with all these hideous fears*.

✓ 5, 18. *Pythion*, i. e. Pythian.

5, 50. 51. The construction is inexact, *in it* being pleonastic after *from which*: we gather from thy tears that there is much sorrow in it, or, that much sorrow will come from it.

5, 112. The sense is: with the title of Monarch of the West.

5, 161. *think it hath*, i. e. shall have the revenge which it would like to have.

#### ACT V.

✓ 1, 49. *Pentagoron* and *local fire*, (l. 70) cabalistic expressions, the exact meaning of which is not intelligible to us.

1, 77. *precis*. We have not adopted Elze's conjecture, because *precis*, in cabalistic language, seems to have been an expression for *God*; cp. Doctoris Iohannis Fausti Magicae Naturalis et Innaturalis Erster Theil. Passau 1505, p. 11: *O Adonay, precis, Christe, Ahischca*; p. 54: *apraecis Diabolam*. [*precis* from *prex*, *preces* = deprecation?].

✓ 1, 94. *passion*, i. e. sorrow.

1, 96. Tieck: ‘*Und deinen Geist vom Ird'schen zu befrei'n.*’ to leave s. i. bare to, i. e. to abandon, to surrender to. Cp. *left me bare to weather* Cymb. III. 3. 64, *left me naked to mine enemies* H. VIII., III. 2. 458.

✓ 1, 100. *pendulous*, cp. supra IV. 1. 194.

2, 11 seqq. The difficult passage seems to be an exclamation addressed to the daughters: Go to, then; I shall live without you

(Cp. Merch. I. 2. 97: *I shall make shift to go without him*). But you may be persuaded that I only persuaded you well. Tieck:

‘*So sei’s! Ich sehe sie nicht wieder,  
Zum Uebel überred’ ich nicht, sagt ihnen  
Dass ich ja nur das Gute stets begehrte.*  
GL. *Ihr thut daran ein gutes Werk.*’

2, 22. scil. *to call you father.*

✓ 2, 70. *is before*, i. e. goes before, is performed before.

**Sammlung kurzer Grammatiken germanischer Dialekte.**  
Herausgegeben von Wilhelm Braune. 8.

Bis jetzt sind erschienen:

**A. In der Hauptreihe:**

- Bd. I. **Gotische Grammatik** mit einigen Lesestücken und Wortverzeichnis von Wilhelm Braune. 3. Aufl. 1887. *N.* 2,40.  
Bd. II. **Mittelhochdeutsche Grammatik** von Hermann Paul. 2. Aufl. 1884. *N.* 2,60.  
Bd. III. **Angelsächsische Grammatik** von Eduard Sievers. 2. Aufl. 1886. *N.* 4,20.  
Bd. IV. **Altnordische Grammatik 1. Altisländische und altnorwegische Grammatik** unter Berücksichtigung des Urnordischen von Adolf Noreen. 1884. *N.* 3,80.  
Bd. V. **Althochdeutsche Grammatik** von Wilhelm Braune. 1886. *N.* 4,60.

**B. In der Ergänzungsreihe:**

- Bd. I. **Nominale Stammbildungslehre** der altgermanischen Dialekte von Friedrich Kluge. 1886. *N.* 2,60.

**Neudrucke deutscher Litteraturwerke des XVI. und XVII. Jahrhunderts** (herausgegeben von Prof. Dr. W. Braune in Giessen). No. 1—67. à 60 Pf.

1. Martin Opitz, Buch von der deutschen Poeterei. (1624.)
2. Johann Fischart, Aller Praktik Grossmutter. (1572.)
3. Andreas Gryphius, Horribilicribrifax. Scherzspiel. (1663.)
4. M. Luther, An den christlichen Adel deutscher Nation. (1520.)
5. Johann Fischart, Der Flöhbaz. (1573.)
6. Andreas Gryphius, Peter Squenz. Schimpfspiel. (1663.)
- 7—8. Das Volksbuch vom Doctor Faust. (1587.)
9. J. B. Schupp, Der Freund in der Not. (1657.)
- 10—11. Lazarus Sandrub, Delitiæ historicæ et poeticæ. (1618.)
- 12—14. Christian Weise, Die drei ärgsten Erznarren. (1673.)
15. J. W. Zinkgref, Auserlesene Gedichte deutsch. Poeten. (1624.)
- 16—17. Joh. Lauremberg, Niederdeutsche Scherzgedichte. 1652. Mit Einleitung, Anmerkungen und Glossar von W. Braune.
18. M. Luther, Sendbrief an Leo X. Von der Freiheit eines Christenmenschen. Warum des Papsts Bücher verbrannt seien. Drei Reformationsschriften aus dem Jahre 1520.
- 19—25. H. J. Chr. v. Grimmelshausen, Der abenteuerliche Simplicissimus. Abdr. d. ältesten Originalausgabe (1669.)
- 26—27. Hans Sachs, Sämmtliche Fastnachtspiele in chronolog. Ordnung n. d. Originalen hersg. von Edmund Goetze. 1. Bändchen.
28. M. Luther, Wider Hans Worst. (1541.)
29. Hans Sachs, Der hürnen Seufrid, Tragödie in 7 Acten.
30. Burk. Waldis, Der verlorne Sohn, ein Fastnachtspiel. (1527.)
- 31—32. Hans Sachs, Fastnachtspiele herausg. von E. Goetze. 2.
33. Barth. Krüger, Hans Clawerts Werckliche Historien. (1587.)
- 34—35. Caspar Scheidt, Friedrich Dedekinds Grobianus. (1551.)
36. Hayneccius, Hans Pfriem Meister Kecks. Komödie. (1582.)

- 37—38. Andreas Gryphius, Sonn- und Feiertags-Sonette. (1639 und 1663.) Herausg. von Dr. Heinrich Welti.
- 39—40. Hans Sachs, Fastnachtspiele herausg. von E. Goetze. 3.
41. Das Enderinger Judenspiel. Herausg. von K. v. Amira.
- 42—43. Hans Sachs, Fastnachtspiele herausg. von E. Goetze. 4.
- 44—47. Die Gedichte des Königsberger Dichterkreises aus Alberts Arien und musikalischer Kührshütte (1638—1650) herausgeg. von L. H. Fischer.
48. Heinrich Albert. Musikbeilagen zu den Gedichten des Königsberger Dichterkreises, hg. von Rob. Eitner.
49. Burk. Waldis' Streitgedichte gegen Herzog Heinrich d. Jüngern von Braunschweig. Herausgeg. von Friedrich Koldewey.
50. Martin Luther, Von der Winkelmesse u. Pfaffenweihe. (1533.)
- 51—52. Hans Sachs, Fastnachtspiele herausg. von Ed Goetze. 5.
- 53—54. M. Rinckhart, Der Eislebische christliche Ritter. (1613.)
- 55—56. Till Eulenspiegel. (1515.) Herausg. von Hermann Knust.
- 57—58. Chr. Renter, Schelmuffsky. (1696. 1697.)
59. Chr. Renter, Schelmuffsky. Abdruck der ersten Fassung 1696.
- 60—61. Hans Sachs, Fastnachtspiele herausg. von E. Goetze. 6.
62. Ein schöner Dialogus von Martino Luther und der geschickten Botschaft aus der Hülle. (1523).
- 63—64. Hans Sachs, Fastnachtspiele hg. von E. Goetze. 7. (Schluss.)
- 65—67. Johann Fischart's Geschichtklitterung (Gargantua). Herausg. von A. Alsleben. Erste Hälfte (Bogen 1—15).

**Quellenschriften zur neueren deutschen Litteratur.** Herausgegeben von Alexander Bieling. kl. 8.

- Nr. 1. **Gottscheds Reineke Fuchs.** Abdruck der hochdeutschen Prosa-Uebersetzung vom Jahre 1752. 1886. *M.* 1,60.
- Nr. 2. **Lebens-Beschreibung des Herrn Gözens von Berlichingen.** Abdruck der Original-Ausgabe von Steigerwald. Nürnberg 1731. 1886. *M.* 1,60.

**Altdeutsche Textbibliothek.** Herausgegeben von Hermann Paul. kl. 8.

- Nr. 1. **Die Gedichte Walther's von der Vogelweide.** Herausgegeben von H. Paul. 1882. *M.* 1,80.
- Nr. 2. **Gregorius von Hartmann von Aue.** Herausgegeben von H. Paul. 1882. *M.* 1,00.
- Nr. 3. **Der arme Heinrich von Hartmann von Aue.** Herausgegeben von H. Paul. 1882. *M.* 0,40.
- Nr. 4. **Heliand.** Herausg. von O. Behaghel. 1882. *M.* 2,40.
- Nr. 5. **Kudrun.** Herausg. von B. Symons. 1883. *M.* 2,80.
- Nr. 6. **König Rother.** Herausg. von K. v. Bahder. 1884. *M.* 1,50.
- Nr. 7. **Reinhart Fuchs.** Herausg. von K. Reissenberger. 1886. *M.* 1,20.
- Nr. 8. **Reinke de vos.** Herausg. von Fr. Prien. Mit 2 Holzschnitten. 1887. *M.* 4,00.

**Altnordische Textbibliothek.** Herausgegeben von E. Mogk. kl. 8.

- Nr. 1. **Gunnlaugssaga Ormstungu.** Mit Einleitung und Glossar herausgegeben von E. Mogk. 1886. *M.* 1,60.











